

Forgotten Books

— www.forgottenbooks.com —

Copyright © 2016 FB &c Ltd.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, distributed, or transmitted in any form or by any means, including photocopying, recording, or other electronic or mechanical methods, without the prior written permission of the publisher, except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical reviews and certain other noncommercial uses permitted by copyright law.

Bible
Com (N. T.)
Gal

A
C O M M E N T A R I E
O F M A S T E R D O C T O R
M A R T I N L U T H E R V P O N T H E
E P I S T L E O F S . P A V L T O
T H E G A L A T H I A N S .

First collected and gathered word by word out of his
preaching, and now out of Latine faithfully translated
into English for the unlearned.

Wherein is set forth most excellently the glorious riches of Gods grace,
and the power of the Gospell, with the difference betweene the Law and the
Gospell, and the strength of Faith declared: to the joyfull comfort and confir-
mation of all true Christian beleivers, especially such as inwardly being afflicted
and grieved in conscience, do hunger and thirst for justification in Christ Iesu.
For whose cause most chietly this Booke is translated and printed, and dedicated
to the same.

My power is made perfect through weaknesse. 2 C O R. 12.9



452400
9.10.46

LONDON,
Printed by GEORGE MILLER, dwelling in



To the Reader.



His Booke being brought unto me to peruse and to consider of, I thought it my part not onely to allow of it to the print, but also to commend it to the Reader, as a Treatise most comfortable to all afflicted consciences exercised in the schoole of Christ. The Author felt what he spake, and had experience of what he wrote, and therefore able more lively to expresse both the assaults and the salving, the order of the battell, and the meane of the victory. Satan is the enemy, the victory is by onely faith in Christ, as Iohn recordeth. If Christ justifie, who can condemne? saith S. Paul. This most necessary doctrine the Author hath most substantially cleared in this his Commentarie. Which being written in the Latine tongue, certaine godly learned men have most sincerely translated into our language, to the great benefit of all such as with humbled hearts will diligently reade the same. Some began it according to such skill as they had. Others godly affected, not suffering so good a matter in handling to be marred, put to their helping hands for the better framing and furthering of so worthy a worke. They refuse to be named, seeking neither their owne gaine nor glory, but thinking it their happinesse, if by any meanes they may releevē afflicted minds, and do good to the Church of Christ, yeelding all glory unto God, to whom all glory is due. Aprilis 28, 1575.

EDVVINVS. London.

T O A L L A F F L I C T E D

C O N S C I E N C E S W H I C H G R O N E

for Salvation, and wraſtle under the Croſſe for the

Kingdome of Chriſt, grace, peace and victorie
in the Lord Ieſus our Saviour.



N few words to declare what is to be ſaid for the commendation of this worke, although in few words all cannot be expreſſed that may be ſaid, yet briefly to ſignifie that may ſuffice, this much we thought good to certifie thee, godly Reader: that amongſt many other godly English books in theſe our dayes printed and translated, thou ſhalt find but few, wherein either thy time ſhall ſeeme better beſtowed, or thy labor better recompenced to the profit of thy ſoule, or wherein thou maſt ſee the ſpirit and veine of *S. Paul* more lively repreſented to thee; then in the diligent reading of this preſent Commentarie upon the Epistle of *S. Paul* to the Galathians. In which as in a mirrour or glaſſe, or rather as *S. Steven* in the heavens being opened, thou maſt ſee and behold the admirable glory of the Lord, and all the riches of heaven, thy ſalvation freely, and only by faith in Chriſt; his love and grace towards thee ſo opened, thy victory and conqueſt in him ſo proved, the wrath of God ſo pacified, his law ſatisfied, the full Kingdome of life ſet open; death, hell and hell gates, be they never ſo ſtrong, with all the power of ſin, fleſh and the world vanquiſhed; thy conſcience diſcharged, all teares and terrors removed, thy ſpirituall man ſo reſreſhed and ſet at liberty, that either thy heart muſt be heavier then lead, or the reading hereof will liſt thee up above thy ſelfe, and give thee to know that of Chriſt Ieſus, that thy ſelfe ſhalt ſay thou never kneweſt before though before thou kneweſt him right well.

Such ſpirituall comfort, ſuch heavenly doctrine, ſuch experience and praſtiſe of conſcience herein is contained, ſuch triumphing over Satan, and all his power internall, ſuch contempt of the Law compared with the Goſpell, ſuch an holy pride & exaltation of the beleeving man (whom here he maketh a perſon divine, the Sonne of God, the heire of the whole earth, Conquerour of the world, of ſin, of death, and the devill) with ſuch phraſes & ſpeeches of high contemplation, of Chriſt, of grace, of juſtification & of faith (which faith, ſaith he, tranſfigureth a man into Chriſt, and coupleth him more neere unto Chriſt then the husband is coupled to his wife, and maketh a man more then a man,) with ſuch other mighty voices, full of ſpirituall glory and majeſty, as the like hath not bin uſed lightly of any writer ſince the Apoſtles time, neither durſt he ever have uſed the ſame himſelfe, had not great experience and exerciſe of conſcience by inward conflicts and profound agonies framed him thereunto, and miniſtred to him, both this knowledge of ſpirit and boldneſſe of ſpeech.

And this commonly is the working & proceeding of Gods vocation, ever to worke things by the contrary: of infidelity to make faith, of poverty to make riches, in miſery to ſhew mercy, to turne ſorrow to ſolace, mourning to mirth, from afflictions to advance to glory, from hell to bring to heaven, from death to life, from darkeneſſe to light, from thraldome to liberty, in wildernes to give waters, the barren to make fruit full, of things that be not to make things to be, briefly to make all things of nought. Thus began God firſt to worke, thus he proceeded, thus he continueth, & ſo will unto the worlds end. The firſt ſeede of promiſe next to Eve, was given to Sara: yet in what

1 Sam. i.
Eſa. 41. 18
2 Cor. 4.

case was *Eve* before she had the promise? & in what barrenness and despair was *Sara* before she enjoyed her welbeloved *Isaac*? The like is to be said of the two mothers of two most excellent children, *Samuel* and *Iohn Baptist*; and yet what griefes and sorrows past over their hearts, being both past all hope in nature, before the goodnesse of God did worke? How long did *Iacob* the Patriarke serve in miserable thraldome for his *Rachel*? In what excellent glory was *Ioseph* exalted; yet what suffered he before of his brethren, and how long imprisonment? In what and how long servitude were the sons of Israel before *Moses* was sent unto them; & afterward in what distress were they compassed on every side when the sea was forced to give them place; After that againe, what an excellent land was promised and given unto them, flowing with milke and hony? But how were they scourged before in the desert, & yet had not they the land, but their children? To overpasse many things here by the way, what an excellent worke was it of God to set up *David* in his kingdome? Also what excellent promises were given to his throne? Yet how hardly escaped he with life? how did the Lord mortifie and frame him to his hand before he placed him in quiet? infinite it were to recite all. Briefly, in all the works of God this is usuall to be seene, that he worketh evermore most excellent things by instruments most humble, and which seeme most furthest off. Which of all the Apostles did ever thinke, when *Christ* was so humbled and crucified upon the tree, that they should ever see him againe? although he foretold them of his rising before: insomuch that *Thomas* did scarcely beleve when he with his eyes saw him. What man would ever have thought that *Paul* in the raging heare of his persecuting spirit, would have turned from a persecutor to such a professor? from such infidelity to such a faith? Insomuch that *Ananias* would scarcely beleve the Lord when he told him. Such is the omnipotency of the Lord our God, ever working lightly by the contrary, especially when he hath any excellent thing to work to his own glory.

After like sort may we esteeme also of *Martin Luther*, who being first a Frier, in what blindness, superstition and darknesse, in what dreames and drags of Monkish idolatry he was drowned, his history declareth, witnesse recordeth, and this booke also partly doth specifie. Whose religion was all in popish ceremonies, his zeale without knowledge, understanding no other justification but in workes of the law and merits of his owne making, onely beleiving the history (as many do) of *Christ*s death and resurrection, but not knowing the power & strength thereof. After he had thus continued a long space, more pharisaicall and zealous in these monkish wayes then the common sort of that order: at length it so pleased almighty God to begin with this man, first to touch his conscience with some remorse and feeling of sinne, his mind with feares and misdoubts, whereby he was driven to seeke further: so that by searching, seeking, conferring, & by reading of *S. Paul*, some sparkles of better knowledge began by little and little to appeare, which after in time grew up to a greater increase. But here it happened to him as commonly it doth to all good Christians: the more that the true knowledge of *Christ* increased, the more *Satan* the enemy stirred with his fiery darts, with doubts & objections, with false terrors & subtile assaults, seeking by all meanes possible how to oppresse the inward soule which would faine take his rest in *Christ*. In these spirituall conflicts and inward wrastlings, how grievously he was incumbred, fighting against incredulity, error, and desperation, marvellous it is to consider, insomuch, that three dayes and three nights together he lay upon his bed without meate, drinke or any sleep, like a dead man (as some do write of him) labouring in soule and spirit upon a certaine place of *S. Paul* in the third Chapter to the Romanes, which was *Ad ostendendam justitiam suam*; that is, to shew his justice: thinking *Christ* to be sent to no other end but to shew forth Gods justice as an executor of his Law, till at length
being

being answered and satisfied by the Lord touching the right meaning of these words, signifying the justice of God to be executed upon his Sonne, to save us from the stroke thereof, he immediatly upon the same started up from his bed, so confirmed in faith, as nothing afterward could appall him: besides other manifold and grievous tentations (which I speake not of) of all sortes and kinds, except onely of avarice, with the which vice onely he was never tempted nor touched, as of him is written by them that were conversant with him.

In this meane while; during these conflicts and exercises of *M. Luther*, which notwithstanding did him no hurt, but rather turned to his more furtherance in spirituall knowledg, Pope *Leo* the tenth sent a Jubily with his pardons abroad through all Christian Realmes and dominions; whereby he gathered together innumerable riches and treasure. The Collectour whereof promised to every one that would put ten shillings in the boxe, licence to eat white meates and flesh in Lent, and power to deliver what soule he would out of Purgatory; and moreover full pardon from all his sinnes, were they never so heinous. But if it were but one jote lesse then ten shillings, they preached that it would profit him nothing. The abomination wherof was so horrible, that when no other man durst speake, yet *Luther* could not of conscience hold his peace, but drawing out certaine articles, desired gently to dispute the matter, writing withall a most humble admonition to the Pope, submitting himselfe in most lowly wise to his censure and judgement. But the Pope thinking great scorne to be controlled of such a Frier, tooke the matter so hot, that he and all his Cardinals; with all the rabble of Monks and Friers, Bishops and Archbishops, Colledges and Universties, Kings and Princes, with the Emperour also himselfe, were all upon him. If the omnipotent providence of the Lord from above had not sustained him, what was it for one poore Frier to have endured all these sharpe assaults of Satan, all the violence of the whole World, having no lesse then the Sunne, the Moone, and the Seven starres (as they say) against him? Being hated of men, impugned of devils, rejected of nations, by solenne authority condemned, distressed with infirmities, and with all manner of tentations tried and proved. And yet for all these tentations such was his life, that (as *Erasmus* writing to Cardinall *Wolsey* affirmeth) none of all his enemies could ever charge him with any note of just reprehension. Againe, such were his allégations out of the Scripture, that *Roffensis* writing to *Erasmus*, confesseth himselfe to be astounded at them.

And thus much by the way of preeface touching the conflicts and exercises of this man. Which we thought good to insinuate to the Christian Reader for sundry purposes: first to note the mercifull clemency of Christ our Saviour, in calling so superstitious and idolatrous a Frier so graciously to such a light of his Gospell, his grace in justifying him, his might in preserving him, his help in comforting him, his glory in prospering him, one against so many, and so prospering him, that the whole kingdome of the Pope had no power either to withstand him, or to maintaine it selfe: secondly for this respect also and purpose, that the Reader considering the marvellous working of the Lord in this man, may the better credite the doctrine that he teacheth. And though his doctrine as touching a litle circumstance of the Sacrament cannot be thoroughly defended, yet neither is that any great marvell in him, who being occupied in weightier points of religion, had no leisure to travell in the searching out of this matter, neither ought it to be any prejudice to all the rest which he taught so foundly of the weightier principles and grounds of Christs Gospell, and our justification onely by Faith in Christ. And yet in the same matter of the Sacrament, notwithstanding that he differeth somewhat from *Zunglius*, sticking too neare to the letter: yet he joyneth not so with the Papists, that he leaveth there any transubstantiation or idolatry. Wherefore the

hereof
made more
in the Apo-
logy of the
Church of
England, &
in the booke
of monu-
ments fol.
92.
Col. 2.

matter being no greater then so, nor directly against any article of our Creed, let not us be so nice, for one little wart to cast away the whole body. It were doubtlesse to be wished, that in good Teachers & Preachers of Christ, there were no defect or imperfection. But he that can abide nothing with his blemish, let him if he can, name any Doctor, or writer (the Scripture onely except) Greeke or Latine, old or new, either beyond the Alpes, or on this side the Alpes, or himselfe also whatsoever he be, which hath not erred in some sentence or else in some exposition of holy Scripture. But if he cannot so do, then let him learne by himselfe to beare with other, to take the best and leave the worst, (although there is no such matter in this booke to be feared, forasmuch as we having a respect to the simple, have purposely sponged out, and omitted such stumbling places being but few; which might offend) and to give God thanks for any thing that is good, and namely for this which he hath given to us by *Luther*, in opening to us his grace, mercy and good will in his Sonne, so excellently through the preaching of this man; who if he had not taught the difference betweene the Law and the Gospel, and set out to us our justification, victory and liberty by faith onely in Christ so plainly, so plentifully and so assuredly as he hath done; who ever durst have bene so bold to open his mouth in such words; or so confidently to stand in this doctrine of Faith and grace? For if there have bene since the time of *Luther*, and be yet some, which openly defend that works be necessary to salvation, where he before so mightily hath taught the contrary; what then would these have done if *Luther* had not bene? who also did forewarne us of the same, prophesying that after his time this doctrine of justification would be almost extinguished in the Church; as in certaine places experience beginneth partly to prove.

Wherefore, so much as the Lord shall give us grace, let us hold constantly the comfortable doctrine of faith and justification, and not lose that the Lord so freely hath given, calling upon the Lord with all obedience and diligence, to give us grace with *S. Paul*, not to refuse the grace which he bestoweth upon us, nor to be offended with this joyfull doctrine, as many be. And therefore as our duty was for our part to set it abroad, so our counsell is no lesse to every studious Reader thereof, to pray for grace rightly to understand that he readeth. For else, unlesse the speciall grace of Christ do help, hard it is to flesh and blood to comprehend this mysticall doctrine of faith only. So strange it is to carnall reason, so darke to the world, so many enemies it hath, that except the Spirit of God from above do reveale it, learning cannot reach it, wisdom is offended; nature is astonied, devils do not know it, men do persecute it. Briefly, as there is no way to life so easie, so is there none so hard: easie to whom it is given from above: hard to the carnall sense not yet inspired. The ignorance whereof is the roote of all errours, sects and divisions, not onely in all Christendome, but also in the whole world. The Jew thinketh to be saved by his *Moses* Law, the Turke by his Alcoran, the Philosopher by his morrall vertues. Besides these cometh another sort of people, not so ill as the Jew, nor so heathen as the Philosopher, but having some part of both, which refuse not utterly the name of Christ, but with Christ do joyne, partly the Law of *Moses*, partly the morrall and nationall discipline of Philosophy, & partly their owne ceremonies and traditions, to make a perfect way to heaven. And these here in this Commentary are called Papists, of the Pope their author, being divided within themselves more then into a hundred divers sects, orders and professions of Cardinals, Friers, Monkes, Nunnes, Priests, Hermits, and other votaries. All which seeme to spring up of no other cause but onely upon ignorance of this doctrine. And no marvell: for take away this doctrine of justification by faith onely in Christ, & leave a man to his owne inventions, what end will there be of new devices?

Such

Such a perillous thing it is to erre in the first foundation: whereupon the higher ye build the greater is the fall. And yet such builders are not without their props to hold up their workmanship of works against this doctrine of justifying faith, pretending for their defence the testimony of *S. James*, where he seemes to attribute justification to works and not to faith onely.

Touching which matter of justification, for as much as in the sequelle of this Treatise the Author hath discoursed upon the same at large, it shall not be much needfull to use many words at this present. This briefly may suffice by the way of preface, in a word or two to advertise the Christian Reader, who so taketh in hand with profit and judgement to reade this booke, that in him two things are specially to be required: first to reade it wholly together, and not by peeces and parts here and there, but to take it in order as it lieth, conferring one place with another, wherèby to understand the better the right meaning of the writer, how and in what sence he excludeth good works, and how not: how he neglecteth the law, and how he magnifieth the law. For as in case of justifying before God, the free promise of the Gospell admitteth no condition, but faith onely in Christ Iesus: so in case of dutifull obedience, *Luther* here excludeth no good works, but rather exhorteth thereunto, and that in many places. Thus times and cases discretly must be distinguished.

The second thing to be required is, that in reading hereof, he that seeketh to take fruit hereby, do bring such a mind with him to the reading, as the author himselfe did to the preaching thereof: that is, he had need to have have his senses exercised somewhat in such spiritual conflicts, & to be wel humbled before with the fear of God and inward repentance, or else he shall hardly conceive the excellent sweetnesse either of this writer or any other. For albeit most true it is, that no greater comfort to the soule of man can be found in any booke next to the holy Scripture, then in this Commentary of *M. Luther*: so this comfort hath little place, but onely where the conscience being in heavines hath need of the Physicians hand. The other, who feel themselves whole, and are not touched in soule with any sorrow, as they little care for these books, so have they little understanding of this doctrine when they read it. And this is the cause in my mind, why the Pope and his Papists have so little feeling and liking of *Luthers* doctrine, and all because they commonly are never greatly vexed in spirit with any deep affliction, but rather deride them that are beaten downe with such conflicts & tentations of Satan, as they did by *Luther*, whom because God suffered to be tried and exercised with the buffers of the enemy, they say therefore that he learned his Divinity of the devill. But how he learned his Divinity, let us heare what he himselfe in this book, fol. 208. pag. 1 line 26, confesseth, saying: *If we were not outwardly exercised with force & subtilty by tyrants and Sectaries, and inwardly with terrors and the fiery darts of the devill, Paul should be as obscure and unknowne unto us, as he was in times past to the world, and yet it to the Papists, the Anabaptists, and other our adversaries. Therefore the gift of the interpretation of the Scriptures and our studies, together with our inward and outward tentations, open unto us the meaning of Paul, and the sence of all the holy Scriptures.*

But let these ignorant Papists whosoever they be, taste a little the same, or like as *Luther* did, & then see what they will say. Experience giveth demonstration. For how many of them do we see, for all their auricular confession, which puffeth them up in all security, but at length when they lie at the point of death, where death on the one side, & Gods justice on the other side is before their eyes, for the most part either they despaire, or else leaving all other helps, they only sticke to faith & the blood of Christ Iesus, & in very deed many of them are glad to die Lutherans howsoever they hated *Luther* before. And what shall we say then of this doctrine of *Luther*? *If the Papists*
them-

themselves be glad to die in it, why are they unwilling to live in it? And if it be true at one time, how can alteration of time make that false which is once true.

And therefore where these men do stoutly withstand this doctrine of justification by faith only, they are much deceived. And when they alledge *S. James* for them, that is soone answered if we rightly discern the meaning of *S. James* & of *S. Paul*: of whom the one speaketh of mans righteousness or justification onely before men, which is a true demonstration of a true faith or a true beleever before man, rather then the working of true justification before God. And so is it true which *S. James* saith, how that faith without works doth not justify: whole purpose is, not to shew us what maketh a man just before God, but onely to declare the necessary conjunction of good workes in him that by faith is justified. The other speaketh of righteousnesse or justification, not before men, but onely before God: meaning not to exclude good workes from true faith, that they should not be done: but to teach us wherein the true stay and hope of our salvation ought to be fixed, that is, in faith onely. And so it is true likewise that *S. Paul* saith, that faith onely without works doth justify.

The which proposition of *S. Paul* the better to understand and to joyne it with *S. James*, here is to be noted for the satisfying of the cavelling adversary, that the proposition is to be taken full and whole, as *S. Paul* doth meane it, so that with the right subject we joyne the right *predicatum*, as the Schoolemen terme it: that is, so that faith on Christ in justifying, ever have relation to the true penitent and lamenting sinner. And so is the Article most true, that faith onely without works doth justify. But whom doth it justify? the worldling? the licentious ruffian? the voluptuous Epicure? the carnall Gospeller? *Paul* meaneth no such thing, but onely the mourning and labouring soule, the grieved conscience, the repenting heart, the mending sinner. And in him the proposition is true, according to the doctrine of *S. Paul*: *Credenti in eum qui justificat impium, fides ejus imputatur ad justitiam*: that is, To him that beleeveth in him which justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousnesse. Contrariwise, let faith have relation to the obstinate and wilfull rebell, who contrary to conscience continueth and delighteth in sinne, and in him is true likewise that *S. James* saith *& non ex fide tantum*, that is, and not by faith onely: meaning thereby, that faith availeth not to justification, but onely in such persons as have a good will and purpose to amend their lives: not that repentance and turning from iniquity doth save them, but that faith in Christ worketh justification in none but onely in such as heartily repent & are willing to amend. So that: *Credite evangelio; beleve the Gospell, hith ever, agite penitentiam, repent and amend*, going withall. Not that repentance saveth any malefactor from the law, but onely sheweth the person whom faith in Christ onely doth save and justify. But of this enough, and more then greatly needed, especially seeing the booke it selfe here following will satisfie the Reader at large in all such doubts to this matter appertaining. And thus ceasing to trouble thee, gentle Reader, with any longer preface, as we commend this good worke to thy godly studies: so we commend both thee and thy studies to the grace of Christ Iesu the Sonne of God, heartily wishing and craving of his Majesty, that thou maiest take no lesse profite and consolation by reading hereof, then our purpose was to do thee good in setting the same forth to thy comfort and edification, which the Lord grant. Amen, Amen.

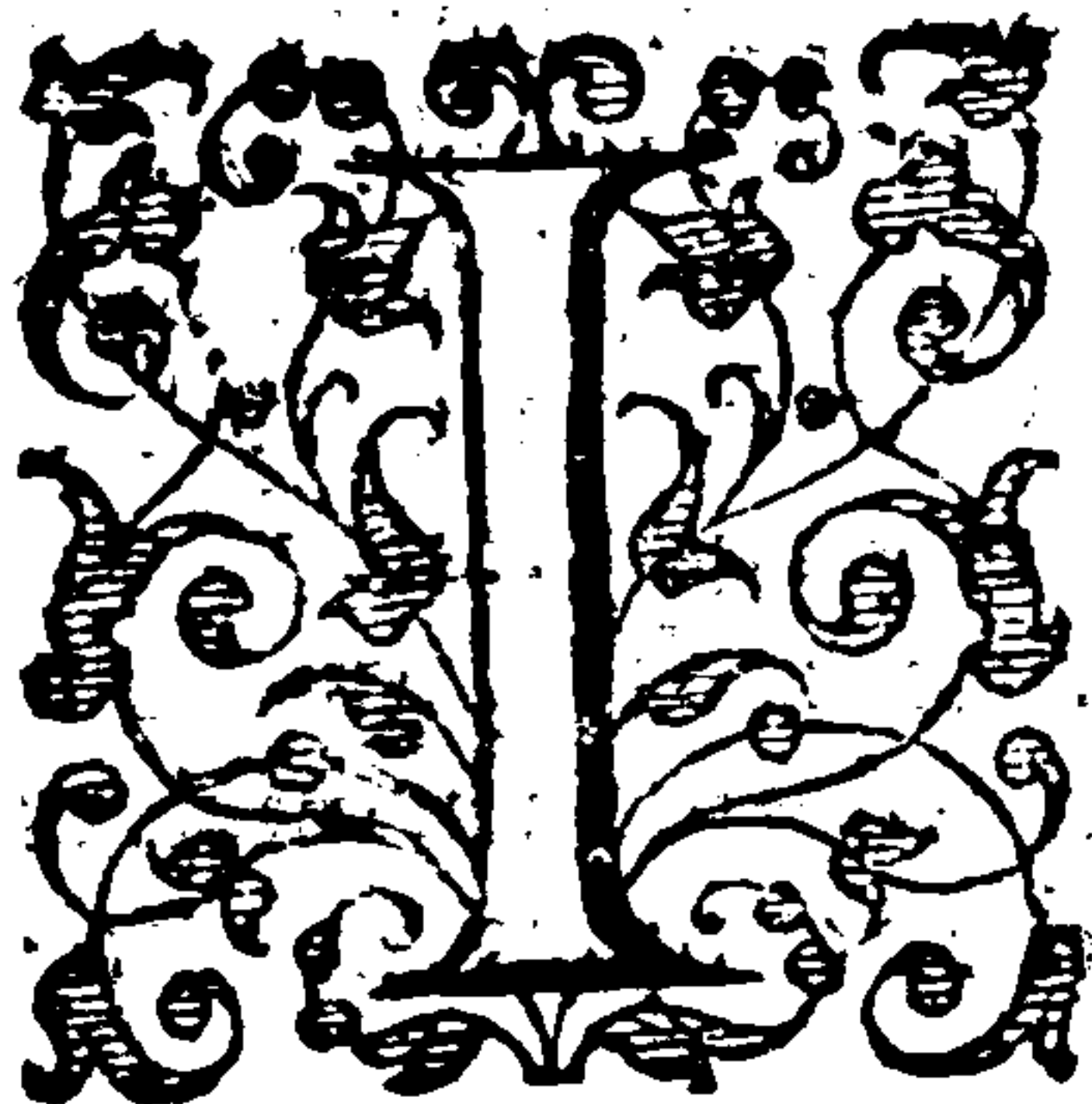
Rom. 4.

Iam. 2.

Mat. 3.
Mat. 30



The Preface of MARTIN LUTHER upon the
Epistle to the *Galatians*.



My selfe can scarcely beleve that I was so plentiful in words when I did publikely expound this Epistle of S^t Paul to the *Galatians*, as this Book sheweth me to have been. Notwithstanding, I perceive all the cogitations which I find in this Treatise by so great diligence of the brethren gathered together, to be mine: so that I must needs confesse either all or perhaps more, to have been uttered by me in this publike Treatise. For in my heart this one article reigneth, even the faith of Christ: from whom, by whom, and unto whom all my divine studies day and night have recourse to and fro continually. And yet I perceive that I could not reach any thing neare unto the height, bredth and depth of such high and inestimable wisdom: only certaine poore and bare beginnings, and as it were fragments do appeare. Wherefore I am ashamed that my so barren and simple Commentaries should be set forth upon so worthy an Apostle, and elect vessell of God. But when I consider againe the infinite and horrible profanation and abomination which alwayes hath raged in the Church of God, and yet at this day ceaseth not to rage against this onely and grounded rock, which we hold to be the article of our justification (that is to say, how, not by our selves, neither by our works, which are lesse then our selves, but by another help, even the Son of God Jesus Christ, we are redeemed from sin, death, the devill, and made partakers of eternall life:) I am compelled to cast off all shame, and to be bold above measure.

This rock did Satan shake in Paradise, when he perswaded our first parents that by their own wisdom and power they should be like unto God: forsaking true faith in God, who had given them life, promised the continuance thereof. By and by after, this lier and murderer, which will be alwayes like unto himselfe, stirred up the brother to the murdering of his brother, and for none other cause, but for that his godly brother by faith had offered up a more excellent sacrifice;

The Preface of

G. N. S.
2 Pet. 2. 5.
Gen. 10. 6.
66.

sacrifice; and he offering up his own works, without faith, had not pleased God. After this, against the same Faith followed a most intolerable persecution of Satan by the sons of *Cain*, untill God was even constrained at once by the flood to purge the whole world, and to defend *Noah* the Preacher of righteousness. This notwithstanding Satan continued his seed in *Cham*, the third son of *Noah*. But who is able to reckon up all examples? After these things the whole world waxed mad against this faith, finding out an infinite number of idols and strange religions, whereby every one (as *St Paul* saith) walked his own way, trusted by their works, some to pacifie and please a god, some a goddess; some gods, some goddesses: that is to say, without the help of Christ, and by their own works, to redeeme themselves from all calamities and from their sins, as all the examples and monuments of all nations do sufficiently witnesse.

But these are nothing in comparison of that people and congregation of God, *Israel*: which not only had the sure promise of the fathers, and afterward the law of God given unto them, from God himselfe by his Angels, above all other: but alwayes and in all things were also certified by the words, by the miracles, and by the examples of the Prophets. Notwithstanding even among them also Satan (that is to say, the mad and outrageous opinion of their own righteousness) did so prevaile, that afterwards they killed all the Prophets, yea even Christ himselfe the Sonne of God their promised Messias, for that they had taught that men are accepted and received into the favour of God, by grace onely and not by their own righteousness. And this is the summe of the doctrine of the devill and of the world from the beginning; we will not seem to do evill, but yet whatsoever we do, that must God allow, and all his Prophets must consent to it, which if they refuse to do, they shall die the death. *Abel* shall die, but *Cain* shall flourish. Let this be our law (say they) and even so it commeth to passe.

The Church
of the Gen-
tiles.

But in the Church of the *Gentiles*, the matter is and hath beene so vehemently handled, that the fury of the Jewish synagogue may well seem to have been but a sport. For they (as *St Paul* saith) *did not know Christ their annointed, and therefore they crucified the Lord of glory*. But the Church of the *Gentiles* hath received and confessed Christ to be the Sonne of God, being made our righteousness, and this doth she publikely record, reade and teach. And yet notwith-
standing

standing this confession, they that would be accounted the Church do kill and persecute, and continually rage against those which believe and teach, and in their deeds declare nothing else, but that Christ is the selfe same thing that they themselves (though with fained words and hypocriticall deeds) are constrained mauger their heads, to allow and confesse. For under the name of Christ at this day they raigne. And if they could without the name of Christ hold that seat and kingdome, no doubt but they would expresse him to be such a one openly as in their hearts they esteeme him secretly. But they esteeme him a great deale lesse than the Jews do, which at the least think him to be *Thola*, that is to say, a thief worthily hanged on the crosse. But these men account him as a fable, and take him as a fained god among the Gentiles, as it may plainly appeare at *Rome* in the Popes court, and almost throughout all *Italy*.

Because therefore Christ is made as it were a mocke amongst his Christians (for Christians they will be called) and because *Cain* doth kill *Abel* continually, and the abomination of Satan now chiefly reigneth, it is very necessary that we should diligently handle this article, and set it against Satan, whether we be rude or eloquent, learned or unlearned. For this rocke must be published abroad, yea though every man should hold his peace, yet even of the very rocks and stones themselves. Wherefore I do most willingly herein accomplish my duty, and am contented to suffer this long Commentary and full of words, to be set forth for the stirring up of all the bretheren in Christ, against the sleights and malice of Satan, which in these dayes is turned into such extreame madnesse against this healthfull knowledge of Christ now revealed and raised up againe, that as hitherto men have seemed to be possessed with devils and stark mad, even so now the devils themselves do seeme to be possessed of farre worse devils, and so rage even above the fury of devils: which is indeed a great argument that that enemy of truth and life doth perceive the day of judgment to be at hand, which is the horrible day of his destruction, but the most comfortable day of our redemption, and shall be the end of all his tyranny and cruelty. For not without cause is he disquieted, when his members and powers are so assailed: even as a theefe or an adulterer, when the morning appeareth and discloseth his wickednesse; is taken tardy and apprehended for the same. For whoever heard (to passe over

The article of justification must be diligently taught.

The rage of Satan, a sure argument that the day of iudgment is at hand.

The Preface of

The outrages of the Anabaptists.

the abominations of the Pope) so many monsters to burst out at once into the world, as we see at this day in the Anabaptists alone? In whom Satan breatheth out as it were the last blast of his kingdom, through horrible uprores setting them every where in such a rage, as though he would by them suddenly, not only destroy the whole world with seditions, but also by innumerable sects swallow up and devoure Christ wholly with his Church.

The Divell troubleth not those that are dead and buried in sin, but those that are godly and hate sinne.

Against the wicked lives and opinions of others he doth not so rage; to wit, against whoremongers, theeves, murtherers, perjured persons, rebels against God, unbelievers. No, to these rather he giveth peace and quietnesse: these he maintaineth in his court with all manner of pleasures and delights, and giveth to them all things at will: Even like as sometime in the beginning of the Church, he did not only suffer all the idolatries and false religions of the whole world to be quiet and untouched, but also mightily maintained, defended and nourished the same. But the Church and religion of Christ alone he vexed on every side. After this, permitting peace and quietnesse to many hereticks, he troubled onely the Catholike doctrine. Even so likewise at this day he hath no other businesse in hand but this onely (as his owne and alwayes proper unto himselfe) to persecute and vex our Saviour Christ: which is our perfect righteousnesse without any of our workes, as it is written of him:

Gen. 3.15.

Thou shalt tread upon his heele.

For whole cause specially Luther setteth forth this work, & who they be that onely understand this doctrine.

But I do not set forth these my Meditations so much against these men, as for my bretheren, which will either shew themselves thankfull in the Lord for this my travell, or else will pardon my weakenesse and temerity. But of the wicked I would not in any wise they should be liked or allowed: but rather that thereby both they and their god might be the more vexed, seeing with my great travell they are set forth onely for such as Saint Paul writeth this Epistle unto: that is to say, the troubled, afflicted, vexed, tempted (for they onely understand these things) and miserable Galathians in the faith. Who so are not such, let them heare the Papists, Monkes, Anabaptists, and such other masters of profound wisdom and of their owne religion, and let them stoutly contemne our doctrine and our doings. For at this day the Papists and Anabaptists conspire together against the Church in this one point (though they dissemble in words) that the

work

work of God dependeth upon the worthines of the person. For thus do the Anabaptists teach, that baptisme is nothing except the person do beleve. Out of this principle must needs follow, that all the works of God be nothing, if the man be nothing. But baptisme is the worke of God, and yet an evill man maketh it not to be the worke of God. Moreover hereof it must follow, that matrimony, authority, liberty and bondage are the works of God: but because men are evill, therefore they are not the works of God. Wicked men have the Sun, the Moon, the earth, the water, the aire and all other creatures which are subject unto man; but because they be wicked and not godly, therefore the Sun is not the Sun, the Moon, the earth, the water are not that which they are. The Anabaptists themselves had bodies and souls before they were rebaptized: but because they were not godly, therefore they had not true bodies and true souls. Also their parents were not lawfully married (as they grant themselves) because they were not rebaptized: therefore the Anabaptists themselves are all bastards, and their parents were all adulterers and whoremongers, and yet they doe inherit their parents lands and goods, although they grant themselves to be bastards and unlawfull heirs. Who seeth not here in the Anabaptists, men not possessed with devils, but even devils themselves possessed with worle devils.

The dignity of Gods word and the Sacraments depend not upon the worthinesse or unworthinesse of the minister.

The Papists in like manner untill this day do stand upon works and the worthines of man, contrary to grace, and so (in words at the least) do strongly assist their brethren the Anabaptists. For these Foxes are tyed together by the tailes, although by their heads they seeme to be contrary. For outwardly they pretend to be their great enemies, when as inwardly notwithstanding they thinke, teach and defend indeed all one thing against our Saviour Christ, who is our only righteousnesse. Let him therefore that can hold fast this one article, and let us suffer the rest which have made ship-wrack therof, to be carried whither the sea and winds shall drive them, untill either they return to the ship, or swim to the shore.

The conclusion and end of his complaint is, to hope for no quietnesse or end of complaint, so long as Christ and *Beliall* doe not agree, *One generation passeth and another commeth*. If one heresie die, by and by another springeth up: for the devill doth neither slumber nor sleepe. I my selfe, which (although I be nothing) have been now in the ministry of Christ about twenty yeares, can truly witnesse

Ecclesi. 4.
The Church shall never be quiet in this world.

that I have bin assailed with more then twenty sects, of the which some are already destroyed, other some (as the parts and members of worms or bees that are cut asunder) do yet pant for life. But Satan the god of all dissention, stirreth up daily new sects, and last of all (which of all other, I should never have fore-seen or once suspected) he hath raised up a sect of such as teach that the ten Commandements ought to be taken out of the Church, and that men should not be terrified with the law, but gently exhorted by the preaching of the grace of Christ, that the saying of the Prophet *Micah* might be fulfilled: *Let none rebuke or reprove another: They shall not prophesie unto them.* As though we were ignorant, or had never taught that afflicted and broken spirits must be comforted by Christ: but the hard hearted *Pharisees*, unto whom the grace of *God* is preached in vain, must be terrified by the law. And they themselves also are forced to devise and imagine certain revelations of *Gods* wrath against the wicked and unbelievers. As though the law were or could be any thing else but a revealing of *Gods* wrath against impiety. Such is the blindness and presumption of these frantick heads, which even by their own judgment do condemne themselves. Wherefore it behoveth the Ministers of *Gods* word to be surely perswaded (if they vwill be accounted faithfull and vwise in the day of Christ) that the vword of *S. Paul* is not spoken in vaine, or prophecied of a matter of no importance: to vvit, *That there must be heresies, that they which are proved may be knowne.* Yea I say, let the Minister of Christ know, that so long as he teacheth Christ purely, there shall not be vyanting perverse spirits, yea even of our own and among our selves, vvhich shall seek by all means possible, to trouble the Church of Christ. And herewithall let him comfort himself, *that there is no peace between Christ and Belial, or between the seed of the Serpent and the seed of the Woman.* Yea let him rejoyce in the troubles vvhich he suff:reth by these sects and seditious spirits, continually springing up one after another. For this is our rejoycing, *even the testimony of our conscience,* that vve be found standing and fighting in the behalf of the seed of the vvoman, against the seed of the Serpent. Let him bite us by the heelt and spare not. We again vwill not cease to crush his head, by the grace and helpe of Christ the principall bruiser thereof, who is blessed for ever.

*Hosea. 4. 4.
Mich. 2. 6.*

An exhortation to Ministers,

1 Cor. 12. 19.

*1 Cor. 6. 11.
Gen. 3. 5.*

2 Cor. 1. 23.

Fifty discommodities that rise of mans own righteousness, proceeding of works, gathered out of this Epistle to the *Galatians*, by M. Luther.

CHAP. I.

TO bring men from the calling of grace.

- 2 To receive another Gospell.
- 3 To trouble the minds of the faithful.
- 4 To pervert the Gospell of Christ.
- 5 To be accursed.
- 6 To obey humane traditions.
- 7 To please men.
- 8 Not to be the servant of Christ.
- 9 To build upon men, and not upon God.
- 10 That the most excellent righteousness of the law is nothing.
- 11 To destroy the Church of God.

CHAP. II.

- 12 To teach a man to be justified by workes, is to teach to be justified by impossibility.
- 13 To make the righteous in Christ sinners.
- 14 To make Christ a minister of sin.
- 15 To build up sin againe when it is destroyed.
- 16 To be made a transgressour.
- 17 To reject the grace of God.
- 18 To judge that Christ died in vain.

CHAP. III.

- 19 To become foolish *Galatians*.
- 20 To be bewitched.
- 21 Not to heare the truth.
- 22 To crucifie Christ again.
- 23 To hold that the Spirit is received by workes.
- 24 To forsake the spirit, and to end in the flesh.
- 25 To be under the curse.
- 26 To set the testament of men above the testament of God.
- 27 To make sin to abound.

- 28 To be shut under sin.
- 29 To serve beggerly ceremonies.

CHAP. IV.

- 30 That the Gospell is preached in vaine.
- 31 That all is vaine whatsoever the faithfull do work or suffer.
- 32 To be made a servant, and the son of the bond-woman.
- 33 To be cast out with the son of the bond-woman, from the inheriance.
- 34 That Christ profiteth nothing.
- 35 That wee are debtors to fulfill the whole law.

CHAP. V.

- 36 To be separate from Christ.
- 37 To fall from grace.
- 38 To be hindred from the good course of wel-doing.
- 39 That this perswasion of the doctrine of workes, cometh not of God.
- 40 To have the leaven of corruption.
- 41 That judgement remaineth for him which teacheth this doctrine.
- 42 To bite and consume one another.
- 43 That this doctrine is accounted among the workes of the flesh.

CHAP. VI.

- 44 To think thy self to be some thing, when thou art nothing.
- 45 To glory in others then in God.
- 46 Carnally to please the carnally minded.
- 47 To hate the persecution of the crosse.
- 48 Not to keep the law it selfe.
- 49 To glory in the master and teacher of carnall things.
- 50 That nothing profiteth, and whatsoever a man doth is in vain.



After that **M. Luther** had once publikely expounded this Epistle, he took in hand to interpret the same againe, in such sort as in this Treatise hereafter doth ensue, the cause whereof he doth declare in few words following.

Have taken in hand, in the Name of the Lord, yet once again to expound this Epistle of Paul to the Galathians : not because I doe desire to teach new things, or such as ye have not heard before, especially since that by the grace of Christ, Paul is now thoroughly knowne unto you : but for that (as I have often fore-warned you) this we have to feare as the greatest and nearest danger, lest Satan take from us this doctrine of faith, and bring into the Church againe the doctrine of Workes and mens traditions. Wherefore it is very necessary that this doctrine be kept in continuall practise and publike exercise both of reading and hearing. And although it be never so well knowne, never so exactly learned, yet the devill, which continually rangeth about seeking to devoure us, is not dead. Likewise our flesh and old man is yet alive. Besides this, all kinds of tentations vexe and oppresse us on every side : Wherefore this doctrine can never be taught, urged and repeated enough. If this doctrine be lost, then is also the doctrine of truth, life and salvation, lost and gone. If this doctrine flourish, then all good things flourish, Religion, the true service of God, the glory of God, the right knowledge of all things which are necessary for a Christian man to know. Because therefore we would be occupied and not be idle, we will there now begin where we made an end, according to the saying of the son of Syrach : When a man hath done what he can, he must begin again.

3 Gal. 18.7.

The

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

THE ARGUMENT.

The righteousnesse of faith aptly called the passive righteousnes, because it consisteth in suffering and receiving: like as the righteousnesse of the law is called the active righteousnes, because it consisteth in doing & working.

But this most excellent righteousnes, of faith I meane, (which God through Christ, without works imputeth unto us) is neither Politicall, nor Ceremoniall, nor the righteousnes of Gods law, nor consisteth in works, but is clean contrary: that is to say, a meere passive righteousnes, as the other above are active. For in this we work nothing, we render nothing unto God, but only we receive and suffer another to work in us, that is to say, God. Therefore it seemeth good unto me to call this righteousnes of faith or Christian righteousnes, the passive righteousnes.

This is a righteousnesse hidden in a mystery, which the world doth not know, yea Christians themselves doe not thoroughly understand it, and can hardly take hold of it in their tentations. Therefore it must be diligently taught and continually practised. And who so doth not understand or apprehend this righteousnes in afflictions and terrours of conscience, must needs be overthrown. For there is no comfort of conscience so firme and so sure as this passive righteousnes is.

The infirmity of man in temptations.

But mans weaknes and misery is so great, that in the terrors of conscience and danger of death, we behold nothing else but our works, our worthines and the law: which when it sheweth unto us our sin, by and by our evill life past cometh to remembrance. Then the poore sinner with great anguish of spirit groneth, and thus thinketh with himself: Alas, how desperately have I lived? Would to God I might live longer, then would I amend my life. Thus mans reason cannot restrain it selfe from the sight and beholding of this active or working righteousnes, that is to say, her own righteousnes: nor lift up her eyes to the beholding of the passive or Christian righteousnes, but resteth altogether in the active righteousnes: so deeply is this evill rooted in us.

On the other side, Satan abusing the infirmity of our nature, doth increase and aggravate these cogitations in us. Then can it not be but that the poore conscience must be more grievously troubled, terrified and confounded. For it is impossible that the mind of man of it selfe should conceive any comfort, or look up unto grace only in the feeling and horror of sinne, or constantly reject all disputing and reasoning about works. For this is farre above mans strength, and capacity, yea, and above the law of God also. True it is, that of all things in the world, the law is most excellent:

yet

yet is it not able to quiet a troubled conscience, but increaseth terrors, and driveth it to desperation. *For by the law, sinne is made above measure sinfull.*

The law can
not comfort
us in afflic-
tions.
Rom. 7.

Wherefore the afflicted and troubled conscience hath no remedy against desperation and eternall death, unlesse it take hold of the forgiveness of sinnes by grace, freely offered in Christ Jesus, that is to say, this passive righteoussesse of faith or Christian righteoussesse. Which if it can apprehend, then may it be at quiet, and boldly say: I seeke not this active or working righteoussesse: although I know that I ought to have it, and also to fulfill it. But be it so that I had it, and did fulfill it indeed: yet notwithstanding I cannot trust unto it; neither dare I set it against the judgement of God. Thus I abandon my selfe from all active righteoussesse, both of mine owne and of Gods law, and imbrace onely that passive righteoussesse, which is the righteoussesse of grace, mercy and forgiveness of sinnes. Briefly I rest only upon that righteoussesse which is the righteoussesse of Christ and of the holy Ghost.

v. Like as the earth engendreth not raine, nor is able by her owne strength, labour and travell to procure the same, but receiveth it of the meere gift of God from above: so this heavenly righteoussesse is given us of God without our works or deservings. Looke then how much the earth of it selfe is able to doe in getting and procuring to it selfe seasonable showers of raine to make it fruitfull: even so much and no more are we able to doe by our strength and works in winning this heavenly and eternall righteoussesse, and therefore shall never be able to attaine unto it, unlesse God himselfe by meere imputation and by his unspeakable gift doe bestow it upon us. The greatest knowledge then, and the greatest wisdom of Christians is, not to know the law, to be ignorant of works and of the whole active righteoussesse, especially when the conscience wrastleth with the judgement of God. Like as on the contrary, amongst those which are not of the number of Gods people, the greatest point of wisdom is, to know and earnestly to urge the law and the active righteoussesse.

But it is a thing very strange and unknowne to the world, to teach Christians to learne to be ignorant of the law, and so to live before God, as if there were no law: notwithstanding except thou.

THE ARGUMENT.

The law is not given to a righteous man: but to the lawlesse and disobedient.
Rom. 2.10.

thou be ignorant of the law, and be assuredly perswaded in thine heart that there is now no law nor wrath of God, but altogether grace and mercy for Christs sake, thou canst not be saved: for by the law cometh the knowledge of sinne. Contrariwise, works and the keeping of the Law must be so streightly required in the world, as if there were no promise of grace: and that because of the stubborne, proud, and hard hearted, before whose eyes nothing must be set but the law, that they may be terrified and humbled. For the law is given to terrifie and kill such, and to exercise the old man: and both the word of grace and of wrath, must be rightly devided according to the Apostle, 2. *Tim.* 2.

Here is then required a wise and faithfull disposer of the word of God, which can so moderate the law, that it may be kept within his bounds. He that teacheth that men are justified before God by the observation of the law, passeth the bounds of the law, and confoundeth these two kinds of righteousnesse, active and passive, and is but an ill Logitian, for he doth not rightly devide. Contrariwise, he that setteth forth the law and workes to the old man, and the promise of forgiveness of sinnes, and Gods mercy to the new man, devideth the word well. For the flesh or the old man, must be coupled with the law and workes: the spirit or new man must be joynd with the promise of God and his mercy. Wherefore when I see a man that is bruised enough already oppressed with the law, terrified with sinne, and thirsting for comfort, it is time that I should remove out of his sight the law and active righteousnesse, and that I should set before him by the Gospell the Christian and passive righteousnesse, which excluding *Moses* with the law, offereth the promise made in Christ, who came for the afflicted, and for sinners. Here is man raised up againe, and conceiveth good hope, neither is he any longer under the law, but under grace. How not under the law? According to the new man, to whom law doth not pertain. For the law hath his bounds unto Christ, as *Paul* saith afterwards: *The law continueth unto Christ:* who being come, *Moses* ceaseth with his law, Circumcision, the Sacrifices, the Sabbaths, yea and all the Prophets.

Rom. 20.4

This is our Divinity, whereby we teach how to put a difference betweene these two kinds of righteousnesse, active and passive: to the end that manners and faith, workes and grace, policy and

and

and religion should not be confounded, or taken the one for the other. Both are necessary, but both must be kept within their bounds: Christian righteousness pertaineth to the new man, and the righteousness of the law pertaineth to the old man, which is borne of flesh and blood. Upon this old man, as upon an asse, there must be layed a burden that may presse him down, and he must not enjoy the freedome of the Spirit of grace, except he first put upon him the new man by faith in Christ (which notwithstanding is not fully done in this life:) then may he enjoy the kingdome, an inestimable gift of grace.

This I say, to the end that no man should thinke we reject or forbid good workes, as the Papists do most falsely slander us, neither understanding what they themselves say, nor what we teach. They know nothing but the righteousness of the law, and yet they will judge of that doctrine which is farre above the law, of which it is impossible that the carnall man should be able to judge. Therefore they must needs be offended, for they can see no higher than the law. Whatsoever then is above the law, is to them a great offence. But we imagine, as it were, two worlds, the one heavenly and the other earthly. In these we place these two kinds of righteousness, being separate the one farre from the other. The righteousness of the law is earthly, and hath to do with earthly things, and by it we do good workes. But as the earth bringeth not forth fruit except first it be watered and made fruitfull from above: even so by the righteousness of the law, in doing many things we do nothing, and in fulfilling of the law we fulfill it not, except first without any merit or work of ours, we be made righteous by the Christian righteousness, which nothing pertaineth to the righteousness of the law, or to the earthly and active righteousness. But this righteousness is heavenly: which (as is said) we have not of our selves, but receive it from Heaven: which we worke not, but which by grace is wrought in us, and apprehended by faith: whereby we mount up above all laws and works. Wherefore like as we have borne (as *St Paul* saith) the image of the earthly *Adam*: so let us beare the image of the heavenly, which is the new man in a new world, where is no law, no sinne, no remorse or sting of conscience, no death, but perfect joy, righteousness, grace, peace, life, salvation and glory.

506 452 2V

Good works
not forbid-
den.

Christian
righteousnes
not wrought
by us, but
wrought in
us.

1 Cor. 13 49

THE ARGUMENT.

We can doe nothing for the obtaining of Christian righteousness.

Why, doe we then nothing? doe we worke nothing for the obtaining of this righteousness? I answer, nothing at all. For this is perfect righteousness, to do nothing, to heare nothing, to know nothing of the law, or of works: but to know and to beleve this only, that Christ is gone to the Father: and is not now scene: that he sitteth in Heaven at the right hand of his Father, not as a Judge but made unto us of God, wisdom, righteousness, holiness and redemption: Briefly that he is our high Priest, intreating for us, reigning over us and in us by grace. In this heavenly righteousness, sinne can have no place: for there is no law, and where no law is, there can be no transgression.

Rom. 4.15.

Seeing then that sin hath here no place, there can be no anguish of conscience, no feare, no heaviness. Therefore St John saith: hee that is borne of God, cannot sinne. But if there be any feare or griefe of conscience, it is a token that this righteousness is withdrawne, that grace is hidden, and that Christ is darkned and out of sight. But where Christ is truly seen indeed, there must needs be full and perfect joy in the Lord, with peace of conscience, which most certainly thus thinketh: Although I am a sinner by the law, and under the condemnation of the law, yet I despaire not, yet I die not, because Christ liveth, who is both my righteousness and my everlasting life. In that righteousness and life I have no sin, no feare, no sting of conscience, no care of death. I am indeed a sinner as touching this present life, and the righteousness thereof, as the child of Adam: where the law accuseth me, death raigneth over me, and at length would devoure me. But I have another righteousness: and life above this life, which is Christ the Sonne of God, who knoweth no sinne nor death, but is righteousness and life eternall: by whom this my body being dead and brought into dust, shall be raised up againe, and delivered from the bondage of the law and sinne, and shall be sanctified together with the spirit.

1. Iohn. 5.18.

Rom. 8.2, 10.
M. C. C.

B

So both these continue whilest we here live. The flesh is accused, exercised with temptations, oppressed with heaviness and sorrow: bruised by his active righteousness of the law: but the spirit reigneth, rejoiceth, and is saved by this passive and Christian righteousness, because it knoweth that it hath a Lord in Heaven at the right hand of his Father, who hath abolished the law, sinne, death, and hath trodden under his feet all evils, led them captive,

captive, and triumphed over them in himselfe, Col. 2. 15. a. b.

St Paul therefore in this Epistle goeth about diligently to instruct us, to comfort us, to hold us in the perfect knowledge of this most excellent and Christian righteousness. For if the article of Justification be once lost, then is all true Christian doctrine lost. And as many as are in the world that hold not this doctrine, are either Jewes, Turks, Papists or Hereticks. For betweene the righteousness of the law and Christian righteousness, there is no meane. He then that strayeth from this Christian righteousness, must needs fall into the righteousness of the law, that is to say, when he hath lost Christ, he must fall into the confidence of his own workes.

Therefore do we so earnestly set forth and so often repeat this doctrine of Faith or Christian righteousness, that by this means it may be kept in continuall exercise, and may be plainly discerned from the active righteousness of the law. Otherwise we shall never be able to hold the true divinity (for by this only doctrine the Church is built, and in this it consisteth:) but by and by we shall either become Canonists, observers of ceremonies, observers of the Law, or Papists, and Christ so darkned, that none in the Church shall be either rightly taught or comforted. Wherefore, if we will be teachers and leaders of others, it behoveth us to have a great care of these matters, and to marke well this distinction betweene the righteousness of the law, and the righteousness of Christ. And this distinction is easie to be uttered in words: but in use and experience it is very hard, although it be never so diligently exercised and practised, for that in the houre of death, or in other agonies of the conscience, these two sorts of righteousness do encounter more neare together than thou wouldest wish or desire. Wherefore I do admonish you, especially such as shall become instructors and guides of consciences, and also every one apart, that ye exercise yourselves continually by study, by reading, by meditation of the word and by prayer, that in the time of temptation ye may be able to instruct and comfort both your owne consciences and others, and to bring them from the law to grace, from the active and working righteousness, to the passive and received righteousness: and to conclude, from Moses to Christ. For the devill is wont in affliction and in the conflict of conscience, by the law to make us afraid,

The drift of the Apostle in the Epistle to the Galatians

See what we fall into when we neglect this doctrine, or want true zeale to advance the same.

ED

THE ARGUMENT.

Heb. 7. 25.

afraid, and to lay against us the guilt of sinne, our wicked life past, the wrath and judgement of God, hell and eternall death, that by this meanes he may drive us to desperation, make us bond-slaves to himselfe, and pluck us from Christ. Furthermore, he is wont to set against us those places of the Gospell, wherein Christ himselfe requireth works of us, and with plaine words threatneth damnation to those that do them not. Now, if here we be not able to judge between these two kinds of righteousness, if we take not hold of Christ by faith sitting at the right hand of God, who maketh intercession unto the Father for us wretched sinners, then are we under the law, and not under grace, and Christ is no more a Saviour, but a Law-giver: so that now there remaineth no more salvation, but certaine desperation and everlasting death, except repentance follow,

sin. 1.

Let us then diligently learne to judge between these two kinds of righteousness, that we may know how farre we ought to obey the law. Now, we have said before, that the law in a Christian ought not to passe his bounds, but ought to have dominion onely over the flesh, which is in subjection unto it, and remaineth under the same. When it is thus, the law is kept within his bounds. But if it shall presume to creepe into thy conscience, and there seeke to reigne, see thou play the cunning Logitian, and make the true division. Give no more to the law than is convenient, but say thou: O law, thou wouldest climb up into the kingdome of my conscience, and there reigne and reprove it of sin; and wouldest take from me the joy of my heart which I have by faith in Christ, and drive me to desparation, that I might be without all hope, and utterly perish. This thou doest besides thine office: keep thy selfe within thy bounds, and exercise thy power upon the flesh, but touch not my conscience, for I am baptized, and by the Gospell am called to the partaking of righteousness and everlasting life, to the kingdome of Christ, wherein my conscience is at rest, where no law is, but altogether forgiveness of sins, peace, quietnesse, joy, health and everlasting life. Trouble me not in these matters, for I will not suffer thee so intolerable a tyrant and cruell tormentour to reigne in my conscience, for it is the leate and temple of Christ the Son of God, who is the King of righteousness and peace, and my most sweet Saviour and Mediatour: he shall keep my conscience joyfull and

2 Cor. 6. 19

quiet

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



The first Chapter.

Verse 1. Paul an Apostle, not of man, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, which hath raised him from the dead.

The occasion of writing this Epistle to the Galathians.



Now that we have declared the Argument and summe of this Epistle to the *Galathians*, we thinke it good before we come to the matter it selfe, to shew what was the occasion that *St. Paul* wrote this Epistle. He had planted among the *Galathians* the pure doctrine of the Gospell, and the righteousnes of faith: but by and by after his departure, there crept in certaine false teachers, which overthrew all that hee had planted and truly taught among them. For the Devill cannot but furiously impugne this doctrine with all force and subtilty, neither can he rest so long as he seeth any sparke therof remaining. We also for this only cause that we preach the Gospell, do suffer of the world, the devill and his ministers, all the mischief that they can worke against us, both on the right hand and on the left.

The Devill hateth the Gospell, and stirreth up wicked men against it.

The doctrine of the Gospell.

For the Gospell is such a doctrine as teacheth a farre higher matter then is the wisdom, righteousnes, and religion of the world, that is to say, free remission of sins through Christ, &c. It leaveth those things in their degree to be as they are, and commendeth them as the good creatures of God. But the world preferreth these creatures before the Creator, and moreover by them would put away sin, be delivered from death, and deserve everlasting life. This doth the Gospell condemne. Contrariwise the world cannot suffer those things to be condemned, which it most esteemeth and best liketh of, and therefore it chargeth the Gospell that it is a seditious doctrine and full of errors, that it overthroweth Common-wealths, Countries, Dominions, Kingdoms and Empires, and therefore offendeth both against God and the Emperour, abolisheth laws, corrupterh good manners, and setteth all men at liberty to do what they list. Wherefore with just zeale and high service to God (as it would seeme) it persecuteth this doctrine, and abhorreth the teachers and professors therof, as the greatest plague that can be in the whole earth.

Moreover

Moreover, by the preaching of this doctrine, the Devill is overthrowne, his kingdom is destroyed, the law, sin and death (wherewith, The effects of the Gospell. as most mighty and invincible tyrants, he hath brought all mankind in subjection under his dominion) are wrested out of his hands: briefly, his prisoners are translated out of the kingdom of darknes, into the Col. 1.13 kingdome of light and liberty. Should the devill suffer all this? Should not the father of lies imploy all his force and subtile policies, to darken, to corrupt, and utterly to root out this doctrine of salvation and everlasting life? Indeed *S. Paul* complaineth in this and all other his Epistles, that even in his time the Devill shewed himselfe a cunning workman in this busines.

We thought good to shew here by the way, that the Gospell is such a doctrine as condemneth all manner of righteousness, and preacheth the only righteousness of Christ, and to them that imbrace the same, it bringeth peace of conscience and all good things: and yet notwithstanding, the world hateth and persecuteth it most bitterly.

I said before that the occasion why *St. Paul* wrote this Epistle, was for that by and by after his departure, false teachers had destroyed those things among the *Galatians*, which he with long and great travell had builded. And these false Apostles being of the The authority of the false Apostles. Circumcision and sect of the *Pharisees*, were men of great estimation and authority, which bragged among the people that they were of that holy and chosen stocke of the *Jewes*, that they were John 8. Rom 4.4.5.6. *Israelites*, of the seed of *Abraham*, that they had the promises and the fathers; and finally, that they were the Ministers of Christ, and the Apostles Schollars, with whom they had been conversant and had seene their miracles, and perhaps had also wrought some signes or miracles themselves: For Christ witnesseth that the wicked also do worke miracles. Moreover these false Apostles by all the crafty means they could devise, defaced the authority of *S. Paul*, saying: Why do ye so highly esteeme of *Paul*? Why have ye him in so great reverence? Forsooth he was but the last of all that were converted unto Christ. But we are the Disciples of the Apostles, and were familiarly conversant with them. We have seene Christ working miracles, and heard him preach. *Paul* came after us, and is inferior unto us: and it is not possible that God should suffer us to erre which are of his holy people, the Ministers of Christ, and have received the holy Ghost. Againe, we are many, and *Paul* is but one, Mat. 7.28.

Chap. I. Upon the Epistles of Paul

and alone, who neither was conversant with the Apostles, nor hath seen Christ: yea he persecuted the Church of Christ a great while. Would God (thinke ye) for Pauls sake only, suffer so many Churches to be deceived?

When men having such authority come into any Country or City, by and by the people have them in great admiration, and under this colour of godlinesse and religion, they doe not only deceive the simple, but also the learned, yea and those also which seeme to be somewhat confirmed in the faith, especially when they brag (as these did) that they are the off spring of the Patriarkes, the Ministers of Christ, the Apostles Schollers, &c. Even to the Pope at this day, when he hath no authority of the Scripture to defend himself withall, useth this one argument continually against us, *The Church, the Church*: Thinkest thou that God is so offended, that for a few hereticks of *Luther*s sect, he will cast off his whole Church? Thinkest thou that he would leave his Church in error so many hundred yeares? And this he mightily maintaineth, that the Church can never be overthrowne. Now, like as many are moved with this argument at this day: so in Pauls time these false Apostles through great bragging and setting forth of their own praises, blinded the eyes of the *Galatians*, so that Paul lost his authority among them, and his doctrine was brought into suspicion.

Against this vaine bragging and boasting of the false Apostles, Paul with great constancy and boldnesse setteth his Apostolicke authority, highly commending his vocation, and defending his ministry. And (although elsewhere he never doth the like) he will not give place to any, no not to the Apostles themselves, much lesse to any of their Schollars, And to abate their Pharisaicall pride and shamelesse boldnes, he maketh mention of the History done in *Antioch*, where he withstood Peter himselfe. Besides this, not regarding the offence that might rise thereof, he saith plainly in the Text, that he was bold to accuse and reprove Peter himselfe the chief of the Apostles, who had seen Christ, and had been most familiarly conversant with him. I am an Apostle (saith he) and such an one as passe not what others are: yea, I was not afraid to chide the very pillar of all the rest of the Apostles. And to conclude, in the first two Chapters hee doth in a manner, nothing else but set out his vocation, his office and his Gospel, affirming that it was not of men, and that he had not received

The argument of the Papists against us.

With how great constancy Saint Paul defendeth his vocation and authority against the false Apostles.

The sum of the two first Chapters.

ved it by man, but by the Revelation of Iesus Christ: also, that if he, yea, or an Angell from heaven should bring any other Gospell then that which he had preached, he should be holden accursed.

The certainty of calling.

BUt what meaneth *Paul* by this his boasting? I answer: This common place serveth to this end, that every Minister of Gods word should be sure of his calling, that before God and man he may with a bold conscience glory herein, that he preached the Gospell as one that is called and sent: even as the Embassadour of a King glorieth and vaunteth in this, that he cometh not as a private person, but as the Kings Embassadour, and because of this dignity that he is the Kings Embassadour, he is honoured and set in the highest place. Which honour should not be given unto him, if he came as a private person. Wherefore let the preacher of the Gospell be certaine that his calling is from God. And it is expedient that according to the example of *Paul*, he should magnifie this his calling, to the end that he may win credit and authority among the people, like as the Kings Embassadour magnifieth his office and calling. And thus to glory, is not a vaine, but a necessary kind of glorying, because he glorieth not in himselfe, but in the King which hath sent him, whose authority he desireth to be honoured and magnified.

Likewise when *Paul* so highly commendeth his calling, he seeketh not his owne praise, but with a necessary and a holy pride he magnifieth his ministry: as to the *Rom. 11.* he saith: For as much as I am the Apostle of the *Gentiles*, I will magnifie mine office: that is to say, I will that men receive me, not as *Paul* of *Tarsus*, but as *Paul* the Apostle or Embassadour of Iesus Christ. And this he doth of necessity to maintaine his authority, that the people in hearing this, might be more attent and willing to give care unto him. For they heare not onely *Paul*, but in *Paul* Christ himselfe, and God the Father sending him out in his message: whose authority and majesty, like as men ought religiously to honour, so ought they with great reverence to receive and to heare his messengers bringing his word and message.

This is a notable place therefore, wherein *Paul* so glorieth and boasteth as touching his vocation, that he dispiseth all others: If any man after the manner of the world should despise all others in

The Minister of
must be
of his ca

The glo
ing of Pa
as touch
his vocat
necessary
holys

The Pre
chers an
berceit
as messe
gers
God,
whose
stery G
himself
speake

in Antioch, where
receiving the offence
, that he was bold
the Apostles, who
conferreth with him.
not what others
of all the rest of
apostles hee doth
his office and his
he had not recei-
ved

respect of himselfe, and attribute all unto himselfe alone, he should not only shew himself a very fool, but also greuously offend. But this manner of boasting is necessary, and pertaineth not to the glory of Paul, but to the glory of God, whereby is offered unto him the sacrifice of praise and thanksgiving. For by this boasting, the name, the grace, and the mercy of God is made knowne unto the world. Thus therefore he beginneth his Epistle:

St. Paul
to the
Romans
ch. 1. v. 1.

Verse 1. Paul an Apostle not of men, &c.

Here in the very beginnig he toucheth those false teachers, which boasted themselves to be the Disciples of the Apostles, and to be sent of them; but despised Paul, as one that was neither the Apostles scholler, nor sent of any to preach the Gospell, but came in some other way, and of his owne head thrust himselfe into that office. Against those Paul defendeth his calling, saying: My calling seemeth base to your Preachers; but whosoever they be which have come unto you, are sent either of men, or by man: that is to say, they have entred either of themselves being not called, or else called by others. But my calling is neither of men nor by man, but it is above all manner of calling that can be made by the Apostles, for it is by Jesus Christ and by God the Father, &c.

Of men.

Where he saith of men, I meane such as call and thrust in themselves when neither God nor man calleth or sendeth them; but they runne and speake of themselves; as at this day certaine phantasticall spirits do, which either lurke in corners and seeke places where they may power out there poison, and come not into publicke congregations, or else they resort thither where the Gospell is planted already.

By man.

These I call such as are sent of men. But where he saith, by man, understand such as have a divine calling, but yet by man as by meanes. God calleth then two manner of wayes: by meanes and without meanes. He calleth us to the ministry of his word at this day not immediatly by himselfe, but by other meanes, that is to say, by man. But the Apostles were called immediatly of Christ himselfe, as the Prophets in the old time were called of God himselfe. Therefore when Paul saith; Not of men, neither by man, he beateth downe the false Apostles, As though he would say: Albeit those vipers brag never so much, what can they bragge more then that they are either come from men, that is to say, of themselves without any calling, or, by man

A double calling, by meanes and without meanes.

that

that is to say, sent of others, I passe not upon any of these things, neither ought you to regard them. As for me, I am called and sent neither of men, nor by man, but without meanes, that is to wit, by Iesus Christ himselfe, and my calling is like in all points to the calling of the Apostles, and I am indeed an Apostle. *Paul* therefore handleth this place of the calling of the Apostles effectually. And else where he seperateth the degree of Apostleship from others, as in the first to the *Cor. chap. 12.* and in the fourth to the *Ephesians*, where he saith: *And God hath ordained some in the Church, as first Apostles, secondly Prophets, thirdly teachers. &c.* setting Apostles in the first place: so that they be properly called Apostles which are sent immediatly of God himselfe without any other ordinary meanes.

The calling of the Apostles.

Who be Apostles.

Act. 1, 24, 25.
The calling of Matthias.

Act. 9. 15.
The Apostles Saints.
Mat. 27. 3.

So *Matthias* was called only of God. For when the other Apostles had appointed two; they durst not chuse the one nor the other, but they cast lots, and prayed that God would shew which of them he would have. For seing he should be an Apostle, it behoveth that he should be called of God. So was *Paul* called to be an Apostle of the *Gentiles*. Hereof the Apostles are also called faine. For they are sure of their calling and doctrine, and have continued faithfull in their Office, and none of them became a cast a way saving *Indas*, because their calling is holy: ||

The certainty of calling.

They which be not called, do kill and destroy.

This is the first assault that *Paul* maketh against the false Apostles, which ran when no man sent them. Calling therefore is not to be despised. For it is not enough for a man to have the word & pure doctrine, but also he must be assured of his calling, and he that entreth without this assurance, entreth to no other end but to kill and to destroy. For God never prospereth the labour of those that are not called. And although they teach some good and profitable matters, yet they edifie not. So our phantasticall spirits at this day have the words of faith in their mouthes, but yet they yeeld no fruit, but their chiefe end and purpose is to draw men to their false and perverse opinions. They that have a certaine and holy calling, must sustaine many and great conflicts: as they must do whose doctrine is pure and sound, that they may constantly abide in their lawfull calling, against the infinite and continuall assaults of the devill and rage of the world. Here what should he do whose calling is uncertaine and doctrine corrupt? ||

They which be not called, do kill and destroy.

This is therefore our comfort, which are in the ministry of the word; that we have an office which is heavenly and holy, to the

What danger they be in, which have no lawfull calling.

Why Paul so exaketh his calling in every place.

The profit that cometh by the extolling & magnifying of our calling.

A holy pride.

The summe of the Epistle to the Galathians.

which we being lawfully called, do triumph against all the gates of hell. On the other side, it is an horrible thing when the conscience faith, This thou hast done without any lawfull calling. Here such terrour shaketh a mans mind which is not called, that hee would wish he had never heard the word which he teacheth. For by his disobedience he maketh all his works evill, were they never so good, in so much that even his greatest works and labours become his greatest finnes.

We see then how good and necessary this boasting and glorying of our Ministry is. In times past when I was but a young Divine, me thought *Paul* did unwisely in glorying so oft of his calling in all his Epistles: but I did not understand his purpose. For I knew not that the Ministry of Gods word was so waightly a matter. I knew nothing of the doctrine of faith and a true conscience indeed, for that there was then no certainty taught either in the Schooles or Churches, but all was full of Sophisticall subtilties of the Schoole-men. And therefore no man was able to understand the dignity and power of this holy and spirituall boasting of the true and lawfull calling, which serveth first to the glory of God, and secondly to the advancing of our office, and moreover to the salvation of our selves and of the people. For by this our boasting we seeke not estimation in the world, or praise among men, or money or pleasures, or favour of the world: But for as much as we be in a divine calling and in the work of God, and the people have great need to be assured of our calling, that they may know our word to be the word of God, therefore we proudly vaunt and boast of it. It is not then a vaine, but a most holy pride against the devill and the world, & humility before God.

Verse 1. *And by God the Father, which hath raised him from the dead.*

Paul is so enflamed here with zeale, that he cannot tarry till he come to the matter it selfe, but forthwith in the very title he bursteth out and uttereth what he hath in his heart. His intent in this Epistle is, to treat of the righteousnesse that cometh by faith, and to defend the same: Againe, to beate downe the law and the righteousnesse that cometh by works. Of such cogitations he is full, and out of this wonderfull and exceeding great aboundance of the excellent wisdom and knowledge of Christ in his heart, his mouth speaketh.

This

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

of their fathers, the Creator, maintainer and preserver of all things, working wonders among his people:) but *Paul* had another thing in his heart, namely, the righteousness of Christ, and therefore he speaketh words that make much for this purpose, saying *I am an Apostle, neither of men, nor by men, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father who hath raised him up from the dead.* Ye see then with what fervency of spirit *Paul* is led in this matter, which he goeth about to establish and maintaine against the whole kingdom of hell, the power and wisdom of the world, and against the devill and his Apostles,

Verse 2. And all the bretheren with me.

This maketh much for the stopping of the mouthes of these false Apostles. For all his arguments tend to the advancing and magnifying of his ministry, and contrariwise to the discrediting of theirs. As if he should thus say: Although it be enough, that I through a divine calling am sent as an Apostle by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who hath raised him up from the dead, yet lest I should be alone, I add over and besides (which is more then needeth) all the brethren which are not Apostles, but fellow-souldiers: they write this Epistle as well as I, and beare witness with me that my doctrine is true and godly. Wherefore we be sure that Christ is present with us, and that he teacheth and speaketh in the midst of us and in our Church. As for the false Apostles, if they be any thing, they be but sent either of men or by men: but I am sent of God the Father, and of Jesus Christ, who is our life and resurrection. My other brethren are sent from God, howbeit by man, that is to wit, by me. Therefore lest they might say, that I onely set my selfe proudly against them, I have my brethren with me all of one mind, as faithfull witnesses, which thinke, write, and teach the selfe-same thing that I do.

Verse 2. Unto the Churches of Galathia.

Paul had preached the Gospell thorowout all *Galathia*, and albeit he had not wholly converted it unto Christ, yet he had many Churches in it, into the which the false Apostles, Satans ministers had crept. So likewise at this day the fantastical Anabaptists come not to those places where the adversaries of the Gospell beare rule: but where Christians and good men are, which love the Gospell. With such they

John 11.25.

Why he
saith, and
all the bre-
thren.

they wind in themselves even in the Dominions of tyrants and persecutors of the Gospell: where they, creeping into houses under crafty pretence, pounce out their poison to the subversion of many. But why go they not rather into the Cities, Countries, and Dominions of the Papists, and there professe and maintaine their doctrine in the presence of wicked Princes, Bishops, and Doctours, in the Universities, as we by Gods helpe and assistance have done? These tender Martyrs will adventure no perill, but they resort thither where the Gospell hath an harbour already, where they may live without danger in great peace and quietnesse. So the false Apostles would not endanger themselves to come to *Jerusalem* to *Caiphas*, or to *Rome* to the Emperour, or to other places where no man had preached afore, as *Paul* and the other Apostles did: but they came into *Galathia*, which was wone unto Christ already by the labour and travell of *Paul*, and into *Asia*, *Corinth*, and such other places, where good men were and professed the name of Christ, persecuting no man, but suffering all things quietly. There might the enemies of Christs Crosse live in great security and without any persecution.

Secularies shun the crosse, and therefore they resort to those places where they may do most harme and be out of danger.

And here we may learne that it is the lot of all godly teachers, that besides the persecution which they suffer of the wicked and unthankfull world, and the great travell which they sustaine in planting of Churches, they are compelled to suffer that thing which they of long time before had purely taught, to be quickly overthrowne of fantastical spirits, who afterwards reigne and rule over them. This grieveth godly Ministers more then any perfection of tyrants. Therefore let him not be a Minister of the gospell which is not content to be thus despised, or is loath to beare this reproach: or if he be, let him give over his charge to another. We also at this day doe find the same thing to be true by experience. We are miserably contemned and vexed outwardly by Tyrants, inwardly by those whom we have restored to liberty by the Gospell, and also by false brethren. But this is our comfort and glory, that being called of God, we have a promise of everlasting life, and look for that reward, which eye hath not seene, nor care hath heard, nor hath entred into the heart of man. For when the great shepheard Christ shall appeare, we shall receive an incorruptible Crowne of glory: who here also in this world will not suffer us to perrish for hunger.

The condition of all godly preachers.

The comfort of faithfull teachers labouring under the crosse.

1 Cor. 2. 9. The constant faith of Luther.

1 Pet. 5. 4.

Jerome moveth here a great question, why *Paul* calleth those Churches, which were no Churches. Is it (saith he) because *Paul* writeth to the *Galathians*, that were perverted and turned backe from Christ and from grace, unto *Moses* and the law? Hereunto I answer, that *Paul* calleth them the Churches of *Galathia*, by putting a part for the whole, which is a common thing in the scriptures. For writing in like manner to the *Corinthians*, he rejoyceth on their behalfe, that the grace of God was given them in Christ, namely, that they were made rich through him in all utterance and knowledge: and yet many of them were miss-led by false Apostles, and beleaved not the resurrection of the dead.

Albeit then that the *Galathians* were fallen away from the doctrine of *Paul*, yet did Baptisme, the word, and the name of Christ remaine among them. There were also some good men that were not revolted, which had a right opinion of the word and Sacraments, and used them well. Moreover these things could not be defiled through them that were revolted. For Baptisme, the Gospell and other things are not therefore made unholy, because many are polluted and unholy, and have an evill opinion of them: but they abide holy and the same that they were, whether they be among the godly or the ungodly: by whom they can neither be polluted, nor made holy. By our good or evill conversation, by our good or evill life and manners they be polluted or made holy in the sight of the heathen, but not afore God. Wherefore wheresoever the substance of the word and Sacraments remaineth, there is the holy Church, although Antichrist there reigne, who (as the Scripture witnesseth) sitteth not in a stable of fiends, or in a swine-stie, or in a companie of Infidels, but in the highest and holiest place of all, namely in the temple of God. Wherefore although spirituall tyrants reigne, yet there must be a Temple of God, and the same must be preserved under them. Therefore I answer briefly to this question, that the Church is universall thorowout the whole world, wheresoever the Gospell of God and the Sacraments be. The Jewes, the Turks and other vaine spirits are not the Church, because they fight against these things, and deny them. Hitherto as touching the title or inscription of this Epistle. Now followeth the salutation or greeting of *Paul*.

Verse 3. *Grace be with you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Iesus Christ.*

spiritual
word
of
the
law

ob
vrm
vs
1
om
s
1
om
s
1

The word &
Sacraments
are not pol-
luted by our
ungodlines.

The seate of
Antichrist

2 Thess 2 4.

The church
dispersed
thorow the
world.

I hope ye are not ignorant what *Grace* and *Peace* meaneth, seeing that these termes are common in *Paul*, and now not obscure or unknowne. But for as much as we take in hand to expound this Epistle (which we do, not because it is needfull, or for any hardnes that is in it, but that our consciences may be confirmed against heresies yet to come) let it not be tedious unto you, if we repeat these things againe, that elswhere and at other times we teach, preach, sing, and set out by writing. For if we neglect the article of justification, we lose all together. Therefore most necessary it is chiefly and above all things, that we teach and repeat this Article continually: Like as *Moses* saith of his law: for it cannot be beaten into our eares enough or too much. Yea, though we learne it and understand it well, yet is there none that taketh hold of it perfectly, or believeth it with his whole heart: so fraile a thing is our flesh, and disobedient to the spirit.

The greeting of the Apostle is strange unto the world, and was never heard of before the preaching of the Gospell. And these two words *Grace* and *Peace* comprehend in them whatsoever belongeth to Christianity. *Grace* releaseth sin, and peace maketh the conscience quiet. The two fiends that torment us, are sin and conscience. But *Christ* hath vanquished these two monsters, and troden them under foot, both in this world and in the world to come. This the world doth not know, and therefore it can teach no certainty of the overcoming of sinne, conscience and death. Only Christians have this kind of doctrine, and are exercised and armed with it, to get victory against sinne, despaire and everlasting death. And it is a kind of doctrine neither proceeding of free-will, nor invented by the reason or wisdom of man, but given from above. Moreover these two words, *Grace* and *Peace*, doe containe in them the whole summe of Christianity. *Grace* containeth the remission of sins, *Peace* a quiet and joyfull conscience. But peace of conscience can never be had, unless sinne be first forgiven. But sinne is not forgiven for the fulfilling of the law: for no man is able to satisfie the law; but the law doth rather shew sin, accuse and terrifie the conscience, declare the wrath of God, and drive to desperation. Much lesse is sin taken away by the workes and inventions of men, as wicked worshippings, strange religions, vowes and pilgrimages. Finally there is no work that can take away sinne, but sinne is rather increased by workes. For the *Justiciaries* and *Meritmongers*, the more they labour and sweate to bring

Grace,
Peace.

The Article
of Justificati-
on must be
continually
taught.

It is said

The greeting
of the Apo-
stle strange
and unheard
of to the
world.
Sin and con-
science, two
fiends vex-
ing and tor-
menting us.

The doctrine
of Christians

Grace and
Peace what
they bring.

bring themselves out of sin, the deeper they are plunged therein. For there is no means to take away sin but grace alone. Therefore Paul in all the greetings of his Epistles, setteth grace and peace against sin and an evil conscience. This thing must be diligently marked. The words are easie: but in temptation it is the hardest thing that can be, to be certainly perswaded in our hearts that by *Grace* alone, all other means either in heaven or in earth set apart, we have remission of sins and peace with God.

Sin is not released, but by grace alone.

The world knoweth not the doctrine of true godliness.

Onely by grace is the conscience quieted.

The world understandeth not this doctrine, and therefore it neither will nor can abide it, but condemneth it as hereticall and wicked. It braggeth of free-will, of the light of reason, of the soundnesse of the powers and qualities of nature, and of good works, as means whereby it could deserve and attain grace and peace, that is to say, forgiveness of sins and a quiet conscience. But it is impossible that the conscience should be quiet and joyfull, unles it have peace through grace, that is to say, through the forgiveness of sins promised in Christ. Many have carefully laboured by finding out divers and sundry religious orders and exercises for this purpose, to attain peace and quietnes of conscience: but by so doing they have plunged themselves in more and greater miseries: for all such devices are but meanes to increase doubtfulness and despaire. Therefore there shall be no rest to my bones or thine, unles we heare the word of grace, and cleave unto it steadfastly and faithfully: then shall our conscience undoubtedly find grace and peace.

What peace Paul wisheth to Christians
1 Cor. 13. 11.
Ps. 3. 5.

Job. 14. 17.

Peace of the world.
The favor of the world.

The Apostle doth fitly distinguish this grace and peace from all other kinds of grace and peace whatsoever. He wisheth to the *Galatians* *Grace and Peace*, not from the Emperour, or Kings and Princes: for these do commonly persecute the godly, and rise up against the Lord and Christ his annoynted, *Psal. 2.* nor from the world (for in the world, saith Christ, ye shall have trouble:) but from God our Father, &c. which is as much to say, as he wisheth unto them a heavenly peace. So Christ saith: *My peace I leave unto you: my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth it, doe I give it unto you.* The peace of the world granteth nothing but the peace of our goods and bodies. So the grace or favour of the world giveth us leave to enjoy our goods, and casteth us not out of our possessions. But in affliction and in the houre of death, the grace and favour of the world cannot helpe us, they cannot deliver us from affliction,

affliction, despair and death. But when the *Grace* and *peace* of God are in the heart, then is man strong, so that he can neither be cast downe with adversity, not puffed up with prosperity, but walketh on plainly and keepeth the high way. For he taketh heart and courage in the victory of Christs death, and the confidence thereof beginneth to raigne in his conscience over sin and death, because through him he hath assured forgiveness of his sins : which after he hath once obtained, his conscience is at rest, and by the word of *Grace* is comforted. So then a man being comforted and heartned by the *Grace* of God, that is, by forgiveness of sins and by this peace of conscience, is able valiantly to beare and overcome all troubles, yea even death it self. This *Peace* of God is not given to the world, because the world never longeth after it nor understandeth it, but to them that beleve : and this cometh to passe by no other mean, then by the only *Grace* of God.

A rule to be observed, that men ought to abstaine from the curious searching of Gods Majesty.

BUt why doth the Apostle adde moreover in this salutation : *And from our Lord Jesus Christ*: Was it not enough to say : *And from God our Father*? Why then doth he couple *Jesus Christ with the Father*? Ye have oftentimes heard of us, how it is a rule and principle in the Scriptures diligently to be marked, that we must abstaine from the curious searching of Gods Majesty, which is intollerable to mans body, and much more to his mind. * *No man* (saith the Lord) *shall see me and live.* * The Pope, the Turks, the Jews, and all such as trust in their own merits, regard not this rule, and therefore removing the Mediator Christ out of their sight, they speak only of God, and before him only they pray, and do all that they do.

As for example; the Monke imagineth thus : These workes which I doe please God, God will regard these my vowes, and for them will save me. The Turke saith : If I keep the things that are commanded in the * *Alcoran*, God will accept me, and give me everlasting life. The Jew thinketh thus : if I keepe those things which the law commandeth, I shall find God mercifull unto me, and so shall I be saved. So also a sort of fond heads at this day, bragging of the spirit of revelations, of visions, and such other monstrous matters I wot not what, doe walke in wonders above their

Why this is added, *And from our Lord Jesus Christ.*

* *Exod. 33. 20*
* The merit-mongers seeking to justify themselves by their works, shut out Christ, & will have to do with God alone.

* The *Alcoran* is a book containing the Turks religion, received from Mahomet a false Prophet that was among them.

Chap. I.

Upon the EPISTLE

their reachies. These new Monkes have invented a new crosse and new workes, and they dreame that by doing them they please God. To be briefe, as many as know not the Article of Justification, take away Christ the mercy-seat, and will needs comprehend God in his Majesty by the judgement of reason, and pacifie him with their own works.

The will of God is to be sought in Christ.

But true Christian divinity (as I give you often warning) setteth not God forth unto us in his Majesty, as *Moses* and other doctrines do, It commandeth us not to search out the nature of God: but to know his will set out to us in Christ, whom he would have to take our flesh upon him, to be borne and to die for our sins, and that this should be preached among all Nations. For seeing the world by wisdom knew not God in the wisdom of God, it pleased God by the foolishnes of preaching to save them that believe, 1 Cor. 1. Wherefore, when thy conscience standeth in the conflict, wrastling against the law, sin and death in the presence of God, there is nothing more dangerous then to wander with curious speculations in heaven, and there to search out God in his incomprehensible power, wisdom & Majesty, how he created the world, and how he governeth it. If thou seek thus to comprehend God, and wouldst pacifie him without Christ the Mediator, making thy works a meanes between him and thy self, it cannot be but that thou must fall as *Lucifer* did, and in horrible despair lose God and all together. For as God is in his own nature unmeasurable, incomprehensible and infinite, so is he to mans nature intollerable.

The fall of Lucifer. What God is in his own nature

Wherefore if thou wouldst be in safety and out of perill of conscience and salvation, bridle this climbing and presumptuous spirit, and so seeke God as *Paul* teacheth thee, 1 Cor. 1. *We* (saith he) *preach Christ crucified, a stumbling blocke unto the Jewes, and foolishnesse unto the Grecians: but unto them which are called both of the Jewes and Grecians, wee preach Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God.* Therefore begin thou there where Christ began, namely in the wombe of the Virgine, in the manger and at his mothers breasts, &c. For to this end he came downe, was borne, was conversant among men, suffered, was crucified and dyed, that by all meanes he might set forth himselfe plainly before our eyes, and fasten the eyes of our hearts upon himself, that he thereby might keep us from climbing up into heaven, and from the curious searching of the divine Majesty.

Where the will of God is to be sought.

When

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Chap. I.

Upon the EPISTLE

Mat. 27.
Job 10 15.

ther but the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne will reveale him.

And this is the cause why *Paul* is wont so often to couple *Jesus Christ* with *God the Father*, even to teach us what true *Christian Religion* is, which beginneth not at the highest as other religions doe, but at the lowest. It will have us to climbe up by *Jacobs ladder*, whereupon *God* himselfe leaneth, whose feete touch the very earth, hard by the head of *Jacob*. Wherefore whensoever thou art occupied in the matter of thy salvation, setting aside all curious speculations of *Gods* unfearcheable Majesty, all cogitations of works, of traditions, of Philosophy, yea & of *Gods* law too, run straight to the manger & embrace this *Infant*, and the *Virgins* little Babe in thine armes, and behold him as he was borne, sucking, growing up, conversant among men, teaching, dying, rising againe, ascending up above all the Heavens, and having power above all things. By this meanes shalt thou be able to shake off all terrors and errors, like as the *Sunne* driveth away the clouds. And this sight and contemplation will keep thee in the right way, that thou mayest follow whither *Christ* is gone. Therefore *Paul* in wishing *Grace* and *Peace*, not only from *God the Father*, but also from *Jesus Christ*, teacheth, first that we should abstaine from the curious searching of the divine Majesty. (for no man knoweth *God*,) and to heare *Christ*, who is in the bosome of the *Father*, and uttereth to us his will, who also is appointed of the *Father* to be our *Teacher*, to the end that we should all heare him.

Gen 28.12.

Christian divinity be-
ginneeth at
Christ lying
in the lap of
the *Virgin Mary*.

Job 2.18.

Christ is God by Name.

Christ God.

The other thing that *Paul* teacheth here, is a confirmation of our faith, that *Christ* is very *God*. And such like sentences as this is concerning the *Godhead* of *Christ*, are to be gathered together and marked diligently, not only against the *Arrians* and other hereticks which either have beene or shall be hereafter, but also for the confirmation of our faith. For *Satan* will not faile to impugn in us all the articles of our faith, ere we die. He is a most deadly enemy to faith, because he knoweth that it is the victory which overcometh the world. Wherefore it standeth us in hand to labour that our faith may be certaine, and may increase and be strengthened by diligent and continuall exercise of the word and fervent prayer, that we may be able to withstand *Satan*.

Now that *Christ* is very *God*, it is manifestly declared, in that

The devill
an adversary
to faith.
1 Joh. 5. 4.

Paul

Paul attributeth the same things equally unto him, which he doth unto the Father, namely Divine power, as the giving of grace, the forgiveness of sinnes, peace of conscience, life, victory over sinne, death, the devill and hell. This were by no meanes lawfull for him to do, nay it were sacriledge this to do, except he were very God according to that saying: *I will not give my glory unto another.* Again, no man giveth that to others, which he himselfe hath not. But seeing *Christ* giveth Grace, Peace and the holy Ghost, delivereth from the power of the devill, from sin and death, it is certaine that he hath an infinite and Divine power equall in all points to the power of the Father.

The power of the Father and of *Christ* equall.

Esa. 42. 8.

Neither doth *Christ* give Grace and Peace, as the Apostles gave and brought the same unto men by preaching of the Gospell: but he giveth it as the Author and Creator. The Father createth and giveth Life, Grace, Peace and all other good things. The selfe-same things also the Sonne createth and giveth. Now, to give Grace, Peace, everlasting life, to forgive sinnes, to make righteous, to quicken, to deliver from death and the devill, are not the works of any creature, but of the Divine Majesty alone. The Angels can neither create nor give these things. Therefore these works pertaine onely to the glory of the Sovereigne Majesty, the maker of all things. And seeing *Paul* doth attribute the selfe-same power of creating, and giving all these things unto *Christ* equally with the Father, it must needs follow that *Christ* is verily and naturally God.

How *Christ* giveth grace and peace.

The workes of *Christ* are divine and proper to God.

Many such arguments are in *John*, where it is proved and concluded by the works which are attributed to the Sonne, as well as to the Father, that the divinity of the Father and of the Sonne, is all one. Therefore the gifts which we receive of the Father, and which we receive of the Sonne are all one. For else *Paul* would have spoken otherwise, after this manner: Grace from God the Father, and Peace from our Lord *Jesus Christ*. But in knitting them both together, he attributeth them equally, as well to the Sonne as to the Father. I do therefore so diligently admonish you of this thing, because it is dangerous lest among so many errors, and in so great variety and confusion of sects, there might step up some *Arrians*, *Eunomians*, *Macedonians*, and such other hereticks, that might do harme to the Churches with their subtlety.

dist. dist. & ...

One and the selfe same Godhead of the Father and of the Sonne.

Indeed the *Arrians* were sharpe and subtile fellowes. They granted

granted that Christ hath two natures, and that he is called very God of very God, howbeit in Name onely: Christ (saith they) is a most noble and perfect creature above the Angels, whereby God afterward created heaven and earth, and all other things. So *Mahomet* also speaketh honourably of Christ. But all this is nothing else but goodly imaginations and words pleasant and plausible to mans reason, whereby the fantastical spirits do deceive men; except they take good heed. But *Paul* speaketh otherwise of Christ. Ye (saith he) are rooted and established in this beleefe, namely that Christ is not onely a perfect creature, but very God, who doth the selfe-same things that God the Father doth. He hath the Divine works, not of a creature, but of the Creatour, because he giveth *Grace* and *Peace*: and to give them, is to condemne sin, to vanquish death, and to tread the devill under foot. These things no Angell can give: but seeing they are attributed unto Christ, it must needs follow that he is very God by nature.

The workes
of Christ

Vers. 4. Which gave himselfe for our sinnes.

Paul in a manner in very word handleth the argument of this Epistle. He hath nothing in his mouth but Christ, and therefore in every word there is a fervency of spirit and life. And marke how well and to the purpose he speaketh. He saith not, which hath received but works at our hands, nor, which hath received the sacrifices of *Moses* law, worshippings, religions, Masses, vowes and pilgrimages: *But hath given.* What? not gold, nor silver, nor beasts, nor paschall lambes, nor an Angell, *but himselfe.* For what? Not for a Crowne, not for a Kingdome, not for our holinesse or righteousnesse, but for our sinnes. These words are very thunder-claps from heaven against all kinds of righteousness: like as is also this sentence of *John*: *Behold the Lambe of God that taketh away the sins of the world.* Therefore we must with diligent attention marke every word of *Paul*, and not slenderly consider them or lightly passe them over: for they are full of consolation, and confirme fearfull consciences exceedingly.

Which hath
given him-
selfe.

But how may we obtaine remission of our sins? *Paul* answereth, that the man which is called *Jesus Christ* the Sonne of God hath given himselfe for them. These are excellent and most comfortable words, and are promises of the old law, that our sinnes are taken away by none other meane, then by the Sonne of God delivered

unto

unto death. With such Gunne-shot and such Artillery must the Papacy be destroyed, and all the religions of the Heathen, all works, all merits and superstitious Ceremonies. For if our finnes may be taken away by our owne works, merits and satisfactions, what needed the Sonne of God to be given for them? But seeing he was given for them, it followeth, that we cannot put them away by our owne works.

Againe, by this sentence it is declared, that our finnes are so great, so infinite and invincible, that it is impossible for the whole world to satisfie for one of them: and surely the greatnes of the ransom (namely Christ the Sonne of God, who gave himselfe for our finnes) declareth sufficiently, that we can neither satisfie for sinne, nor have dominion over it. The force and power of sinne is set forth and amplified exceedingly by these words: *Which gave himselfe for our finnes.* Therefore here is to be marked the infinite greatnesse of the price bestowed for it, and then will it appeare evidently, that the power of it is so great, that by no meanes it could be put away, but that the Sonne of God must needs be given for it. He that considereth these things well, understandeth that this one word *Sinne*, comprehendeth Gods everlasting wrath and the whole kingdome of Satan, and that it is a thing more horrible then can be expressed: which ought to move us and make us afraid indeed. But we are carelesse, yea we make light of sin, and a matter of nothing: which although it bring with it the sting and remorse of conscience, yet notwithstanding we thinke it not to be of such weight and force, but that by some little worke or merit we may put it away.

The greatnes of sin is to be esteemed by the greatnes of the price whereby it is abolished

This sentence therefore witnesseth, that all men are servants and bond-slaves to sinne, and (as *Paul* saith in another place) are sold under sinne. And againe, that sinne is a most cruell and mighty tyrant over all men: which cannot be vanquished by the power of any creatures, whether they be Angels or men, but by the soveraign and infinite power of *Jesus Christ*, who hath given himselfe for the same.

Rom. 7. 14. Sinne a mighty tyrant, holding all men in captivity and thraldome.

Furthermore this sentence setteth out to the consciences of all men which are terrified with the greatnes of their sins, a singular comfort. For albeit sin be never so invincible a tyrant: yet notwithstanding, forasmuch as *Christ* hath overcome it through his death, it cannot hurt

The iudgement of the godly.

them that beleeve in him. Moreover, if we arme our selves with this beleeve, and cleave with all our hearts unto this man Jesus Christ, then is there a light opened and a sound iudgement given unto us, so as we may most certainly and freely iudg of all kinds of life. For when we heare that sin is such an invincible tyrant, thus incontinent by a necessary consequence we inferre: Then what do the Papists, Monkes, Nuns, Priests, Mahumetists, Anabaptists, and all such as trust in their works, which will abolish and overcome sin by their own traditions, works preparative, satisfactions, &c. Here forthwith we iudge all those sects to be wicked and pernicious: wherby the glory of God and of Christ is not only defaced, but also utterly taken away, and our own advanced and established.

There is a great vehemencie all waies to be marked in pronounes.

But weigh diligently every word of *Paul*, and specially mark well this pronoun, *Our*. For the effect altogether consisteth in the well applying of the pronouns, which we find very often in the Scriptures. Wherin also there is ever some vehemency and power. Thou wilt easily say and believe that Christ the Son of God was given for the sins of *Peter*, of *Paul* and of other Saints, whom we account to have been worthy of this grace. But it is a very hard thing that thou which judgest thy selfe unworthy of this grace, shouldst from thy heart say and beleeve, that Christ was given for thine invincible, infinite and horrible sins. Therefore generally and without the pronoun, it is an easie matter to magnifie and amplifie the benefit of Christ, namely, that Christ was given for sinnes, but for other mens sins which are worthy. But when it cometh to the putting to of this pronoun

The weakness of faith in us.

Our, there our weak nature and reason starteth backe, and dare not come neare unto God, nor promise to her selfe that so great a treasure should be truly given unto her, and therefore she will not have to doe with God, except first she be pure and without sinne. Wherefore, although she read or heare this sentence: *Which gave himselfe for our sinnes*, or such like, yet doth she not apply this pronoun (*Our*) unto her selfe, but unto others which are worthy and holy, and as for her selfe, she will tarry till she be made worthy by her owne works.

Reason doth extenuate and lessen same.

This then is nothing else, but that mans reason saime would that sin were of no greater force and power, then she her selfe dreameth it to be. Hereof it cometh that the hypocrites being ignorant of Christ, although they feele the remorse of sin, doe thinke notwithstanding that they

they shall be able easily to put it away by their good works and merits, and secretly in their hearts they wish that these words: *Which gave himselfe for our sins*, were but as words spoken in humility, and would have their sins not to be true and very sins indeed; but light and small matters. To be short, mans reason would faine bring and present unto God a fained and a counterfeit sinner, which is nothing afraid nor hath any feeling of sin. It would bring him that is whole, and not him that hath need of a Phisitian, and when it feeleth no sin, then would it beleve that Christ was given for our sins.

The hypocrites would that these words of Paul were rather spoken to shew his humil. ty, then the greatnesse of our sins: for that they cannot heare.

The whole world is thus affected, and especially they that would be counted more holy and religious then others, as Monks, and all Justiciaries. These confesse with their mouth that they are sinners and they confesse also that they commit sins daily, howbeit not so great and many; but that they are able to put them away by their owne works; yea and besides all this, they will bring their righteousnes and deserts to Christs judgement seat, and demand the recompence of eternall life for them at the Judges hand. In the mean while notwithstanding (as they pretend great humility) because they will not vaunt themselves to be utterly void of sin, they faine certaine sinnes; that for the forgiveness thereof, they may with great devotion pray with the *Publican*, *God be mercifull unto me, a sinner*. Unto them these words of *S. Paul*, *for our sins*, seeme to be but light and trifling: Therefore they neither understand them, nor in temptation when they feel sin indeed, can they take any comfort of them, but are compelled flatly to despair.

The picture of the Justiciaries and such as seek righteousnes by workes.

—

Luke. 18. 15

This is then the chiefe knowledge and true wisdom of Christians, to count these words of *Paul*, that Christ was delivered to death, not for our righteousnesse or holinesse, but for our sins (which are very sinnes indeed, great, many, yea infinite and invincible) to be most true, effectually and of great importance. Therefore thinke them not to be small, and such as may be done away by thine owne works: neither yet despaire thou for the greatnesse of them, if thou feele thy selfe oppressed therewith, either in life or death: but learn here of *Paul* to beleve that Christ was given, not for fained or counterfeit sins, nor yet for small sinnes, but for great and huge sinnes; not for one or two, but for all, not for vanquished sins (for no man, no nor Angell is able to overcome the least sin that is) but for invincible sins. And except thou be found in the number of those that say:

The chiefe wisdom of Christians.

Our sins, that is, which have this doctrine of faith, and teach, hear, learn, love and believe the same, there is no salvation for thee.

Labour therefore diligently, that not only out of the time of temptation, but also in the danger and conflict of death, when thy conscience is throughly afraid with the remembrance of thy sins past, and the devill assaileth thee with great violence, going about to overwhelm thee with heaps, floods and whole seas of sins, to terrifie thee, to draw thee from Christ, and to drive thee to despaire: that then I say, thou maist be able to say with sure confidence: Christ the Son of God was given, not for the righteous and holy, but for the unrighteous and sinners. If I were righteous and had no sin, I should have no need of Christ to be my reconciler. Why then, O thou peevish holy Satan, wilt thou make me to be holy and to seeke righteousness in my selfe, when in very deed I have nothing in me but sinnes, and most grievous sinnes? not fained or trifling sinnes, but such as are against the first Table: To wit, great infidelity, doubting, despaire, contempt of God; hatred, ignorance and blaspheming of God, unthankfulnesse, abusing of Gods name, neglecting, loathing, and despising the word of God, and such like: And moreover, these carnall sinnes against the second Table: As not to yeeld honour to my parents, not to obey the Magistrates, to covet another mans goods, his wife, and such like: albeit that these be light faults in respect of those former sinnes. And admit that I have not committed murder, whoredome, theft and such other sinnes against the second Table, in fact: yet I have committed them in heart, and therefore I am a transgressour of all Gods commandments, and the multitude of my sinnes is so great that they cannot be numbred: For I have sinned above the number of the sands of the sea.

Besides this, Satan is such a cunning jugler, that he can make of my righteousness and good works, great sins. For so much then as my sins are so weighty, so infinite, so horrible and invincible, and that my righteousness doth nothing further me, but rather hinder me before God: therefore Christ the Son of God was given to death for them, to put them away, and so save all men which believe. Herein therefore consisteth the effect of eternall salvation, namely in taking these words to be effectually, true and of great importance. I say not this for nought, for I have oftentimes proved by experience, and I daily find what an hard matter it is to believe (especially in the conflict of conscience)

Sinnes against the first table.

Satan is wont to change righteousness into sinnes.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY
BIBLE**

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

The true definition of Christ.

Against this temptation we must use these words of *Paul*, in the which he giveth a very good and a true definition of Christ in this manner: Christ is the Son of God and of the virgin, delivered and put to death for our sins. Here if the devill alledge any other definition of Christ, say thou: The definition and the thing defined are false: Therefore I will not receive this definition. I speake not this without cause: For I know what mooveth me to be so earnest that we should learne to define Christ out of the words of *Paul*. For indeed Christ is no cruel exactor, but a forgiver of the sins of the whole world. Wherefore if thou be a sinner (as indeed we are all) set not Christ down upon the rain-bow as a judg (for so shalt thou be terrified and despair of his mercy) but take hold of his true definition, namely that Christ the Son of God, and of the virgin is a person, not that terrifieth, not that afflicteth, not that condemneth us of sin, not that demandeth an account of us for our lives evill passed: but hath given himselfe for our sins, and with one oblation hath put away the sins of the whole world, hath fastned them upon the crosse, and put them clean out by himselfe.

Col. 2. 14.

Let every man learne to apply this pronoun (our) unto himselfe.

Learn this definition diligently, and especially so exercise this pronoun (*our*) that this one sillable being beleaved, may swallow up all thy sins: That is to say, that thou maiest know assuredly that Christ hath taken away the sins, not of certaine men only, but also of thee, yea and of the whole world. Then let not thy sins be sins only, but even thy own sins indeed: That is to wit, believe thou that Christ was not only given for other mens sins, but also for thine. Hold this fast, and suffer not thy self by any means to be drawn away from this most sweet definition of Christ, vvhich rejoyceth even the very Angels in heaven: That is to say, that Christ according to the proper and true definition, is no *Moses*, no law-giver, no tyrant, but a Mediatour for sins, a free giver of grace, righteousness and life: who gave himselfe, not for our merits, holines, righteousness and godly life, but for our sins. Indeed Christ doth interpret the law, but that is not his proper and principall office.

The true picture of Christ.

These things, as touching the words, we know well enough and can talk of them: but in practise and in the conflict, vvhhen the devill goeth about to deface Christ, and to pluck the word of grace out of our hearts, we find that we do not yet know them vvell, and as vve should do. He that at that time could define Christ truly, and could magnifie him and behold

behold him as his most sweet Saviour and high Priest, and not as a strait Judge, this man had overcome all evils, and were already in the kingdom of heaven. But this to do in the conflict, is of all things the most hardest. I speak this by experience: for I know the devils subtilties, who at that time not only goeth about to fear us with the terror of the law, yea and also of a little mote maketh many beams, that is to say, of that which is no sin he maketh a very hell (for he is marvellous crafty both in aggravating sin, and in puffing up the conscience even in good works:) but also is wont to fear us with the very person of the Mediatour: into the which he transformeth himself, and laying before us some place of the Scripture or some saying of Christ, suddenly he striketh our hearts and sheweth himself unto us in such sort, as if he were Christ indeed, leaving us sticking so fast in that cogitation, that our conscience would swear it were the same Christ whose saying he alledged. Moreover, such is the subtilty of the enemy, that he will not set before us Christ entirely and wholly, but a peece of Christ only, namely that he is the Son of God, and man born of the virgin: and by and by patcheth therto some other thing: That is to say, some saying of Christ wherewith he terrifieth the impenitent sinners, such as that is in *Luk. 13. Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish*: and so corrupting the true definition of Christ with his poison, he bringeth to passe that albeit we beleve him to be Christ the true Mediatour, yet in very deed our troubled conscience feeleth and judgeth him to be a tyrant and a judge. Thus we being deceived by Satan, do easily lose that sweet sight of our high Priest and Saviour Christ: which being once lost, we shun him no less then the devill himself.

What snares Satan layeth for us.

And this is the cause why I doe so earnestly call upon you, to learne the true and proper definition of Christ out of these words of *Paul. Which gave himselfe for our sinnes*. If he gave himself to death for our sins, then undoubtedly he is no tyrant or judge which will condemne us for our sinnes: he is no castor downe of the afflicted, but a raiser up of those that are fallen, a mercifull releever and comforter of the heavie and broken hearted. Else should *Paul* lye in saying: *Which gave himselfe for our sinnes*. If I define Christ thus, I define him rightly, and take hold of the true Christ, and possesse him indeed. And here I let passe all curious speculations touching the divine Majestie, and I stay my selfe in the humanity of Christ, and so I learne truly to know the will of God. Here is then no fear,

This sentence is diligently to be urged: Which gave himselfe for us.

but

but altogether sweetnes, joy, peace of conscience and such like. And herewithal there is a light opened, which sheweth me the true knowledge of God, of my self, of all creatures, and all the iniquity of the devils kingdome. We teach no new thing, but we repeate and establish old things, which the Apostles and all godly teachers have taught before us. And would to God we could so teach and establish them, that we might not only have them in our mouth, but also well grounded in the bottome of our heart, and especially that we might be able to use them in the agony and conflict of death.

Verse 4. *That he might deliver us from this present evill world.*

Why Paul calleth the world present & evill.

The world the kingdome of the devill

Sinnes are not taken away by workes

That the ungodly with all there gifts doe serve the devill.

In these words also *Paul* handleth yet more effectually the argument of this Epistle. He calleth this whole world, which hath bin, is, and shall be, *the present world*, to put a difference between this and the everlasting world to come. Moreover he calleth it evill, because that whatsoever is in this world, is subject to the malice of the devill reigning over the whole world. For this cause the world is the kingdome of the devill. For there is in it nothing but ignorance, contempt, blasphemy, hatred of God, and disobedience against all the words and works of God. In and under this kingdome of the world are we.

Here againe you see that no man is able by his owne workes, or his owne power to put away sinne, because this present world is evill, and as *S. John* saith, *is set upon mischief*. As many therefore, as are in the world, are the bond-slaves of the devill, constrained to serve him, and doe all things at his pleasure. What availed it then to set up so many orders of Religion for the abolishing of sinne? To devise so many great and most painfull workes, as to weare shirts of haire, to beat the body with whips till the bloud followed, to goe on pilgrimages to *S. James* in harness, and such other like? Be it so that thou doest all these things, yet notwithstanding this is true, that thou art in this present evill world, and not in the kingdome of Christ. And if thou be not in the kingdome of Christ, it is certaine that thou belongest to the kingdome of Satan, which is this evill world. Therefore all the gifts either of the body or of the mind which thou enjoyest, as wisdom, righteousness, holiness, eloquence, power, beauty and riches, are but the slavish instruments of the devill, and with all these thou art compelled to serve

serve him and to advance his Kingdome.

First, with thy wisdom thou darknest the wisdom and knowledge of Christ, and by thy wicked doctrine ledest men out of the way, that they cannot come to the grace and knowledge of Christ. Thou settest out and praisest thine own righteousnesse and holinesse: but the righteousnes of Christ, by which only we are justified and quickened, thou dost hate and condemne as wicked and devillish. To be briefe, by thy power thou destroyest the Kingdome of Christ, and abushest the same to roote out the Gospell, to persecute and kill the Ministers of Christ, and so many as heare them. Wherefore if thou be without Christ, this thy wisdom is double foolishnes, thy righteousnes double sin and impiety, because it knoweth not the wisdom and righteousnes of Christ: moreover it darkneth, hindreth, blasphemeth and persecuteth the same. Therefore *Paul* doth rightly call it the evill or wicked world: for when it is at the best, then is it worst. In the religious, wise and learned men, the world is at the best; and yet in very deed in them it is double evill. I overpasse those grosse vices which are against the second table, as disobedience to parents, to Magistrates, adulteries, whoredomes, covetousnesse, thefts, murders, and maliciousnes, wherein the world is altogether drowned, which notwithstanding are light faults if ye compare them with the wisdom and righteousnes of the wicked, whereby they fight against the first table. This white devill which forceth men to commit spirituall sins, that they may sell them for righteousnesse, is farre more dangerous then the black devill, which only enforceth them to commit fleshly sins, which the world acknowledgeth to be sins.

By these words then: *That he might deliver us,* &c. *Paul* sheweth what is the argument of this Epistle, to wit, that we have need of grace and of Christ, and that no other creature, neither man nor Angell, can deliver man out of this present evill world. For these workes are onely belonging to the Divine Majesty, and are not in the power of any, either man or Angell, that Christ hath put away sinne, and hath delivered us from the tyranny and kingdome of the devill, that is to say, from this wicked world, which is an obedient servant and a willing follower of the devill his god. Whatsoever that murderer and father of lies either doth or speaketh, that the world, as his most loyall and obedient sonne, diligently followeth and performeth. And therefore it is full of the ignorance

They that know not Christ, the more wise & righteous they are, the more doe they hate & persecute the Gospell.

The white devill
Spirituall whoredome
the most abominable.

Christ onely can deliver us out of this present world.

The world obeyeth his
Praise the devill.

of

Chap. I. Upon the E P I's TLE

What sins are in the world.

Of God, of hatred, lying, errours, blasphemy, and of the contempe of God: Moreover of grosse finnes, as murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, robberies and such like, because he followeth his father the devill, who is a lyer and a murtherer. And the more wise, righteous and holy that men are without Christ, so much the more hurt they do to the Gospell. So we also that were religious men, were double wicked in the Papacy, before God did lighten us with the knowledge of his Gospell; and yet notwithstanding under the colour of true piety and holinesse.

What the world is, with all his vertues and righteousness.

Let these words then of Paul remaine as they are indeed, true and effectually, not coloured or counterfeit, namely, *That this present world is evill.* Let it nothing at all move thee, that in a great number of men there be many excellent vertues, and that there is so great a shew of holinesse in hypocrites. But marke thou rather what Paul saith: out of whose words thou maist boldly and freely pronounce this sentence against the world, that the world with all his wisdom, power and righteousnesse, is the kingdome of the devill, out of the which God alone is able to deliver us by his onely begotten Sonne.

Phil. 3. 8.

Therefore let us praise God the Father, and give him hearty thanks for this his unmeasurable mercy, that hath delivered us out of the kingdome of the devill; (in the which we were holden captives) by his own Sonne, when it was impossible to be done by our own strength. And let us acknowledge together with Paul, that all our workes and righteousnesse (with all which we could not make the devill to stoope one haire bredth) are but losse and dung. Also let us cast under our feet, and utterly abhorre all the power of free-will, all Pharisaicall wisdom and righteousnesse, all religious orders, all Masses, ceremonies, vowes, fasting, and such like, as a most filthy defiled cloath, and as the most dangerous poison of the devill. Contrariwise let us extoll and magnifie the glory of Christ, who hath delivered us by his death, not from this world only, but from this evil world.

Esa 44. 6.

The kingdome of the world.

The Kingdome of Christ.

Paul then by this word *Evill*, sheweth that the kingdome of the world, or the devils kingdome is the kingdome of iniquity, ignorance, error, sinne, death, blasphemy, desperation, and everlasting damnation. On the other side, the kingdome of Christ is the Kingdome of equity, light, grace, remission of finnes, peace, consolation, saving-health, and everlasting life, into the which we are translated

lated

Moved by our Lord Jesus Christ, to whom be glory world without end. So be it.

Verse 4. According to the Will of God, even our Father.

Here Paul so placeth and ordereth every word, that there is not one of them but it fighteth against those false Apostles for the article of justification. Christ (saith he) hath delivered us from this wicked kingdome of the devill and the world. And this hath he done according to the will, good pleasure and commandment of the Father. Wherefore we be not delivered by our own will or cunning, nor by our owne wisdom or policy, but for that God hath taken mercy upon us, and hath loved us: like as it is written also in another place: Herein hath appeared the great love of God towards us, not that we have loved God, but that he hath loved us, and hath sent his onely begotten Sonne to be a reconciliation for our sinnes. That we then are delivered from this present evil world, it is of meere grace, and no desert of ours. Paul is so plentifull and so vehement in amplifying and extolling the grace of God, that he sharpneth and directeth every word against the false Apostles.

There is also another cause why Paul here maketh mention of the Fathers will, which also in many places of Saint Johns Gospell is declared, where Christ commending his office, calleth us back to his Fathers will, that in his words and works we should not so much look upon him, as upon the Father. For Christ came into this world and took mans nature upon him, that he might be made a sacrifice for the sinns of the whole world, and so reconcile us to God the Father, that he alone might declare unto us how that this was done through the good pleasure of his Father, that we by fastning our eyes upon Christ, might be drawne and carried straight unto the Father.

For we must not thinke (as before we have warned you) that by the curious searching of the Majesty of God, any thing concerning God can be knowne to our salvation, but by taking hold of Christ, who according to the will of the Father hath given himself to death for our sinnes. When thou shalt acknowledge this to be the will of God through Christ, then wrath ceaseth, feare and trembling vanisheth away, neither doth God appeare any other then mercifull, who by his determinate counsell would that his Sonne should die for us, that we might live through him. This knowledge maketh the heart chearefull.

indeed, true and his present world great number of here is to great a rather what Paul

of the devill, out onely begotten

ten captives) by it own strength: it all our workes make the devill to let us cast under ill, all Pharisi-

ivered us by

It is the King- rance, consolati- sh we are tran- slated

It is a great consolation to know that Christ is given for us by the will of his Father.

chearefull, so that it stedfastly beleeveth that God is not angry, but that he so loveth us poore and wretched sinners, that he gave his only begotten Son for us. It is not for nought therefore, that *Paul* doth so often repeate and beate into our minds, that Christ was given for our sins, and that by the good-will of the Father. On the contrary part, the curious searching of the Majesty of God and his dreadfull judgements, namely how he destroyed the whole world with the flood, how he destroyed *Sodom*, and such other things, are very dangerous: for they bring men to desperation, and cast them downe headlong into utter destruction, as I have shewed before.

Verse 1. Of God and our Father.

God is a common Father both to Christ and to us.

This word OUR, must be referred to both, that the meaning may be this, of our God and of our Father. Then is Christs Father and our Father all one. So in the 20. of *John*, Christ saith to *Mary Magdalene*: *Goe to my bretheren, and say unto them: I ascend unto my Father and your Father, to my God, and to your God.* Therefore God is our Father and our God, but through Christ. And this is an Apostolike manner of speech, and even *Pauls* own phrase, who indeed speaketh not with such picked and gay words, but yet very fit and to the purpose, and full of burning zeale.

Verse 4. To whom be glory for ever and ever.

The *Hebrewes* are wont in their writings to intermingle praise and giving of thanks. This custome the *Hebrewes* and Apostles themselves doe observe. Which thing may very often be scene in *Paul*. For the Name of the Lord ought to be had in great reverence, and never to be named without praise and thanksgiving. And thus to doe is a certaine kind of worship and service of God. So in worldly matters, when we mention the Names of Kings or princes, we are wont to do it with some comely gesture, reverence and bowing of the knee: much more ought we, when we speake of God, to bow the knee of our heart, and to name the Name of God with thankfulness and great reverence.

Verse 6. I marvell.

Ye see here how *Paul* handleth the *Galathians*, which were fallen away and seduced by the false Apostles. He doth not at the first
set

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

How the
weake and
such as are
fallen, ought
to be hand-
led.

may shew, our selves to beare like affection towards such as are misled, as parents beare towards their children, that they may perceiue our fatherly and motherly affection towards them, and may see that we seek not their destruction but their welfare. But as for the devill and his ministers, the authours of false doctrine and sects, against them we ought by the example of the Apostle, to be impatient, proud, sharp and bitter, detesting and condemning their false jugglings and deceits with as much rigour and severity as may be. So Parents when their child is hurt with the biting of a dog, are wont to pursue the dog only, but the weeping child they bemoane, and speak fair unto it, comforting it with most sweet words.

The study of
Bishops to
maintaine
their Lord-
ship and so-
veraignty.

The Spirit therefore that is in *Paul*, is wonderfull cunning in handling the afflicted consciences of such as are fallen. Contrariwise the Pope (because he is led with a wicked spirit) breaketh out violently like a tyrant, and rappeth out his thunder-claps and curfings against the miserable and terrified in conscience: which thing may be seen in his Bulls, and especially in that Bull touching the Lords Supper. The Bishops also do their duty never a whit better. They teach not the Gospell, they are not carefull for the saving of mens soules, but only they seek Lordship and soveraignty over them, and therefore their speakings and doings are altogether to maintain and support the same. In like manner are all the vain, glorious Doctors and Teachers affected.

Verse 6. That so soone.

1 Cor. 10. 12.

Ye see how *Paul* complaineth, that to fall in faith, is an easie matter. In respect whereof he warneth the faithfull in another place, *That he which standeth, should take heed that he fall not.* We also doe daily prove by experience, how hardly the mind conceiveth and retaineth a sound and stedfast faith: Also with what great difficulty a perfect people is gotten to the Lord. A man may labour half a score years ere he shall get some little Church to be rightly and religiously ordered, and when it is so ordered, there creepeth in some mad-brain, yea and a very unlearned ideot, which can do nothing els but speak slanderously and spitefully against sincere preachers of the word, and he in one moment overthroweth all. Whom would not this wicked, and outragious dealing move?

We

We by the grace of God have gotten here at *Wittenberge*, the form of a Christian Church. The word among us is purely taught, the Sacraments are rightly used, exhortations and prayers are made also for all estates; and to be briefe, all things go forward prosperously. This most happy course of the Gospell some mad head would soon stop, and in one moment would overturn all that we in many years with great labour have builded. Even so it befell to *Paul* the elect vessel of Christ. He had won the Churches of *Galatia* with great care and travell, which the false Apostles in a short time after his departure overthrew, as this and diverse other of his Epistles doe witness. So great is the weaknesse and wretchednesse of this present life, and we so walke in the midst of Satans snares, that one fantastical head may destroy and utterly overthrow in a short space, all that which many true Ministers, labouring night and day, have builded up many years before. This we learne at this day by experience to our great griefe, and yet we cannot remedy this enormity.

That which in long time of godly Preachers is builded up, of one wicked teacher is quickly destroyed.

Seeing then that the Church is so soft and so tender a thing, and is so soon overthrown, men must watch carefully against these fantastical spirits: who when they have heard two Sermons, or have read a few leaves in the holy Scriptures, by and by they make themselves masters and controllers of all learners and teachers, contrary to the authority of all men. Many such also thou maist find at this day among handy crafts men, bold and malapert fellowes, who because they have been tryed by no tentations, did never learne to feare God, nor had any taste or feeling of grace. These for that they are void of the holy Ghost, teach what liketh themselves best, and such things as are plausible and pleasant to the common people. Then the unskilfull multitude, longing to heare news, do by and by joyn themselves unto them: yea and many also which think themselves well seen in the doctrine of faith, and after a sort have bin tried with temptations, are seduced by them.

A true picture of fantastical bragging and glorious spirits.

Since that *Paul* therefore by his own experience may teach us, that Congregations which are won by great labour, are easily and soone overthrowne, we ought with singular care to watch against the devill ranging every where, lest he come while we sleep, and sow tares among the wheat: for though the shepherds be never so watchfull and diligent, yet is the Christian flocke

The Churches are overthrowne while the teachers sleepe.

in danger of Satan. For *Paul* (as I said) with singular study, and diligence had planted Churches in *Galatia*, and yet he had scarcely set his foot (as they say) out of the doore, but by and by the false Apostles overthrew some, whose fall afterward was the cause of great ruins in the Churches of *Galatia*. This so sudden and so great a loss, no doubt was more bitter unto the Apostle then death it self. Wherefore let us watch diligently, first every one for himself, secondly all teachers, not only for themselves, but also for the whole Church, that we enter not into tentation.

Verse 6. *Ye are removed away.*

Here once againe he useth not a sharpe, but a most gentle word. He saith not, *I marvell* that ye so suddenly fall away, that ye are so disobedient, light, inconstant, unthankfull: but that ye are so soon removed. As if he should say: Ye are altogether patients or sufferers: for ye have done no harme, but ye have suffered and received harm. To the intent therefore that he might call back again those back-sliders, he rather accuseth those that did remove, then those that were removed, & yet very modestly he blameth them also, when he complaineth that they were removed. As if he would say: Albeit I embrace you with a fatherly affection, and know that ye are deceived, not by your own default, but by the default of the false Apostles: yet notwithstanding I would have wished, that ye had bin grown up a little more in the strength of sound doctrine. Ye took not hold enough upon the word, ye rooted not your selves deep enough in it, and that is the cause that with so light a blast of wind, ye are carried and removed. *Jerom* thinketh that *Paul* meant to interpret this word [*Galathians*] by alluding to the Hebrew word *Galath*, which is as much to say, as fallen or carried away. As though he would say: ye are right *Galathians* both in name and in deed, that is to say, fallen or removed away. Some thinke that the *Germanes* are descended of the *Galathians*: Neither is this divination perhaps untrue. For the *Germanes* are not much unlike to them in nature. And I my self also am constrained to wish to my Country-men more stedfastnes and constancy: For in all things that we do, at the first brunt we be very hot, but when the heat of our affections is allayed, anon we become more slack, and look with what rashnes we begin things, with the same we give them over and utterly reject them.

The nature
and disposition
of the
Germanes.

At the first when the light of the Gospell, after so great darknes of mens traditions began to appeare, many were zealously bent to godlines: they heard Sermons greedily and had the Ministers of Gods word in reverence. But now when Religion is happily reformed with so great increase of Gods word, many which before seemed to be earnest disciples, are become contemners and very enemies therof, who not only cast off the study and zeale of Gods word and despise the Ministers therof, but also hate all good learning, and become plain hogs and belly-gods, worthy (doubtles) to be compared unto the foolish and inconstant Galatians.

This may well be laid of us English men, for our heat is soon cooled, and that may appear by our cold proceedings at this day.

Verse 6. From him that hath called you in the grace of Christ.

This place is somewhat doubtfull, and therefore it hath a double understanding. The first is: *From that Christ that hath called you in grace.* The other is: *From him, that is to say from God which hath called you in the grace of Christ.* I embrace the former. For it liketh me, that even as Paul a little before made Christ the Redeemer, who by his death delivered us from this present evill world: also the giver of grace and peace equally with God the Father: so he should make him here also the caller in grace: For Pauls speciall purpose is, to beat into our minds the benefit of Christ by whom we come unto the Father. There is also in these words: *From him that hath called us in grace,* a great vehemency. Wherein is contained withall a contrary relation. As if he would say: Alas, how lightly do you suffer your selves to be with drawne and removed from Christ, which hath called you: not as Moses did to the law, works, sinnes, wrath and damnation, but altogether to grace. So we also complaine at this day with Paul, that the blindness and perverseness of men is horrible, in that none will receive the doctrine of grace and salvation. Or if there be any that receive it, yet they quickly slide back again and fall from it, whereas notwithstanding it bringeth with it all good things, as well ghostly, as bodily, namely forgiveness of sinnes, true righteousness, peace of conscience, and everlasting life. Moreover it bringeth light and sound judgement of all kinds of doctrine and trades of life. It approveth and establisheth civill government, house-hold governement, and all kinds of life that are ordained and appointed of God. It rooteth up all doctrines of error, sedition, confusion and such like: and it putteth

A double exposition upon this place.

The drift & purpose of Paul in this whole Epistle.

An Antithesis or comparison between the calling of Christ to grace, and the calling of Moses to the law and works.

What good things the doctrine of grace bringeth with it.

teth away the feare of sinne and death, and to be short, it discovereth all the subtill sleights and works of the devill, and, openeth the benefits and love of God towards us in Christ. What (-with a mischief) means the world to hate this word, this glad tidings of everlasting comfort, grace, salvation and eternall life, so bitterly, and to persecute it with such hellish outrage?

The world hateth the light, and loveth darknesse,
Iohn 3.19.

What recompence the world rendereth unto Christ for his benefits.

Paul before called this present world evill and wicked, that is to say, the devils kingdome: For else it would acknowledge the benefit and mercy of God: for as much as it is under the power of the devill, therefore doth it most spitefully hate and persecute the same, loving darknesse, errors and the Kingdome of the devill, more then the light, the truth and the Kingdome of Christ. And this it doth not through ignorance or error, but through the malice of the devill. Which thing hereby may sufficiently appeare, in that Christ the Sonne of God by giving himselfe to death for the sins of all men, hath thereby gained nothing els of this perverse and damnable world, but that for this his inestimable benefit, it blasphemeth him and persecuteth his most helthfull word, & waine would yet still naile him to the Crosse, if they could. Therefore not onely the world dwelleth in darknesse, but it is darknesse it selfe, as it is written in the first of *Iohn*.

Moses calleth unto wrath, but Christ calleth to grace.

Paul therefore standeth much upon these words: *From Christ which hath called you*. As though he would say: My preaching was not of the hard lawes of *Moses*, neither taught I that ye should be bond-slaves under the yoke: but I preached the onely doctrine of grace and freedome from the law, sinne, wrath, and damnation: that is to say, that Christ hath mercifully called you in grace, that ye should be free-men under Christ, and not bond-men under *Moses*; whose disciples ye are now become againe by the meanes of your false Apostles, who by the law of *Moses* called you not unto grace, but unto wrath, to the hating of God, to sinne and death. But Christs calling bringeth grace and saving health. For they that be called by him, instead of the law that worketh sorrow, do gaine the glad tidings of the gospel, and are translated out of Gods wrath into his favour, out of sinne into righteousnesse, and out of death into life. And will you suffer your selves to be carried, yea &c. that so soone and so easily another way, from such a living fountain, full of grace and life? Now, if *Moses* call men to gods wrath and to sinne by the law of God:

God, whither shall the Pope call men by his owne traditions? The other sence, that the Father calleth in the grace of Christ, is also good: but the former sence concerning Christ, serveth more fitly for the comforting of afflicted consciences.

Verse 6. Unto another Gospell.

Here we may learne to espie the crafty sleights and subtilties of the devill. No heritike commeth under the title of errors and of the devill, neither doth the devill himselfe come as a devill in his owne likenesse, especially that white devill which we spake of before. Yea even the blacke devill, which forceth men to manifest wickednesse, maketh a cloke for them to cover that sinne which they commit or purpose to commit. The murtherer in his rage seeth not that murther is so great and horrible a sinne as it is indeed, for that he hath a cloke to cover the same. Whoremongers, theeves, covetous persons, drunkards and such other have, wherewith to flatter themselves and cover their sinnes. So the blacke devill also commeth out disguised and counterfeit in all his works and devices. But in spirituall matter, where Satan commeth forth not black, but white in the likenesse of an angell or of God himself, there he passeth himselfe with most crafty dissimulation and wonderfull sleights, and is wont to set forth to sale his most deadly poyson for the doctrine of grace, for the word of God, for the gospell of Christ. For this cause Paul calleth the doctrine of the false Apostles Satans ministers, a Gospell also, saying, *Unto another Gospell*: but in derision. As though he would say, ye Galathians have now other Evangelists and another Gospell: My Gospell is now dispised of you, it is now no more in estimation among you.

The white devill.

The blacke devill.

Satan changeth himselfe into an Angell of light.

Hereby it may easily be gathered, that these false Apostles had condemned the Gospell of Paul among the Galathians, saying Paul indeed hath begun well, but to have begun well it is not enough: for there remaine yet many higher matters. Like as they say in the 15. of the Acts: *It is not enough for you to beleve in Christ or to be baptized, but it behoveth also that yee be circumcised: For except yee be circumcised after the law of Moses, ye cannot be saved.* This is as much to say, as Christ is a good workeman, which hath indeed begun a building, but he hath not finished it, for this must Moses do.

Paul's doctrine condemned by the false Apostles.

The nature
of heretikes
lively pain-
ted out.

The devill
will not be
black in his
Ministers.

The devill
doth more
hurt on the
right hand
then on the
left.

By what
means pure
and sound
doctrine is
preserved.

So at this day, when the fantastical Anabaptists and others cannot manifestly condemn us, they say: These *Lutherans* have the spirit of fearefulness; they dare not frankly and freely profess the truth, and go thorow with it. Indeed they have laid a foundation, that is to say, they have well taught faith in Christ, but the beginning, the midit and the end must be joined together: To bring this to passe, God hath not given it unto them, but hath left it unto us. So these perverse and devillish spirits extoll and magnifie their cursed doctrine, calling it the word of God, and so, under the colour of Gods name, they deceive many. For the devill will not be ugly and blacke in his ministers, but faire and white. And to the end he may appeare to be such a one, he setteth forth and decketh al his words and works with the colour of truth, and with the name of God. Hereof is sprung that common Proverb among the *Germanes*: *In Gods name beginneth all mischiefe.*

Wherefore let us learne, that this is a speciall point of the devills cunning, that if he cannot hurt by persecuting and destroying, he doth it under a color of correcting and building up. So now a daies he persecuteth us with power and sword, that when we are once taken away and dispatched, he may not onely deface the Gospell, but utterly overthrow it. But hitherto he hath prevailed nothing, for he hath slaine many, who have constantly confessed this our doctrine to be holy and heavenly, thorow whose blood the Church is not destroyed, but watered. Forasmuch therefore as he could prevaile nothing that way, he stirreth up wicked spirits and ungodly teachers, which at the first allow our doctrine, and teach the same with a common consent together with us. But afterwards they say that it is our vocation to teach the first principles of Christian doctrine, and that the misteries of the Scripture are revealed unto them from above by God himselfe, and that they are called for this purpose, that they should open them to the world. After this manner doth the devill hinder the course of the Gospell, both on the right hand and on the left, but more on the right hand (as I said before) by building and correcting, then on the left by persecuting and destroying. Wherefore it behooveth us, to pray without ceasing, to reade the holy Scriptures, to cleave fast unto Christ and his holy word, that we may overcome the devills subtilties, with the which he assaileth us both on the right hand and on the left, *For we wrastle not against flesh and blood, but against rule,*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

will shew which part teacheth truly, and justly condemn the other. Sure it is that we persecute no man, oppress no man, put no man to death; neither doth our doctrine trouble mens consciences, but delivereth them out of innumerable errors and snares of the devill. For the truth hereof wee have the testimonie of many good men, who give thanks unto God; for that by our doctrine, they have received certaine and sure consolation to their consciences. Wherefore like as *Paul* at that time was not to be blamed that the Churches were troubled, but the false Apostles: so at this day it is not our fault, but the fault of the Anabaptists and such franticke spirits; that many and great troubles are in the Church.

Every one which teacheth that workes do justifie, is a troubler of mens consciences.

The Papists worse then the false Apostles among the Galathians.

Marke here diligently, that every teacher, of workes and of the righteousness of the law, is a troubler of the Church, and of the consciences of men. And who would ever have beleev'd that the Pope, Cardinals, Bishops, Monkes, and that whole Synagogue of Satan, specially the founders of those holy religious orders (of which number neverthelesse God might save some by miracle) were troulbers of mens consciences: Yea verily they be yet farre worse then were those false Apostles. For the false Apostles taught, that besides faith in Christ, the workes of the law of God were also necessarie to salvation. But the Papists omitting faith, have taught men traditions and works not commanded of God, but devised by themselves without and against the word of God: and these have they not onely made equall with the word of God, but also exalted them farre above it. But the more holy the heretikes seem to be in outward shew, so much the more mischief they do. For if the false Apostles had not bene indued with notable gifts, with great authority, and a shew of holinesse, and had not vaunted themselves to be Christs Ministers, the Apostles, Disciples, and sincere Preachers of the Gospel: they could not so easily have defaced *Pauls* authoritie, and led the *Galathians* out of the way.

Why Paul calleth the false Apostles troulbers of the Churches.

Act 15.1.

Now, the cause why hee setteth himselfe so sharply against them, calling them the troulbers of the Church, is, for that besides faith in Christ, they taught that Circumcision and the keeping of the law was necessary to salvation. The which thing *Paul* himselfe witnesseth in the 5. Chapter following. And *Luke* in the 15. of the *Actes* declareth the same thing in these words: *That certaine men coming downe from Judea, taught the brethren, saying, : Excepte*

ye bee circumcised after the custome of Moses, yee cannot be saved. Wherefore the false Apostles most earnestly and obstinately contended that the law ought to be observed. Unto whom the stiff-necked Jewes forthwith joyned themselves, and so afterwards easily perswaded such as were not stablished in the faith, that Paul was not a sincere teacher, because he regarded not the law, but preached such a doctrine as did abolish and overthrow the law. For it seemed unto them a very strange thing, that the law of God should be utterly taken away: and the Jewes which had alwayes untill that time beene counted the people of God, to whom also the promises were made, should now bee rejected. Yea it seemed yet a more strange thing unto them, that the Gentiles being wicked Idolaters, should attaine to this glory and dignitie; to bee the people of God without Circumcision, and without the works of the law, by grace onely and faith in Christ.

These things had the false Apostles amplified and set forth to the uttermost, that they might bring Paul into more hatred among the Galatians. And to the end they might set them the more sharply against him, they said that he preached unto the Gentiles freedom from the law, to bring into contempt, yea and utterly to abolish the law of God and the Kingdom of the Jews, contrary to the law of God, contrary to the custome of the Jewish nation, contrary to the example of the Apostles, and to be short, contrary to his own example: Wherefore he was to be shunned as an open blasphemour against God, and a rebell against the whole Common-weale of the Jewes, saying, that they themselves ought rather to be heard, who besides that they preached the Gospell rightly, were also the very Disciples of the Apostles, with whom Paul was never conversant. By this policy they defamed and defaced Paul among the Galatians, so that by this their perverse dealing, of very necessitie Paul was compelled with all his might to set himselfe against these false Apostles: whom hee boldly reproveth and condemneth, saying that they are troublers of the Churches and overthrowers of Christs Gospell, as followeth.

The false Apostles brag of their owne doings, and dispraise other mens.

Verse 7. And intend to pervert the Gospell of Christ.

That is to say, they doe not onely goe about to trouble you, but also utterly to abolish and overthrow Christs Gospell. For

The false Apostles trouble & overthrow the Gospell of Christ.

these

these two things the devill practiseth most busily. First, he is not contented to trouble and deceive many by his false Apostles, but moreover he laboureth by them utterly to overthrow the Gospell, and never resteth till he hath brought it to passe. Yet such perverters of the Gospell can abide nothing lesse, then to heare that they are the Apostles of the devill: nay rather they glory above others in the name of Christ, and boast themselves to be the most sincere preachers of the Gospell. But because they mingle the law with the Gospell, they must needs be perverters of the Gospell. For either Christ must remaine and the Law perish: or the law must remaine and Christ perish: For Christ and the law can by no means agree and reigne together in the conscience. Where the righteousness of the law ruleth, there cannot the righteousness of grace rule. And againe, where the righteousness of grace reigneth, there cannot the righteousness of the law reigne: for one of them must needs give place unto the other. And if thou canst not beleve that God will forgive thy sins for Christs sake, whom he sent into the world to be our high Priest: how then I pray thee, wilt thou beleve that he will forgive the same for the works of the law, which thou couldest never performe: or for thine own works, which (as thou must be constrained to confesse) be such, as it is impossible for them to countervaile the judgement of God?

Wherefore the doctrine of grace can by no meanes stand, with the doctrine of the law. The one must needs be refused and abolished, and the other confirmed and stablished. For as *Paul* saith here, to mingle the one with the other, is to overthrow the Gospell of Christ. And yet if it come to debating, the greater part overcommeth the better. For Christ, with his side is weake, and the Gospell but a foolish preaching. Contrary wise, the Kingdome of the world, and the devill the prince thereof, are strong. Besides that, the wisdom and righteousness of the flesh carry a goodly shew. And by this meanes the righteousness of grace and faith is lost, and the other righteousness of the law and works advanced and maintained. But this is our comfort, that the devill, with all his limmes, cannot do what he would. He may trouble many, but he cannot overthrow Christs Gospell. The truth may be assailed, but vanquished it cannot be: *For the word of the Lord endureth for ever.*

It seemeth to be a light matter, to mingle the law and the Gospell, faith and works together: but it doth more mischief then mans reason

The most wicked teachers, would be counted the most holy.

The righteousness of the law, and the righteousness of grace are contrary.

They that mingle the righteousness of the law & grace together, are subverters of the Gospell of Christ.

ne as an can conceive. For it doth not only blemish, and darken the knowledge of grace, but also it taketh away Christ with all his benefits, and it utterly overthroweth the Gospell, as *Paul* saith in this place. The cause of this great evill is our flesh: which being plunged in sins, seeth no way how to get out but by works, and therefore it would live in the righteousness of the law, and rest in the trust and confidence of her own works. Wherefore it is utterly ignorant of the doctrine of faith and grace, without the which notwithstanding it is impossible for the conscience to find rest and quietnes.

The discommodities that follow the mingling of faith and workes together.

It appeareth also by these words of *Paul*: *And intend to pervert the Gospell of Christ*: that the false Apostles were exceeding bold and shameless; which with all their might set themselves against *Paul*. Wherefore he again, using the spirit of zeale and fervency, and being fully perswaded of the certainty of his calling, setteth himself strongly against them, and wonderfully magnifieth his ministry, saying.

Verse 8. But though that we or an Angell from heaven preach unto you otherwise then that we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

Here *Paul* casteth out very flames of fire, and his zeale is so fervent that he beginneth also almost to curse the Angels. Although, saith he, that we our selves, even I and my brother *Timothy* and *Titus*, and as many as teach Christ purely with me (I speak not now of those seducers of consciences) *yea or if an Angell from heaven preach unto you, &c.* notwithstanding I would rather that I my self, my brethren, yea and the very Angels from heaven also, should be holden accursed, then that my Gospell should be overthrowen. This is indeed a vehement zeale, that he dare so boldly curse not only himself and his brethren, but also even an Angell from heaven.

The vehement zeale of *Paul* against the false Apostles.

The Greeke word *Anathema*, in Hebrew *Herem*, signifieth a thing accursed, execrable and detestable: which hath nothing to do, no participation or communion with God. So saith *Josuah*: *Cursed be the man before the Lord, that raiseth up and buildeth this City Jerico.* And in the last of *Leviticus* it is written: *Nothing separate from the common use, which shall be separate from man, shall be redeemed, but die the death, whether it be man or beast.* So God had appointed *Amalech*, and certaine other Cities accursed by Gods owne sentence, should

Josh. 6. 26.

120 0

Chap. I. *Vpon the EPISTLE*

should be utterly rased and destroyed. This is then the mind of *Paul*: I had rather that my selfe and other my brethren, yea and an Angell from heaven should be accursed, then that we or others should preach any other Gospell then that which we have preached already. So *Paul* first curseth himselfe: for cunning artificers are wont first to find fault with themselves, that they may the more freely and sharply afterwards reprove others.

The Gospell of *Paul*.

Paul therefore concludeth, that there is no other Gospell besides that, which he himselfe had preached. But he preached not a Gospell which he had himselfe devised, but the same which God promised before by his Prophets in the holy Scriptures, *Rv. i.* Therefore he pronounceth himselfe and others, yea even an Angell from heaven, to be undoubtedly accursed, if they teach any thing contrary to the former Gospell. For the voice of the Gospell once sent forth, shall not be called back again till the day of judgment.

Verse 9. As we said before, so say we now againe, If any man preach unto you otherwise then that you have received, let him be accursed.

He repeateth the self-same thing, only changing the persons. Before he cursed himselfe, his brethren, and an Angell from heaven. Here if there be any (saith he) besides us, which preach unto you any other Gospell then that ye have received of us, let them also be accursed. Therefore he plainly excommunicateth and curseth all teachers in generall, himselfe, his brethren, an Angell, and moreover all others whatsoever, namely all those false teachers his adversaries. Here appeareth an exceeding great fervency of spirit in the Apostle, that he dare curse all teachers throughout the whole world and in heaven, which pervert his Gospell and teach any other. For all men must either believe that Gospell which *Paul* preached, or else they must be accursed and condemned. Would to God this terrible sentence of the Apostle might strike a feare into their hearts that seek to pervert the Gospell of *Paul*: of which sort at this day (the more it is to be lamented) the world is full.

The vehemency of *Paul* against the false Apostles.

An horrible sentence against the Papists. The changing of persons is here to be marked.

The changing of persons is here to be marked. For *Paul* speaketh otherwise in his first cursing then he doth in the second. In the first he saith: *If we or an Angell from heaven, preach unto you any other Gospell then that we have preached unto you*: In the second: *then that*

that ye have received. And this he doth of purpose, lest the Galatians should say: We, O Paul do not pervert the Gospell that thou hast preached unto us: we understood thee not rightly, but the teachers that came after thee, have declared unto us the true meaning thereof. This (saith he) will I in no case admit. They ought to adde nothing, neither to correct it: but that which you heard of me, is the sincere word of God: let this only remain. Neither do I desire myselfe to be any other manner of teacher then I was, nor you other Disciples. Wherefore if ye heare any man bringing any other Gospell then that ye have heard of me, or bragging that he will deliver better things then ye have received of me, let him and his Disciples be both accursed.

The first two Chapters in a manner containe nothing else but defences of his doctrine, and confutations of errours: so that untill he cometh to the end of the second Chapter, he toucheth not the chiefest matter which he handleth in this Epistle, namely the article of justification. Notwithstanding, this sentence of Paul ought to admonish us, that so many as thinke the Pope to be Judge of the Scripture are accursed. Which thing the Popish Schoole-men have wickedly taught, standing upon this ground: The Church hath allowed foure Gospels only: therefore there are but foure: for if it had allowed more, there had been more. Now seeing the Church might receive and allow such and so many Gospels as it would, therefore the Church is above the Gospell. A goodly argument forsooth. I approve the Scripture, Ergo, I am above the Scripture. John Baptist acknowledgeth and confesseth Christ, and pointeth to him with his finger, therefore he is above Christ. The Church approveth the Christian faith and doctrine, therefore the Church is above them. For the overthrowing of this their wicked and blasphemous doctrine, thou hast here a plaine Text like a thunderbolt, wherein Paul subjecteth both himselfe and an Angell from heaven, and Doctors upon earth, and all other teachers and Masters whatsoever under the authority of the Scripture. For they ought not to be Masters, Judges, or Arbiters, but only witnesses, disciples and confessours of the Church, whether it be the Pope, Luther, Augustine, Paul, or an Angell from heaven. Neither ought any doctrine to be taught or heard in the Church, besides the pure word of God, that is to say, the holy Scripture. Otherwise accursed be both

The content of the two first chapters

The argument of the Papists to prove, that the Church is above the Scripture.

The word God must only be taught in the Church.

you any
them also be ac-
nd curseth all tea-
ell, and moreover
rs his adversaries.
rit in the Apostle,
ole world and in
other. For all men
ched, or else they
d this terrible sen-
ir hearts that seek
is day (the more

For Paul speak-
he second. In the

both the teachers and hearers together with their doctrine.

Verse 10. For now preach I mans doctrine, or Gods.

These words are spoken with the same vehemency of spirit, that the former were. As if he should say: Am I Paul so unknowne amongst you, which have preached so openly in your Churches? Am I inhibited, and so many sharpe battels against the Jews, yet unknowne unto you? It appeareth (I thinke) sufficiently unto you by my preaching, and by so many and so great afflictions which I have suffered, whether I serue men or God. For all men see that by this my preaching I have not only stirred up persecution against me in every place, but have also procured the cruell hatred both of mine own nation and of all other men. I shew therefore plainly enough, that I seek not by my preaching the favour or praise of men, but to set forth the benefit and glory of God.

What reward Paul received for his labour.

What the Ministers of God ought to seek.

Ephes. 2. 3.

The sum of the doctrine of the Gospel Ps. 19. 1.

Neither do we seeke the favour of men by our doctrine. For we teach that all men are wicked by nature, and the children of wrath. We condemne mans free-will, his strength, wisdom, and righteousness, and all religions of mans own devising. And to be short, we say that there is nothing in us that is able to deserve grace and the forgiveness of sins: but we preach, that we obtaine this grace by the free mercy of God only for Christs sake. For so the heavens shew forth the glory of God and his workes, condemning all men generally with their workes. This is not to preach for the favour of man and of the world. For the world can abide nothing lesse then to heare his wisdom, righteousness, religion and power condemned. And to speak against those mighty and glorious gifts of the world, is not to flatter the world, but rather to procure hatred and indignation of the world. For if we speak against men, or any thing else that pertaineth to their glory, it cannot be, but that cruell hatred, persecutions, excommunications, murders and condemnations, must needs follow.

To teach the things that are of God.

It then (saith Paul) they see other matters, why see they not this also, that I teach the things that are of God and not of men? that is to say: that I seek no mans favour by my doctrine, but I set out Gods mercy offered unto us in Christ. For if I sought the favour of men, I would not condemne their workes. Now for as much as I condemne mens workes, that is to say, because I shew Gods

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Chap. I.

Upon the EPISTLE

The false Apostles seeke to please men.

That is, do I serve men or God; He hath always a glance at the false Apostles. These (saith he) must needs seeke to please and to flatter men: for by this meanes they seeke, that they againe may glory in their flesh. Moreover, because they will not beare the hatred and persecution of men, they teach circumcision, onely to avoid the persecution of the Crosse, as followeth in the 5. Chapter.

Teachers of mens traditions seeke to please men.

So at this day, ye may find many which seeke to please men, and to the end they may live in peace and security of the flesh, they teach the things which are of men, that is to say, wicked things, or else they allow the blasphemies and wicked judgements of the adversaries, contrary to the word of God against their own conscience, that

The reward of Godly teachers.

they may keepe still the favour of Princes and Bishops, and enjoy their goods. But we, because we endeavour to please God and not men, do stirre up against us the malice of the devill and hell it selfe: we suffer the reproaches and slanders of the world, death and all the mischieves that can be devised against us.

q. 27. 110.

So saith Paul here, I seeke not to please men, that they may praise my doctrine, and report me to be an excellent teacher, but I desire onely that my doctrine may please God: and by this meanes I make men my mortall enemies. Which thing I find by experience to be most true: for they requite me with infamy, slander, imprisonment and sword. Contrarywise the false Apostles teach the things that are of men, that is to say, such things as be pleasant and plausible to mans reason, & that to the end they may live in ease & purchase the favour, goodwill and praise of the people. And such men find that they seeke

The reward of false and ungodly teachers.

for: for they are praised and magnified of men. So saith Christ also Mat. 6. That hypocrites do all things to be praised of men. And in the 5 of Iohn he sharply reproveth such: How can ye beleve (saith he) which receive honour one of another, and seeke not the honour that cometh of God alone? The things which Paul hath hitherto taught, are in a manner examples onely. In the meane time notwithstanding he is very earnest every where in proving his doctrine to be sincere and sound. Therefore he exhorteth the Galatians that they forsake it not for any other doctrine.

Verse 10. For if I should yet please men, I were not the servant of God.

These things are to be referred to the whole office and ministerie of Paul, to shew what a contrariety there was betweene his conver-

conversacion before in the Iewish law, and his conversacion now under the Gospell As If he would say: Doe ye thinke that I goe about still to please men, as I did in times past? So he speaketh after wards in the 5. Chapter. *If I yet preach circumcision, why do I suffer persecution?* As though he would say: Doe ye not see and heare of my daily conflicts, great persecutions and afflictions? After I was converted and called to the office of Apostleship, I never taught mans doctrine, neither sought I to please men, but God alone. That is to say: I seek not by my ministry and doctrine the praise and favour of men, but of God.

Here againe is to be marked, how maliciously and craftily the false Apostles went about to bring *Paul* into hatred among the *Galatians*. They picked out of his preachings and writings certaine contradictions (as our adversaries at this day do out of our bookes) and by this means they would have convinced him that he had taught contrary things. Wherefore they said that there was no credit to be given unto him: but that circumcision and the law ought to be kept: which thing he himselfe also by his example had allowed, because he had circumcised *Timothie* according to the law, had purified himselfe with other four men in the Temple at *Ierusalem*, and had shaven his head at *Cenchrea*. These things they craftily surmised, that *Paul* by the commandement and authority of the Apostles was constrained to do: Which notwithstanding he had kept as indifferent, bearing with the infirmity of the weake brethren (which yet understood not the Christian liberty,) lest they should be offended. To whose cavillations thus he answereth: How true it is which the false Apostles forge against me for the overthrowing of my Gospell, and setting up of the law and circumcision againe, the matter it selfe sufficiently declareth. For if I would preach the law and circumcision, and commend the strength, the power, and the will of man, I should not be so odious unto them, but should please them.

Lies and
slanders de-
vised by the
false Apo-
stles against
Paul.

Act. 16. 3.

Act. 21. 26.

Act. 18. 18.

Verse 11, 12. *Now I certifie you brethren, that the Gospell which was preached of me, was not after man. For neither received I it of man, neither was I taught it but by the revelation of Iesus Christ.*

Here is the principall point of all this matter: which containeth a confutation of his adversaries, and a defence of his doctrine, to
the

The chiefe
purpose of
Paul in this
disputation.

the end of the second Chapter. Vpon this he standeth, this he urgeth and with an oath confirmeth, that he learned not his Gospell of any man, but received it by the revelation of Iesus Christ. And in that he sweareth, he is constrained to do, that the *Galatians* may beleve him, and also, that they should give no care to the false Apostles: whom he reproveth as lyers, because they had said that he learned and received his Gospell of the Apostles.

Pauls do-
ctrine was
not after
man.

Where he saith that his Gospell is not after man, he meaneth not, that his Gospell is not earthly (for that is manifest of it selfe: and the false Apostles bragged also that their doctrine was not earthly but heavenly:) but he meaneth that he learned not his Gospell by the ministerie of men, or receved it by any earthly meanes (as we al learne it, either by the ministerie of men, or else receive it by some earthly meanes; some by hearing, some by reading, and some by writing:) but he received the same onely by the revelation of Iesus Christ. If any man list to make any other distinction, I am not against it. Here the Apostle sheweth by the way, that Christ is not onely man, but that he is both God and very man, when he saith that he received not his Gospell by man.

Christ both
God & man.

Where Paul
received
the Gospell.

Now *Paul* received his Gospell in the way as he was going to *Damascus*, where Christ appeared unto him and talked with him. Afterwards also he talked with him in the Temple at *Ierusalem*, but he received his Gospell in the way, as *Luke* reciteth the storie in the 9. of the *Actes*. *Arise* (saith Christ) *and go into the Citie, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.* He doth not bid him go into the Citie, that he might learne the Gospell of *Ananias*: but *Ananias* was bid to goe and baptize him, to lay his hands upon him, to commit the ministerie of the word unto him, and to commend him unto the Church, and not to teach him the Gospell, which he had received afore (as he glorieth in the same place) by the onely revelation of Iesus Christ. And this *Ananias* himselfe confesseth, saying: *Brother Saul, the Lord which appeared to thee in the way, hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight.* Therefore he received not his doctrine of *Ananias*, but being already called, lightned and taught of Christ in the way, he was sent to *Ananias* that he might also have the testimony of men, that he was called of God to preach the Gospell of Christ.

This *Paul* was constrained to recite, to put away the slander of the false Apostles, who laboured to bring him into hatred among

among the *Galatians*, saying that *Paul* was inferiour to the rest of the Apostles schollers: who had received of the Apostles, that which they taught and kept: whose conversation also they had seen a long time, and that *Paul* himselfe had also received the same things of them, although he did now deny it. Why then would they rather obey an inferiour, and despise the authority of the Apostles themselves, who were not only the fore-elders and teachers of the *Galatians*, but also of all the Churches throughout the whole world?

This Argument, which the false Apostles grounded upon the authority of the Apostles, was strong and mighty, whereby the *Galatians* were suddainly overthrowne, especially in this matter. I would never have believed, had I not bin taught by these examples of the Churches of *Galatia*, of the *Corinthians* and others, that they which had received the word of God in the beginning with such joy (among whom were many notable men) could so quickly be overthrowne. O good Lord, what horrible and infinit mischief may one only argument easily bring? which so pierceth a mans conscience when God withdraw-eth his grace, that in one moment he loseth all together. By this subtilty then the false Apostles did easily deceive the *Galatians*, being not fully established and grounded, but as yet weak in the faith.

The Argument of the false Apostles taken from the authority of the Apostles.

Moreover, the matter of justification is brickle: not of it self (for of it selfe it is most sure and certain) but in respect of us. Whereof I my self have good experience. For I know in what hours of darkness I sometimes wrestle. I know how often I suddainly lose the beames of the Gospell and grace, as being shadowed from me with thick and dark clouds. Briefly I know in what a slippery place even such also do stand, as are well exercised, and seem to have sure footing in matters of faith. We have good experience of this matter: for we are able to teach it unto others, and this is a sure token that we understand it. But when in the very conflict we should use the Gospell, which is the word of grace, consolation and life, there doth the law, the word of wrath, heavines and death prevent the Gospell and beginneth to rage, and the terrours which it raiseth up in the conscience, are no lesse then was that horrible shew in the mount *Sinai*. So that even one place of the Scripture containing some threatning of the law, overwhelmeth and drowneth all consolations besides, and so shaketh all our inward powers, that it maketh us to forget justification, grace, Christ, the Gospell and all together.

So great is the weakness even of the godly that they are hardly drawn to Gods promises, though they be most certain.

The office of the law.

Exod. 19. 18.

The confid-
of the godly,

Gal. 5. 17

Rom. 7. 23.

Faith is the
gift of God.

* What in-
convenien-
ces follow
the loathing
of Gods
word.

* Speculatio-
is a naked
knowledge
without pra-
ctise.

Jam 1. 22, 24
The doctri-
of true god-
lines is kept
by prayer &
earnest study
of the word.
The enemies
of the godly.

The reason
which at this
day is used
against us &
prevaileth
with many.

Therefore in respect of us, it is a very bricke matter, because we are
bricke. Again, we have against us even the one halfe of our selves:
that is to say, reason, and all the powers thereof. Besides all this the
flesh resisteth the spirit, which cannot beleve assuredly that the pro-
mises of God are true. It fighteth therefore against the spirit, and (as
Paul saith) *it holdeth the spirit captive*: so that it cannot beleve so
stedfastly as it would. Wherefore we teach continually that the know-
ledge of Christ and of faith is no worke of man, but simply the gift of
God, who as he createth faith, so doth he keep it in us. And even as
he first giveth faith unto us through the word so afterwards he exer-
ciseth, increaseth, strengthneth and maketh perfect the same in us by
the word. Therefore the greatest service that a man can do unto God,
and the very Sabbath of Sabbaths, is to exercise himself in true godli-
nes, diligently to reade and heare the word. * Contrariwise there is
nothing more dangerous then to be weary of the word. He therefore
that is so cold, that he thinketh himself to know enough, and begin-
neth by little and little to loath the word, that man hath lost Christ
and the Gospell, and that which he thinketh himselfe to know, he at-
taineth only by bare speculation: And he is like unto a man (as *S. James*
saith) *Who beholding his face in a glasse, goeth his way, and by and by for-
getteth what his countenance was.*

Wherefore let every faithfull man labour and strive with all dili-
gence to learne and to keep this doctrine: And to that end let him use
humble and hearty prayer, with continuall study and meditation of
the word. And when we have done never so much, yet shall we have
enough to keep us occupied. For we have to do with no small ene-
mies, but strong and mighty, and such as are in continuall warre a-
gainst us, namely our own flesh, all the dangers of the world, the law,
sin, death, the wrath and judgment of God, and the Devill himselfe,
who never ceaseth to tempt us inwardly by his fiery darts, and out-
wardly by his false Apostles, to the end that he may overthrow, if not
all, yet the most part of us.

This Argument therefore of the false Apostles had a goodly shew
and seemed to be very strong Which also at this day prevaileth with
many, namely that the Apostles, the holy fathers and their successors
have so taught: that the Church so thinketh and beleeveth: More-
over that it is impossible that Christ should suffer his Church so
long time to erre. Art thou alone (say they) wiser then so many holy
men?

men? wiser then the whole Church? After this manner the Devill being changed into an Angell of light, setteth upon us craftily at this day by certaine pestiferous hypocrites, who say: we passe not for the Popé, we abhorre the hypocricie of Monkes and such like: but we would have the authority of the holy Church to remaine untouched. The Church hath thus believed and taught this long time. So have all the Doctōrs of the Primitive Church, holy men, more ancient and better learned then thou. Who art thou, that darest dissent from all these, and bring unto us a contrary doctrine? When Satan reasoneth thus, conspiring with the flesh and reason, then is thy conscience terrified and utterly despaireth, unles thou constantly return to thy self again, and say: Whether it be *Cyprian, Ambrose, Augustine*, either *S. Peter, Paul* or *John*, yea or an Angell from heaven that teacheth otherwise, yet this I know assuredly, that I teach not the things of men; but of God: that is to say, I attribute all things to God alone, and nothing to man.

The Devils argument.

When I first took upon me the defence of the Gospell, I remember that Doctōr *Staupitius* a worthy man, said thus unto me: This liketh me well that this doctrine which thou preachest, yeeldeth glory and all things else unto God alone, and nothing unto man: for unto God there cannot be attributed too much glory, goodnes, mercy, &c. This saying did then greatly comfort and confirme me. And true it is, that the doctrine of the Gospell taketh from men all glory, wisdom, righteousness, &c. and giveth the same to the Creatour alone, who made all things of nothing. We may also more safely attribute too much unto God then unto man. For in this case I may say boldly: Be it so that the Church, *Augustine* and other Doctōrs, also *Peter* and *Apollo*; yea even an Angell from heaven, teach a contrary doctrine, yet my doctrine is such, that it setteth forth and preacheth the grace and glory of God alone, and in the matter of salvation it condemneth the righteousness and wisdom of all men. In this I cannot offend, because I give both to God and man, that which properly and truly belongeth to them both.

Doctōr *Staupitius* a favourer of *Luthers* doctrine, when he began to preach.

The doctrine of the Gospell attributeth all things unto God, and nothing to man

But thou wilt say: *The Church is holy, The Fathers are holy.* It is true: notwithstanding, albeit the Church be holy, yet is it compelled to pray: *Forgive us our trespasses.* So, though the Fathers be holy, yet are they saved through the forgiveness of sins. Therefore neither am I to be beleaved, nor the Church, nor the Fathers, nor the

Mat 6.124

Neither Angels nor Apostles, nor any other are to be believed, if they teach any thing against the word of God.

The error of Peter.

Gal. 2.11.

The Papists Argument against us.

Apostles, no nor an Angell from heaven, if we teach any thing against the word of God, *but let the Word of God abide for ever*: for else this Argument of the false Apostles had mightily prevailed against *Pauls* doctrine. For indeed it was a great matter, a great matter I say, to set before the *Galathians* the whole Church, with all the company of the Apostles against *Paul* alone, but lately sprung up and of small authority. This was therefore a strong argument and concluded mightily. For no man saith willingly that the Church erreth, & yet it is necessary to say that it erreth, if it teach any thing besides or against Gods word.

Peter the chiefe of the Apostles taught both in life and doctrine besides Gods word, therefore he erred and was deceived. Neither did *Paul* dissemble that error (although it seemed to be but a light fault) because he saw it would turne to the hurt of the whole Church, but *withstood him even to his face, because he walked not after the truth of the Gospell*. Therefore neither is the Church, nor *Peter*, nor the Apostles, nor Angels from heaven to be heard, unles they bring and teach the pure word of God.

This Argument even at this day is not a little prejudiciall to our cause. For if we may neither believe the Pope, nor the Fathers, nor *Luther*, nor any other, except they teach us the pure word of God, whom shall we then believe? who in the meane while shall certifie our consciences which part teacheth the pure word of God, we or our adversaries? For they brag, that they also have the pure word of God and teach it. Again, we beleeve not the Papists, because they teach not the word of God, neither can they teach it. Contrariwise, they hate us most bitterly, and persecute us as most pestilent heretiks and seducers of the people. What is to be done in this case? Shall it be lawfull for every phantasticall spirit, to teach what himselfe listeth, seeing the world can neither heare nor abide our doctrine? For although we glory with *Paul*, that we teach the pure Gospell of Christ, yet we profit nothing, but are compelled to heare, that this our glorying is not only vain, rash and arrogant, but also devillish and full of blasphemy. But if we abase our selvs and give place to the rage of our adversaries, then both the Papists and Anabaptists wax proud. The Anabaptists will vaunt that they bring and teach some strange thing which the world never heard of before. The Papists will set up again and stablish their old abominations. Let every man therefore take heed, that he be most sure of his calling and doctrine, that he may

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY
BIBLE**

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

them shew me if they can, "a more zealous and earnest defender of *Moses* law, then I have bin. This thing (o ye *Galathians*) ought to have perswaded you, not to believe these deceivers, which magnifie the righteousnes of the law, as a matter of great importance, whereas, if there were any cause to glory in the righteousnes of the law, & I have more cause to glory then any other.

In like manner say I of my selfe, that before I was lightened with the knowledge of the Gospell; I was as zealous for the Papisticall lawes and traditions of the Fathers, as ever any was, most earnestly maintaining and defending them as holy and necessary to salvation. Moreover, I endeavoured to observe and keep them my selfe as much as was possible for me to do, punishing my poore body with fasting, watching, praying, and other exercises, more then all they which at this day do so bitterly hate and persecute me, because now I take from them the glory of justifying by works and merits. For I was so diligent and superstitious in the observation hereof, that I laid more upon my body then without danger of health it was able to beare. I honoured the Pope of meere conscience and unfainedly, not seeking after prebends, promotions and livings: but whatsoever I did, I did it with a single heart, of a good zeale, and for the glory of God. But those things which then were gainfull unto me, now with *Paul* I count to be but losse, for the excellency of the knowledge of *Jesus Christ* my Lord. But our adversaries, as idle bellies and tried with no tentations, believe not that I and many others have endured such things: I speak of such as with great desire sought for peace and quietnes of conscience, which notwithstanding in so great darknes it was not possible for them to find.

Phil. 3. 8.

Verse 15, 16, 17. But when it had pleased God (which had separated me from my mothers wombe, and called me by his grace) to reveale his Son in me, that I should preach him among the Gentiles, immediately I communicated not with flesh and blood. Neither came I again to Jerusalem, to them which were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and turned again unto Damascus.

The first
journey of
Paul

This is the first journey of *Paul*. And here he witnesseth, that straight way, after he was called by the grace of God to preach *Christ* among the *Gentiles*; he went into *Arabia* without the advice of

of any man, to that worke whereunto he was called. And this place witnesseth by whom he was taught, and by what meanes he came to the knowledge of the Gospell and to his Apostleship. *When it had pleased God* (saith he.) As if he would say: I have not deserved it, because I was zealous of the law of God without judgement, nay rather this foolish and wicked zeale stirred me up, that God so permitting, I fell headlong into more abominable and outragious sins. I persecuted the Church of God, I was an enemy to Christ, I blasphemed his Gospell, and to conclude, I was the authour of shedding much innocent blood. This was my desert. In the midst of this cruell rage I was called to such inestimable grace. What? was it because of this outragious cruelty? No forsooth. But the abundant grace of God, who calleth and sheweth mercy to whom he will, pardoned and forgave me all those blasphemies: and for these my horrible sins (which then I thought to be perfect righteousness and an acceptable service unto God) he gave unto me his grace, the knowledge of his truth, and called me to be an Apostle.

Pauls merit of desert.

We also are come at this day to the knowledge of grace by the selfsame merits. I crucified Christ daily in my monkish life, and blasphemed God through my false faith wherein I then continually lived. Outwardly I was not as other men, extortioners, unjust, whoremongers: but I kept chastity, poverty and obedience. Moreover, I was free from the cares of this present life. I was only given to fasting, watching, praying, saying of Masses and such like. Notwithstanding in the mean time I fastred under this cloked holines & trust in mine owne righteousness, continuall mistrust, doubtfulness, feare, hatred and blasphemy against God. And this my righteousness was nothing else, but a filthy puddle, and the very kingdom of the Devill. For Satan loveth such Saints, and accounteth them for his deare darlings, who destroy their own bodies and soules, and deprive themselves of all the blessings of Gods gifts. In the mean time notwithstanding, wickednes, blindness, contempt of God, ignorance of the Gospell, prophanation of the Sacraments, blaspheming and treading of Christ under foot, and the abuse of all the benefits and gifts of God do reigne in them at the full. To conclude, such Saints are the bondslaves of Satan, and therefore are driven to speak, thinke and do whatsoever he will, although outwardly they seem to excell all others in good works, in holinesse and strictnes of life.

By what deserts we obtain grace.

What manner of Saints the devill loveth.

Such

Chap. I.

Upon the EPISTLE

Such we were under the Popedom: verily no lesse (if not more) contumelious and blasphemous against Christ and his Gospell then *Paul* himselfe, and specially I: for I did so highly esteeme the Popes authority, that to dissent from him even in the least point, I thought it a sin worthy of everlasting death. And that wicked opinion caused me to thinke that *John Hus* was a cursed hereticke, yea and I accounted it an hainous offence, but once to thinke of him: and I would my selfe in defence of the Popes authority have ministred fire and sword, for the burning and destroying of that hereticke, and thought it an high service unto God so to do. Wherefore if you compare Publicans and Harlots with these holy Hypocrites, they are not evill. For they when they offend have remorse of conscience, and do not justify their wicked doings: but these men are so farre from acknowledging their abominations, idolatries, wicked will-worshippings and ceremonies to be sins, that they affirm the same to be righteousness, and a most acceptable sacrifice unto God, yea they adore them as matters of singular holinesse, and through them do promise salvation unto others, and also sell them for mony, as things available to salvation.

John Hus.

Publicans & sinners are farre better then merit-mongers.

Our desert.

The Papists a bloody generation.

This is then our goodly righteousness, this is our high merit which bringeth unto us the knowledge of grace: to wit, that we have so deadly and so devillishly persecuted, blasphemed, troden under foot, and contemned God, Christ, the Gospell, Faith, the Sacraments, all godly men, the true worship of God, and have taught and stablished quite contrary things. And the more holy we were, the more were we blinded, and the more did we worship the Devill. There was not one of us, but he was a blood-sucker, if not in deed, yet in heart.

Verse 15. When it pleased God.

By what deserts we attain grace.

As though he would say: It is the alone and inestimable favour of God, that not only he hath spared me so wicked and so cursed a wretch, such a blasphemer, a persecutor and a rebell against God, but besides that, hath also given unto me the knowledge of salvation, his Spirit, Christ his Sonne, the office of an Apostle and everlasting life. So God beholding us guilty in the like finnes, hath not onely pardoned our impieties and blasphemies, of his meere mercy for Christs sake, but hath also overwhelmed us with great benefits and spirituall gifts. But many of us are not onely unthankfull unto

unto God for this his inestimable grace, and as it is wirtten 2 Pet. 1. do forget the clensing of their ould sinnes, but also opening againe a window to the devill, they begin to loath his word, and many also do pervert and corrupt it, and so become authors of new errours. The ends of these men are worse then the beginnings.

Mat. 12. 43.

Verse 15. *which had seperated me from my mothers wombe.*

This is an Hebrew phrase. As if he said: which had sanctified, ordained and prepared me. That is, God had appointed, when I was yet in my mothers wombe, that I should so rage against his Church, and that afterward he would mercifully call me backe againe from the middest of my cruelty and blasphemie, by his meere grace, into the way of truth and salvation. To be short, when I was not yet borne, I was an Apostle in the sight of God, and when the time was come, I was declared an Apostle before the whole world.

Thus Paul cutteth off all deserts, and giveth glory to God alone, but to himselfe all shame and confusion. As though he would say: all the gifts both small and great, as well spirituall as corporall, which God purposed to give unto me, and all the good things which at any time in all my life I should do, God himselfe had before appointed when I was yet in my mothers wombe, where I could neither wish, think nor do any good thing. Therefore this gift also came unto me by the meere predestination and free mercy of God before I was yet borne. Moreover, after I was borne, he supported me, being loaden with innumerable and most horrible iniquities. And that he might the more manifestly declare the unspeakable and inestimable greatness of his mercie towards me, hee of his meere grace forgave my abominable and infinite sinnes, and moreover replenished me with such plentie of his grace, that I did not onely know what things are given unto Christ, but preached the same also unto others. Such are the deserts and merits of all men, and especially of those old doctors, who exercise themselves wholly in the stinking puddles of mans owne righteousness.

The deserts
of S. Paul.

Verse 15. *And called me by his grace.*

Marke the diligence of the Apostle. He called me (saith he) How? Was it for my Pharisaicall religion: or for my blamelesse and holy life? for my prayers, fasting and workes? No. Much lesse then.

then for my blasphemies, persecutions, oppressions? How then? by his meere grace alone?

Verse 16. To reveale his Sonne in me.

Pauls doctrine.

You heare in this place, what maner of doctrine is given and committed to *Paul*: to wit the doctrine of the Gospell, which is the revelation of the sonne of God. This is a doctrine quite contrary to the law, which revealeth not the Son of God, but it sheweth forth sinne, it terrifieth the conscience, it revealeth death, the wrath and judgement of God, and hell. The Gospell therefore is such a doctrine, as admitteth no law: Yea it must be separate as farre from the law, as there is distance betweene heaven and earth. This difference in it selfe is easie and plaine, but unto us it is hard and full of difficulty. For it is an easie matter to say, that the Gospell is nothing else but the revealing of the Son of God, or the knowledge of Iesus Christ, and not the revealing of the law. But in the agony & conflict of conscience to hold this fast and to practise it indeed, it is a hard matter, yea to them also that be most exercised therein.

The definition of the Gospell.

1 Cor. 1. 30. The Papists have turned the Gospell into the law of charitie, and Christ into Moses

The Gospell is not learned by any study of man, but is taught from above by God himselfe.

Now, if the Gospell be the revealing of the Son of God (as *Paul* defineth it in this place,) then surely it accuseth not, it feareth not the conscience, it threatneth not death, it bringeth not to despaire, as the law doth: but it is a doctrine concerning Christ, which is neither law nor worke, but our righteousness, wisdom, sanctification and redemption. Although this thing be more cleare then the Sunne light, yet notwithstanding the madnesse and blindnesse of the Papists hath beene so great, that of the Gospell they have made a law of charity, and of Christ a law-maker, giving more straight & heavy commandements then *Moses* himselfe. But the Gospell teacheth, that Christ came not to set forth a new law, and to give commandements as touching manners: but that he came to this end, that he might be made an oblation for the sinnes of the whole world, and that our sins might be forgiven, and everlasting life given unto us for his sake, and not for the works of the law, or for our owne righteousness. Of this inestimable treasure freely bestowed upon us, the Gospell properly preacheth unto us. Wherefore it is a kind of doctrine that is not learned or gotten by any study, diligence or wisdom of man, nor yet by the law of God, but is revealed by God himselfe (as *Paul* saith in this place,) first by the eternall word: then by the working of

of Gods spirit inwardly. The Gospell therefore is a divine word that came downe from heaven & is revealed by the holy Ghost (who was also sent for the same purpose:) yet in such sort notwithstanding that the outward word must go before. For *Paul* himselfe had no inward revelation, untill he had heard the outward word from heaven, which was this, *Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?* First therefore he heard the outward word, then afterwards followed revelations, the knowledge of the word, faith, and the gifts of the holy Ghost.

Verse 19. *That I should preach him among the Gentiles.*

It pleased God (saith he) to reveale his Sonne in me. To what purpose? Not onely that I my selfe should believe in the Son of God, but also that I should preach him among the Gentiles. And why not among the Jewes? Lo, here we see that *Paul* is properly the *Apostle of the Gentiles*, albeit he preached Christ among the Jewes also.

Paul the Apostle of the Gentiles.

Paul comprehendeth here in few words (as he is wont) his whole divinity, which is to preach Christ among the Gentiles. As if he would say: I will not burden the Gentiles with the law, because I am the Apostle and Evangelist of the Gentiles, and not their law-giver. Thus he directeth all his words against the false Apostles. As though he would say: O ye *Galathians*, ye have not heard the righteousness of the law or of works to be taught by me; for this belongeth to *Moses* and not to me *Paul*, being the Apostle of the Gentiles. For my office and ministry is to bring the Gospell unto you, and to shew unto you the same revelation which I my selfe have had. Therefore ought you to heare no teacher that teacheth the law. For among the Gentiles the law ought not to be preached but the Gospell: not *Moses*, but the Sonne of God: not the righteousness of works, but the righteousness of faith. This is the preaching that properly belongeth to the Gentiles.

Pauls divinity.

The office of Paul,

Verse 16. *Immediately I communicated not with flesh and blood.*

Paul here making mention of flesh and blood, speaketh not of the Apostles. For by and by he addeth: *Neither came I againe to Jerusalem, to them which were Apostles before me.* But this is *Pauls* meaning, that after he had once received the revelation of the Gospell from Christ, he consulted not with any man in *Damascus*.

Damascus, much lesse did he desire any man to teach him the Gospel: Againe, that he went not to *Ierusalem*, to *Peter* & the other Apostles to learne the Gospell of them, but that forthwith he preached Iesus Christ in *Damascus*, where he received baptisme of *Ananias*, & imposition of hands: for it was necessary for him to have the outward signe and testimony of his calling. The same also writeth *Luke*, Act. 9

Verse 17. *Neither came I to Ierusalem, to them that were Apostles before me, but went into Arabia, and turned againe unto Damascus.*

That is, I went into *Arabia* before I saw the Apostles or consulted with them, and forthwith I tooke upon me the Office of preaching among the the Gentiles: for thereunto I was called, and had also received a revelation from God. He did not then receive his Gospel of any man, or of the Apostles themselves, but was content with his heavenly calling, and with the revelation of Iesus Christ alone. Wherefore this whole place is a confutation of the false Apostles Argument, which they used against *Paul*, saying, that he was but a scholler and a hearer of the Apostles, who lived after the law: and moreover that *Paul* himselfe also had lived according to the Law, and therefore it was necessary that the Gentiles themselves should keepe the law and be circumcised. To the end therefore that he might stop the mouthes of these cavilleers, he rehearseth this long history: Before my conversion (saith he) I learned not my Gospel of the Apostles, nor of any other of the brethren that beleevd (for I persecuted extremely, not onely this doctrine, but also the Church of God, and wasted it;) neither after my conversion: for forthwith I preached not *Moses* with his Law, but Iesus Christ at *Damascus*, consulting with no man, neither as yet having seene any of the Apostles.

Verse 18. *Then after three yeares I came againe to Ierusalem, to visite Peter, and abode with him 15. dayes. And none other of the Apostles saw I, save James the Lords brother.*

Paul granteth that he was with the Apostles, but not with all the Apostles. Howbeit hee declareth that he went up to *Ierusalem* to them, not commanded, but of his owne accord, not to learne any thing of them, but to see *Peter*. The same thing *Luke* also writeth

The confutation of the Argument of the false Apostles.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



vaunt of his vocation, and of the knowledg of the Gospel revealed unto him by Christ, that their consciences might be thoroughly perswaded that his doctrine was the true word of God. Here had *Paul* a weighty matter in hand: namely, that all the Churches in *Galatia* might be kept in sound doctrine: yea, the controversie was indeed, as touching life and death everlasting. For if the pure word of God be once taken away, there remaineth no consolation, no life, no salvation. The cause therefore why he reciteth these things, is to retain the Churches in true and sound doctrine. His purpose is therefore to shew by this History, that he received the Gospel of no man. Again, that he preached for a certain time, namely the space of 3 or 4 years, both in *Damascus* and *Arabia*, by revelation from God, before he had seen any of the Apostles, even the self same Gospel that the Apostles had preached.

Verse 20. And now the things which I write unto you, behold I witness before God I lie not.

Paul sweareth,

Wherefore addeth he an oath? Because he reporteth an history he is constrained to swear, to the end that the Churches might believe him; and also that the false Apostles should not say: who knoweth whether *Paul* speaketh the truth or no? Here you see that *Paul* the elect vessel of God, was in so great contempt among his own *Galathians*, to whom he had preached Christ, that it was necessary for him to swear that he spake the truth. If this happened then to the Apostles, to have so mighty adversaries, that they durst despise them and accuse them of lying, what marvell is it, if the like at this day happen unto us, which in no respect are worthy to be compared with the Apostles? He sweareth therefore in a matter (as it seemeth) of no weight, that he speaketh the truth; namely that he carried not with *Peter* to learne of him, but only to see him: but if you weigh the matter diligently, it is very weighty and of great importance; as may appear by that is said afore. In like manner we swear after the example of *Paul*, in this wise: *God knoweth that we lie not, &c.*

Verse 21. After that, I went into the coasts of Syria and Cilicia.

Syria and *Cilicia* are countries neare situate together. This is it that he still goeth about to perswade, that as well before he had seen the Apostles as after, he was alwaies a Teacher of the Gospel, and that he received it by the revelation of Christ, and was never any Disciple of the Apostles.

Verse

Verse 22, 23. For I was unknowne by face unto the Churches of Judea, which were in Christ. But they heard only some say, he which persecuted us in times past, now preacheth the faith which before he destroyed. And they glorified God in me.

This he addeth for the sequel & continuance of the history, that after he had seen Peter, he went into Syria and Cilicia, and there preached, and so preached that he wone the testimony of all the Churches in Judea. As though he would say: I appeale to the testimony of all the Churches, yea even of those which are in Judea. For the Churches do witness, not only in Damascus, Arabia, Syria and Cilicia, but also Judea, that I have preached the same faith which I once withstood and persecuted. And they glorified God in me: not because I taught that circumcision and the law of Moses ought to be kept, but for the preaching of faith, and for the edifying of the Churches by the ministry of the Gospell. Ye therefore have the testimony not only of the people of Damascus and of Arabia, but also of the whole Catholick or universall Church of Judea.

The testimony of all the Churches in Judea for Paul.



The second Chapter.

Verse 1. Then foreteene yeares after I went up to Jerusalem.

PAUL taught that the Gentiles were justified by Faith only, without the workes of the Law. This Doctrine when he had published abroad among the Gentiles, he commeth to Antioch, and declareth to the Disciples what he had done. Then they which had been trained up in the old customes of the law, rose against Paul with great indignation, for that he preached to the Gentiles liberty from the bondage of the law. Whereupon followed great dissention, which afterwards stirred up new troubles. Paul and Barnabas stood strongly to the truth, and testified, saying: * wheresoever we preached among the Gentiles, the holy Ghost came and fell upon those which heard the word: and this was done throughout all the Churches of the Gentiles, but we preached not circumcision, neither

Pauls doctrine. Contention of such as were turned from the Jews against Paul.

* The declaration of Paul and Barnabas, touching those things which were done among the Gentiles.

did we require the keeping of the law, but we preached only faith in Jesus Christ, and at this preaching of faith, God gave to the hearers the holy Ghost. The holy Ghost therefore doth approve the faith of the *Gentiles* without the law and circumcision. For if the preaching of the Gospel and faith of the *Gentiles* in Christ had not pleased him he had not come down in a visible shape upon the uncircumcised, which heard the word. Seeing then by the only hearing of faith he came down upon them, it is certaine that the holy Ghost by this signe hath approved the faith of the *Gentiles*. For it doth not appear that this was ever done before at the preaching of the law.

What they answer to Paul in this disputation, which are so earnest for the law.

Then the *Jewes* and many of the *Pharisees* which did beleeve, and notwithstanding bare yet a great zeale to the law, earnestly striving to maintain the glory thereof, set themselvs fiercely against Paul (who affirmed that the *Gentiles* were justified by faith onely without the works of the law) contending that the law ought to be kept, and that the *Gentiles* ought to be circumcised: for otherwise they could not be saved. And no marvell: for the very name of the law of God is holy and dreadfull. The Heathen man, which never knew any thing of the law of God, if he heare any man say: This doctrine is the law of God, he is moved therewith. How then could it be but the *Jewes* must needs be moved, and vehemently contend for the maintenance of the law of God, which even from their infancy had bin nulled and trained up therein?

They that were converted from the *Jewes*, hardly forsook the law.

We see at this day how obstinate the Papists be in defending their traditions and doctrines of Devils. Wherefore it was much lesse to be marvelled, that the *Jewes* did so vehemently and zealously strive for the maintenance of their law, which they had received from God: Custom is of such force, that whereas nature is of it self inclined to the observation of the law, by long continuance it so confirmeth nature, that now it becometh a double nature. Therefore it was not possible for the *Jewes* which were newly converted to Christ, sodainly to forsake the law: who though they had received the faith of Christ, thought it necessary notwithstanding to observe the law. And with this their weaknesse God did beare for a time, untill the doctrine of the Gospel might be plainly discerned from the law. So he bare with the infirmity of *Israel* in the time of King *Ahab*, when the people halted between two Religions. He bare also so with our weaknesse, whilst we were under the blindness of the

Custom is a double nature.

God alwaies beareth with the infirmities of his people.

Pope : For he is long suffering and full of mercy. But we must not abuse this goodness and patience of the Lord, nor continue still in our weaknesse and errour, since the truth is now revealed by the cleare light of the Gospell.

Moreover, they that stood against *Paul*, affirming that the Gentiles ought to be circumcised, had to say for themselves, first the law and customs of the Country; then the example of the Apostles, and last of all the example of *Paul* himselfe, who had circumcised *Timothy*. Wherefore if *Paul* in his defence said, that he did not this of necessity, but for Christian love and liberty, least they which were weak in faith should be offended, which of them would beleve him? Hereunto all the people would answer: Since it is evident that thou hast circumcised *Timothy*, thou maist say what thou wilt: notwithstanding thou hast done it. For this is a matter far passing all mens capacity, and therefore they could not understand it. Moreover, no defence can serve when a man hath lost the favour of the people, and is fallen into such deadly hatred and contempt. *Paul* therefore seeing this contention and these clamours daily to increase more and more, and being also warned by revelation from God, after foureteene years (besides those wherein he had preached in *Damascus* and *Arabia*) goeth up againe to *Jerusalem*, to confer his Gospell with the other Apostles: yet not for his own cause, but for the peoples sake.

What they had to say for themselves that resisted *Paul*

Now, this contention touching the observation of the law, exercised *Paul* a long time after, and wrought him much trouble. But I doe not thinke that this is the contention which *Luke* speaketh of in the 15. of the *Acts*, which happened (as it appeareth) by and by after the beginning of the Gospell. But this history which *Paul* here mentioneth, seemeth to be done long after, when *Paul* had now almost eightene yeares preached the Gospell.

Verse 1. With Barnabas, and took with me Titus.

He joyneth unto himselfe two witnesses, *Barnabas* and *Titus*; *Barnabas* was *Paul*'s companion in preaching to the Gentiles freedome from the servitude of the law. He was also a witness of all those things which *Paul* did, and had seen the holy Ghost given unto the Gentiles which were circumcised and free from *Moses* law, by the onely preaching of faith in *Jesus Christ*, and he onely stuck to *Paul* in this point, that it was not necessary that the Gentiles

Paul taketh unto him witnesses, *Barnabas* and *Titus*.

Barnabas.

should be burdēned with the law, but that it was not enough for them to beleeve in Christ. Wherefore by his owne experience he testified with *Paul* against the Jews, that the Gentiles were made the children of God, and saved by faith alone in Christ Jesus, without the law or circumcision.

Titus was not onely a Christian, but also the chiefe overseer in *Creece*: For unto him *Paul* had committed the charge of governing the Churches there, *Tit. i.* And this *Titus* was a Gentile.

Verse 2. And I went up by revelation.

For unless *Paul* had bene admonished by revelation, he had not gone up to *Jerusalem*. But because God warned him by a speciall revelation, and commanded him to goe up, therefore he went. And this he did to bridle, or at least to appease the Jews that beleeved and yet obstinately contended about the keeping of the law, to the end that the truth of the Gospell might the more be advanced and confirmed.

Verse 2. And I communicated with them touching the Gospell.

You heare then that at length, after eightene years he went up to *Jerusalem* and conferred with the Apostles touching his Gospell.

Verse 2. Which I preach among the Gentiles.

For among the Jewes he suffered the law and circumcision for a time, as the other Apostles did: *I am made all things unto all men*, saith he, *1 Cor. 9.* Yet ever holding the true doctrine of the Gospell, which he preferred above the law, circumcision, the Apostles, yea and an Angell from heaven. For thus saith he unto the Jews: *through this Christ, is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins.* And he addeth very plainly: *And from all things, from the which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses, by him every one that beleeveth is justified.* For this cause he teacheth and defendeth the doctrine of the Gospell so diligently every where, and never suffereth it to come in danger. Notwithstanding he did not suddenly break out at the first, but had regard unto the weak. And because the weak should not be offended, there is no doubt but he spake to the Jews after this manner: If that unprofitable service of *Moses* law which nothing availeth to righteousness, do so highly please you, ye may keepe it still for me, so that the Gentiles which are not bound to this law, be not charged therewithall.

Paul so defendeth his Gospell, that he will have all things give place unto it
Act. 13. 38.

1 Cor. 9.

Paul

Paul therefore confesseth, that he conferred the Gospell with the Apostles, but (saith he) they profited me or taught me no thing: but I rather for the defence of the liberty of the Gospell, in the presence of the Apostles did constantly resist those which would needs force the observation of the law upon the *Gentiles*, and so did overcome them. Wherefore your false Apostles lie in saying that I circumcised *Timothy*, that I shaved my head in *Cenchrea*, and that I went up to *Jerusalem*, at the commandement of the Apostles. Nay rather, I glory that in going up to *Jerusalem* by the revelation of God, and not at the commandement of the Apostles, and there conferring my Gospel with them, I brought to passe the contrary, that is to say, obtained that the Apostles did approve me, and not those which were against me.

- Now, the question whereupon the Apostles conferred together in this Assembly, was this: whether the keeping of the law were necessary to justification or no? To this *Paul* answereth: I have preached unto the *Gentiles*, according to my Gospell which I received from God, faith in Christ and not the law, and at this preaching of faith they received the holy Ghost: and hereof *Barnabas* shall bear me witness: Wherefore I conclude that the *Gentiles* ought not to be burdened with the law, nor to be circumcised. Notwithstanding I give no restraint to the *Jews* herein: who if they will needs keep the law and be circumcised, I am not against it, so that they do it with freedom of conscience. And thus have I taught and lived among the *Jews*, being made a Jew unto the Jews: holding ever the truth of the Gospell notwithstanding.

The question that was handled in the assembly of the Apostles.

Verse 2. But particularly with them that were the chiefest.

That is to say, I did not only conferre with the brethren, but with those that were the chiefest among them.

Verse 2. Lest by any means I should run, or had run in vain.

Not that *Paul* doubted, that he ran or had runne in vaine, for as much as he had now preached the Gospell eighteen years (for it followeth incontinent in the Text, that he had continued firm and constant all this while, and had prevailed:) but for that many did thinke that *Paul* had therefore preached the Gospell so many yeares in vaine, because hee had set the *Gentiles* at liberty from the observation of the law. Moreover, this opinion daily more and more increased

Why *Paul* saith, lest I had run in vaine.

creased, that the law was necessary to justification. Wherefore in going up to *Jerusalem* by revelation, he meant to remedy this evil that by this conference all men might plainly see his Gospel to be in no point contrary to the doctrine of the other Apostles, to the end that by this meanes he might stop the mouthes of the adversaries, which would else have said that he ran or had run in vaine: Note here by the way, the vertue of mans own righteousness or the righteousness of the law to be such, that they which teach it; doe run and live in vaine.

Verse 3. But neither yet Titus which was with mee, though hee were a Grecian, was compelled to be circumcised.

What was decreed in this conference.

This word [*was compelled*] sufficiently declareth what the conference and conclusion was: to wit, that the Gentiles should not be constrained to be circumcised, but that circumcision should be permitted to them for a time: not as necessary to righteousness, but for a reverence to the fathers: and for charities sake towards the weak (least they should be offended) untill they were growne up more strong in faith. For it might have seemed a very strange and unseemly thing, upon a suddain to forsake the law and traditions of the fathers, which had been given to this people from God with so great glory.

How Paul refused circumcision.

Rom. 4. 12.

How we teach fasting and other Christian exercises at this day.

Paul then did not reject circumcision as a damnable thing, neither did he by word or deed enforce the Jewes to forsake it. For in the 1 *Cor. 7.* he saith: *If any man be called being circumcised, let him not adde uncircumcision.* But hee rejected circumcision as a thing not necessary to righteousness, seeing the fathers themselves were not justified thereby, but it was unto them as a signe onely or a seale of righteousness, whereby they testified and exercised their faith. Notwithstanding the beleeving Jewes which were yet weak and bare a zeale to the law, hearing that circumcision was not necessary to righteousness, could understand this no otherwise, but that it was altogether unprofitable and damnable. And this fond opinion of the weak Jewes the false Apostles did increase, to the end that the hearts of the people being stirred up against *Paul* by this occasion, they might throughly discredit his doctrine. So we at this day doe not reject fasting and other good exercises as damnable things: but we teach that by these exercises we doe not obtaine remission of sins. When the people heare this, by and by they judge

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

The obsti-
nate adver-
saries defend
their wicked
doctrine by
violence and
tyranny.

Mat. 6 9, 10.

The triumph
of Paul a-
gainst the
false Apo-
stles.

Withstanding the adversaries would rather worship the Devill ten times in stead of God, then they would suffer this. Therefore they are daily hardened more and more, and seeke to establish their impieties and blasphemies against God, defending the same by force and ty- ranny, and will not agree or consent unto us in any point. But what then? Let us go on boldly in the name of the Lord of hosts, and for all this, let us not cease to set forth the glory of Jesus Christ: and let us fight valiantly against the kingdom of Antichrist by the word and by prayer, *That the name of God alone may be sanctified, that his king- dom may come, and that his will may be done.* And that this may speedi- ly come to passe, we desire even from the bottome of our hearts, and say, *Amen, Amen.*

This triumph of Paul therefore was very glorious: namely, that *Titus* which was a *Gentile*, although he were in the midst of the A- postles and all the faithfull, where this question was so vehemently debated; was not yet constrained to be circumcised. This victory Paul carrieth away, and saith that in this conference it was decided by the consent of all the Apostles, the whole Church also approving the same, that *Titus* should not be circumcised. This is a strong argu- ment and maketh very much against the false Apostles. And with this argument: *Neither was Titus compelled to be circumcised, Paul was able to repress and mightily to convince all his adversaries: as if he should say: Why do these counterfeit Apostles so falsely report of me, saying, that I am compelled to keep circumcision by the commandement of the Apostles, seeing I have the witnes of all the faithfull in Jerusalem, and moreover of all the Apostles themselves, that by my pursuit and travell the contrary was there determined, and that I did not onely there prevaile that Titus should not be circumcised, but that the A- postles also did approve and ratifie the same? Your counterfeit Apo- stles therefore do lie deadly, which slander me under the name of the Apostles; and thereby deceive you: for I have the Apostles and all the faithfull, not against me, but with me. And this I prove by the exam- ple of Titus.*

Notwithstanding, Paul (as I have often said) did not condemn cir- cumcision as an unprofitable thing, nor constrained any man there- unto. For it is neither sin nor righteousness to be circumcised or uncir- cumcised, as it is neither sin nor righteousness to eat or drink. *For whe- ther thou eat or eat not, thou art neither better nor worse.* But if any man should

1 Cor. 8, 8.

should adde thereto either sin or righteousness, and say: If thou eat thou sinnest, if thou abstain thou art righteous, he should shew himselfe both foolish and wicked. Therefore to joyn ceremonies with sinne or righteousness, is great impiety: as the Pope doth, who in his forme of excommunication, threatneth to all those that do not obey the law of the Bishop of Rome, Gods great curse and indignation, and so maketh all his laws necessary to salvation. Wherefore the Devill himselfe speaketh in the person of the Pope in all the Popes decrees, For if saluation consisteth in keeping the Popes laws, what need have we of Christ to be our Justifier and Saviour?

The Pope putteth righteousness in the keeping of his traditions & damnation in the breaking of them.

Verse 4, 5. For all the false brethren that crept in, who came in privily to espy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus that they might bring us into bondage. To whom we gave not place by subjection for an hour, that the truth of the Gospell might continue with you.

Here Paul sheweth the cause why he went up to Jerusalem, and there conferred his Gospell with the other Apostles, and why he would not circumeise Timus: Not that he might be the more certain, or confirmed in the Gospell by the Apostles, for he nothing doubted thereof, but that the truth of the Gospell might continue in the Churches of the Galathians, and in all the Churches of the Gentiles. We see then that the busines of Paul was no light matter.

Now, where he speaketh of the truth of the Gospell, he sheweth that there be two Gospells, a true and a false Gospell. Indeed the Gospell of it selfe is simple, true and sincere: but by the malice of Satans ministry it is corrupt and defaced. Therefore where he saith: *The truth of the Gospell*, he would have us to understand also the contrary. As if he would say: the false Apostles do also preach a faith and a Gospell, but they are both false: therefore have I set my selfe so constantly against them. And in that I would not give place unto them, this have I brought to passe, that the truth of the Gospel continueth with you. So the Pope and Anabaptists do brag at this day, that they teach the Gospell and faith in Christ. True it is: but with such fruit as the false Apostles once did, whom Paul calleth before in the first Chapter, troubleis of the Church and subverters of the Gospell of Christ. On the other side he saith, that he teacheth the truth of the Gospell. As if he should say: Those things which the false Apostles teach,

The Gospell of the false Apostles.

The Gospell of the Pope and other heretikes.

teach, brag they never so much that they teach the truth, are nothing else but starke lies. So all hereticks pretend the Name of God, of Christ, and of the Church. Also they pretend that they will not teach errors or lies, but most certain truth and the pure Gospell of Christ.

Now, the truth of the Gospell is, that our righteousness cometh by faith alone, without the works of the law. The corruption or falsehood of the Gospell is, that we are justified by faith, but not without the works of the law. With the like condition the false Apostles also preached the Gospell. Even so doe our Papists at this day. For they say that we must beleve in Christ, and that faith is the foundation of our salvation: but it justifieth not, except it be furnished with charity. This is not the truth of the Gospell, but falsehood and dissimulation. But the true Gospell indeed is, that works or charity are not the ornament or perfection of faith: but that faith of it selfe is Gods gift and Gods worke in our hearts, which therefore justifieth us, because it apprehendeth Christ our redeemer. Mans reason hath the law for his object, thus thinking with it selfe: This I have done, this I have not done: But faith being in her own proper office, hath no other object but Jesus Christ the Son of God, delivered to death for the sins of the whole world. It looketh not to charity. It saith not: what have I done? what have I offended? what have I deserved? but what hath Christ done? what hath he deserved? Here the truth of the Gospell answereth thee: he hath redeemed thee from thy sin, from the devill and from eternall death, saith therefore acknowledgeth, that in this one person Jesus Christ, it hath forgivenesse of sinnes and eternall life. He that turneth his eyes away from this object, hath no true faith, but a fantastic and a vaine opinion and turneth his eyes from the promise to the law, which terrifieth and driveth to desperation.

Wherefore those things which the Popish Schoolemen have taught concerning the justifying faith being furnished with charity, are nothing else but meere dreames. For that faith which apprehendeth Christ the Sonne of God, and is furnished with him is the same faith which justifieth, and not that faith which includeth charity. For a true and steadfast faith must lay hold upon nothing else but Christ alone, and in the affections and terrours of conscience it hath nothing else to lean unto, but this Diamond Christ Jesus. Wherefore he that apprehendeth Christ by faith, although he

The truth of the Gospell.

The corruption of the Gospell.

The doctrine of the Papists concerning faith.

The object of reason whereunto it looketh. The object of faith, is the thing whereunto the eye of faith looketh, which is Christ.

Faith furnished with charity.

The Papists imagine that charity is inclosed in faith, as a Diamond is in a ring.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

brethren no doubt but *Paul* would have given them place. But it was another thing that they sought: to wit, that they might bring *Paul* and all that stuck to his doctrine into bondage. Therefore he would not yeeld unto them, no not the space of one moment.

Luther was content in the time of blindness to beare with those things which now in the light of the Gospell are utterly to be rejected.

* The Popes thunderbolts.

In like manner do we also offer to the Papists all that is to be offered, yea and more then we ought. Only we except the liberty of conscience which we have in Christ Jesus. For we will not suffer our consciences to be bound to any work, so that by doing this thing or that, we should be righteous, or leaving the same undone we should be damned. We are contented to eat the same meats that they eat, we will keep their feasts and fasting daies, so that they will suffer us to do the same with a free conscience, and leave these threatening words, wherewith they have terrified and brought under their subjection the whole world: saying: * We command, we charge, we charge again, we excommunicate, &c. But this liberty we cannot obtain: like as *Paul* also could not in his time. Therefore we do as he did. For when he saw that he could not obtain this liberty, he would not give place to the false Apostles, the space of one houre.

It is a point of true Christianity to be stout against merit-mongers, for keeping the Christian liberty.

When faith is sound, all things are safe

Wherefore, like as our adversaries will not leave this free unto us, that only faith in Christ justifieth: so on the other side, neither will we, nor can we give place unto them, that faith furnished with charity justifieth. Here we will and we ought also to be rebellious and obstinate against them; for els we should lose the truth of the Gospell: we should lose our liberty which we have, not in the Emperour; not in Kings and Princes, not in that monster the Pope, not in the world, not in flesh, bloud, reason, &c. but which we have in Christ Jesus. We should lose faith in Christ, which (as before I have said) apprehendeth nothing els but that precious diamond Christ Jesus. This faith whereby we are regenerate, justified, and engrafted into Christ, if our adversaries will leave unto us sound and uncorrupt, we offer unto them that we will do all things, so that they be not contrary to this faith. But because we cannot obtain this at their hands, we again for our part will not yeeld unto them one haire's breadth. For the matter which we have in hand is weighty and of great importance, even touching the death of the Son of God: who by the will and commandment of the Father was made flesh, was crucified and died for the sinnes of the world. If faith here give place, then is this death and resurrection of the Sonne of God in vaine: then is it but a fable.

fable that Christ is the Saviour of the world: then is God found a liar; because he hath not performed that he promised. Our stoutnes therefore in this matter is godly and holy. For by it we seek to preserve our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus; and thereby to retaine the truth of the Gospell: which if we lose; then do we also lose God; Christ, all the promises, faith, righteousness, and everlasting life.

The holy ob-
stancy and
stoutnesse of
the Godly.

But here will some man say: the law is divine and holy. Let the law have his glory, but yet no law be it never so divine and holy, ought to teach me that I am justified and shall live through it. I grant it may teach me that I ought to love God and my neighbour; also to live in chastity, sobernesse, patience, &c. but it ought not to shew how I should be delivered from sin, the devill, death and hell.

The doctrine
of the law.

Here I must take counsell of the Gospell, I must hearken to the Gospell which teacheth me, not what I ought to do (for that is the proper office of the law:) but what Jesus Christ the Sonne of God hath done for me: to wit, that he suffered and died to deliver me from sin and death. The Gospell willet me to receive this, and to believe it. And this is the truth of the Gospel. It is also the principle article of all Christian doctrine, wherein the knowledge of all godlinesse consisteth. Most necessary it is therefore that we should know this article well, teach it unto others; and beat it into their heads continually. For as it is very tender, so is it soon hurt. This Paul had well tryed, and of this have all the godly, also good experience.

The doctrine
of the Gos-
pell.

To conclude, Paul would not circumcise Titus, and (as he saith) for no other cause, but for that certain false brethren were crept in to espy out their liberty; and would have constrained Paul to circumcise Titus. Paul seeing this constraint and necessity, would give no place, no not for an hour, but strongly resisted them; and therefore he saith: Neither Titus which was with me, being a Gentile, was compelled to be circumcised. If they had required this in the way of brotherly charity, doubtles he would not have denied it. But seeing they would have done it as a necessary thing, and that by compulsion, to the evill example of others, to the overthrowing of the Gospell, and to bring mens consciences into bondage, therefore he set himself mightily against them, and prevailed so, that Titus was not circumcised.

Gal 2.3.

It may seeme but a small matter to be circumcised, or not circumcised. But when a man hath an affiance in keeping of it, or else is in feare for not keeping of it, here God is denied, Christ is rejected,

the

* And yet serving to some edification, or els they are not to be kept, but utterly rejected.

the grace and all the promises of God are refused! But if circumcision be kept without this addition, there is no danger. If the Pope would in this sort require of us the keeping of his traditions, as bare ceremonies, it should not be so grievous unto us to keep them: but to bind mens consciences to these ceremonies, and to make of them an high and acceptable service unto God, yea and moreover to add, that life and salvation, or death and damnation consisteth in the observati- on hereof, is a devilish superstition, and full of blasphemy. Who so will not cry against this, accursed be he, &c.

Verse 6, 7. *And of them which seemed to be great, I was not taught. (What they were in times past, it is no matter to me, &c.)*

Why Paul giveth not unto the Apostles any glorious title

This is a vehement and strong confutation. For he giveth not to the true Apostles themselves any glorious title: but as it were abasing their dignity, he saith: *Which seemed to be great*: that is, which were in authority, upon whom the determination of all matters depended. Notwithstanding the authority of the Apostles was indeed very great in all the Churches. And Paul also did not seek any whit to diminish their authority, but he thus contemptuously answereth the false Apostles, which set the authority and dignity of the Apostles against Paul in all the Churches, that thereby they might weaken his authority, and bring his whole ministry into contempt. This Paul might not suffer. To the end therefore that the truth of the Gospel and liberty of conscience in Christ might continue among the Galatians and in all the Churches of the Gentiles, he answereth stoutly to the false Apostles, that he passed not how great the Apostles were, or what they had bin in times past: and whereas they alledged the authority of the name of the Apostles against him, it touched him nothing at

all. He confesseth that the Apostles are indeed somewhat, and that their authority is to be revered. Notwithstanding his Gospel and Ministry ought not to be overthrowne for the name or title of any, whatsoever he be, an Apostle or an Angel from heaven.

And this was one of the greatest Arguments that the false Apostles used against Paul. The Apostles (said they) were familiarly conversant with Christ for the space of three years. They heard and saw all his preachings and miracles. Moreover, they themselves preached and wrought miracles whiles Christ was yet living in the world: whom Paul never saw in the flesh, and as tou-

ching

The argument of the false Apostles against Paul.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Man regardeth
not the
person

*Every creature
of God
may be called
the veile
of God, because
God is, as it were,
covered and
shadowed
under it.

* 1 Cor 13.12
Deut 8 10.
Mat. 4.4.

Man trusteth
to the veiles
of God, and
not to God
himselfe.

The outward
veiles are
Gods good
creatures,
but to trust
in them is
wicked.

ward appearance of men, and more regard the same then the word of God. Contrariwise God will have us to fix our eyes, and to rest wholly upon the word it self: he will not have us to reverence and adore the Apostleship in the persons of *Peter* and *Paul*, but Christ speaking in them and the word which they bring and preach unto us.

- This the naturall man cannot see: but the spirituall man only discerneth the person from the word, the veile of God from God himselfe. Now this veile of God is every creature. Moreover, God here in this life dealeth not with us face to face, but covered and shadowed from us: that is, as *Paul* saith in another place: * *We see now as it were through a glasse darkly, but then we shall see face to face.* Therefore we cannot be without veiles in this life. But here wisdom is required, which can discern the veile from God himselfe, and this wisdom the world hath not. The covetous man hearing that *man liveth not by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God*, eateth the bread, but he seeth not God in the bread, for he beholdeth the veile only and outward shew. So he doth with gold and other creatures, trusting to them so long as he hath them: but when they leave him, he despaireth. And thus he honoureth not the Creator, but the creatures; not God, but his owne belly. This I speak lest any man should think that *Paul* utterly condemneth these outward veiles or persons. For he saith not that there ought to be no person; but that there is no respect of persons with God. There must be persons and outward veiles: God hath given them, and they are his good creatures, but we must not trust in them. All the matter is in the right using of things, and not in the things themselves, as before I have said. There is no fault in circumcision or uncircumcision (for circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing), but in the use therof. To put righteousness in the one and unrighteousnes in the other, that use is damnable and ought to be taken away: which being removed, circumcision and uncircumcision are things tolerable.

- So the Prince, the Magistrate, the Preacher, the Schoole-master, the Scholler, the Father, the Mother, the Children, the Master, the Servant, are persons and outward veiles, which God will have us to acknowledge, love and reverence as his creatures, which also must needs be had in this life: but he will not have us so to reverence them or trust unto them, that we forget him. And to the end that we should not too much magnifie the outward persons, or put
any

any trust in them, God leaveth in them offences and sins, yea great and foule sins, to teach us what difference there is between the person and God himself. *David* that good King because he should not seem to be a person upon whom men should trust, fell into horrible sinnes, adultery and murther. *Peter* that excellent Apostle denied Christ. These and such like examples, wherof the Scripture is full, ought to warn us that we repose not our trust in the person and outward veile; nor thinke that when we have the outward shews and shadows, we have all things: As it is in Popery, where they judge all things according to the outward veil, and therefore all Popery is nothing els but a meer respecting of persons and outward shews.. God hath given his creatures to our use and to doe us service, and not as Idols that we should do service unto them. Let us then use bread, wine, apparell, possessions, gold, silver, and all other creatures: but let us not trust or glory in them: for we must trust and glory in God alone. He only is to be loyed, he only is to be feared and honoured.

God suffereth his dear Saints to fall into great vices, that we should not cleave to their persons.

Paul calleth here the Apostleship, or office of the Apostles (which wrought many and great miracles, taught and converted many to the faith, and were also familiar with Christ) the person of man.

Briefly, this word person comprehendeth the whole outward conversation of the Apostles which was holy, and their authority, which was great. Notwithstanding: (saith he) God esteemeth not these things: Not that he esteemeth them not at all, but in the matter of justification he regardeth them not, be they never so great and so glorious. For we must diligently marke this distinction, that in matters of Divinity we must speake farre otherwise, then in matters of policy. In matters of pollicy (as I have said) God will have us to honour and reverence these outward vailes or persons as his instruments by whom he governeth and preserveth the world. But when the question is as touching religion, conscience, the feare of God, faith and the service of God, we must not feare these outward persons, we must put no trust in them, looke for no comfort from them, or hope for deliverance by them either corporally or spiritually. For this cause God will have no respect of persons in judgement: for judgement is a divine thing. Wherfore I ought neither to feare the Judge, nor trust in the Judge: but my feare and trust ought to be in God alone, who is the true Judge. The civill Judge or Magistrate I ought indeed to reverence for Gods cause,

Paul calls the Apostleship the person of man.

The outward person is not to be looked upon in judgement. *Deut. 1.*

whose minister he is : but my conscience may not stay or trust upon his justice and equity, or be feared through his unjust dealing or tyranny, wherby I might fall into any offence against God, in lying, in bearing false witness, in denying the truth, &c. Otherwise I will reverence and honour the Magistrate with all my heart.

So I would also honor the Pope & love his person, if he would leave my conscience free, and not compel me to sin against God. But he will be feared and adored, as cannot be done without offence to the Majesty of God. Here since we must needs lose the one let us lose the person and stick to God. We could be content to suffer the dominion of the Pope : but because he abuseth the same so tyrannously against us, and would compell us to deny and blaspheme God; and to acknowledge him only as our Lord and Master, clogging our consciences and spoiling us of the fear and trust which we should have in God; therefore we are compelled by the commandement of God, to resist the Pope : for it is written: *I bat we must rather obey God then men.* Therefore without offence of conscience (which is our singular comfort) we contemn the authority of the Pope.

Marke what servitude Luther was content to endure, so that he & others might enjoy the liberty of conscience.

* Act, 4 19.

There is a certain vehemency therefore to be noted in this word [*God*] For in the cause of religion, and the word of God, there must be no respect of persons. But in matters of policy we must have regard to the person : for otherwise there must needs follow a contempt of all reverence and order. In this world God will have an order, a reverence and a difference of persons. For else the child, the servant, the Subject would say : I am a Christian as well as my Father, my School-master, my Master, my Prince : why then should I reverence him? Before God then there is no respect of persons, neither of *Grecian* nor of *Jew*, but all are one in Christ : although not so before the world.

Thus *Paul* confuteth the argument of the false Apostles as touching the authority of the Apostles, and saith that it is nothing to the purpose. For the question is not here concerning the respect of persons, but there is a farre weightier matter in hand, that is to say, a divine matter concerning God and his word, and whether this word ought to be preferred before the Apostleship or no : Wherunto *Paul* answereth : So that the truth of the Gospell may continue, so that the word of God and the righteousness of faith may be kept pure and uncorrupt, let the Apostleship goe, let

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

maintained, and the righteousnes of faith may be kept pure and sound. Wherefore if the Pope will grant unto us that God alone by his meere grace through Christ doth justifie sinners, we will not only carry him in our hands, but will also kisse his feet. But since we cannot obtaine this, we againe in God are proud against him above measure, and will give no place, no not one haire bredth to all the Angels in Heaven, not to Peter, not to Paul, not to an hundreth Emperours, not to a thousand Popes, nor to the whole world. But be it far from us that we should here humble our selves, since they would take from us our glory, even God himselfe that hath created us and given us all things, and Jesus Christ who hath redeemed us with his blood. Let this be then the conclusion of all together, that we will suffer our goods to be taken away, our name, our life, and all that we have: but the Gospell, our Faith, Jesus Christ we will never suffer to be wrested from us. And cursed be that humility which here abaseth and submitteth it selfe. Nay rather let every Christian man here be proud and spare not, except he will deny Christ.

Cursed is
humility in
matters of
God, and
of faith.

Wherefore, God assisting me, my forehead shall be more hard then all mens foreheads. Here I take upon me this title, according to the proverbe: *Cedo nulli*, I give place to none, Yea I am glad even with all my heart in this point to be called rebellious and obstinate. And here I confesse that I am and ever will be stout and sterne, and will not one inch give place to any creature. Charity giveth place: for it suffereth all things, beleeveth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things. But faith giveth no place, yea it can suffer nothing, according to this ancient verse: *Non patitur ludum fama, fides, oculus*: That is, mans good name, his faith, and his eye will not be dallied withall. Wherefore a Christian, as touching his faith, can never be too proud nor too stout, neither must he relent or give place, no not the bredth of one haire. For faith maketh a man here like unto God: but God suffereth nothing, he giveth place to none, for he is immutable. So is faith immutable, and therefore may suffer nothing, give place to no man. But as touching charity, let a Christian man yeeld and suffer all things, for therein he is but a man.

1 Cor. 13. 7. I
Love suffereth
all things, but
faith can
bear with
nothing.

Verse 7, 8. But contrariwise, when they saw that the Gospell over
uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the Gospell over
circumcision was unto Peter: (for hee was mighty

by Peter in the Apostleship over the circumcision, was also mighty by me towards the Gentiles.)

With these words Paul mightily confuteth the false Apostles. For here he challengeth to himselfe the same authority which the false Apostles attributed to the true Apostles. And he useth here a figure which is called an *Inversion*, returning their argument against themselves. The false Apostles (saith he) doe alledge against me the authority of the great Apostles, to maintaine their cause. But I contrariwise doe alledge the same against them for my defence, for the Apostles are on my side. Wherefore O my *Galathians* beleeve not these counterfeit Apostles, which brag so much of the authority of the Apostles against me. For the Apostles when they saw the Gospell over the uncircumcision to be committed to me, and knew of the grace that to me was given, gave to me and *Barnabas* the right hands of fellowship, approving my ministry, and giving thanks unto God for the gifts which I had received. Thus he returneth the argument of the false Apostles upon themselves. And in these words, there is an ardent vehemency, and more contained in matter, then in words is able to be expressed.

What meaneth Paul when he saith, that the Gospell over the uncircumcision was committed unto him, and over the circumcision unto Peter, when notwithstanding Paul almost every where preached to the Jewes in the Synagogues, and Peter likewise to the Gentiles? There are examples and testimonies of both in the *Acts*. Peter converted the Centurian with his family, which was a Gentile. He wrote also to the Gentiles, as his first Epistle testifieth. Paul preaching Christ among the Gentiles, entreth notwithstanding into the Synagogues of the Jewes, and there preacheth the Gospell. And our Saviour Christ in *Matthew* and *Marke* commandeth his Apostles to go throughout the whole world, and preach the Gospell to every creature. Paul likewise saith: The Gospell preached to every creature which is under Heaven. Why then doth he call himselfe the Apostle of the Gentiles, and Peter with the other, the Apostles of the circumcision?

Paul hath respect unto this, that the other Apostles remained specially in *Jerusalem*, untill God called them unto other places. Thus stood the matter then for the time, that whiles the politicall state of the Jewes continued, the Apostles still remained in *Judea*:

To Peter is committed the Gospell over circumcision, and to Paul over uncircumcision.

Acts 10. 30.

Acts 9. 10.

Mat. 28. 19.

Mar. 16. 15.

Col. 1. 23.

Peter the Apostle of the Jewes, and Paul of the Gentiles.

But when the destruction of *Jerusalem* approached, they were dispersed throughout the whole world. But *Paul*, as it is written in the *Acts*, by a singular vocation was chosen to be the Apostle of the Gentiles, and being sent out of *Judea*, he travelled through the countries of the Gentiles. Now were the Jewes dispersed almost throughout the whole world, and dwelt here and there in cities and other places among the Gentiles. *Paul* coming thither was wont (as we read in the *Acts*) to go into the Synagogues of the Jewes, and by this occasion he first brought unto them, as the children of the Kingdome, this glad tidings, that the promises made unto the fathers, were accomplished by Jesus Christ. When they would not heare this, he turned to the Gentiles, as *Luke* witnesseth, *Acts* 13, where he bringeth in *Paul* thus boldly speaking against the Jewes: *It was necessary that we should first preach the word of God unto you: but seeing ye reject it, and judge your selves unworthy of everlasting life, loe we turne to the Gentiles.* And in the *Acts*: *Be it knowne therefore unto you, that this salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and they shall beare it.* Wherefore *Paul* was sent specially unto the Gentiles. But because he was a debtor unto all, and became all things unto all men, therefore occasion being offered, he went into the Synagogues of the Jewes, where not onely the Jewes, but also the Gentiles heard him preaching Christ. Otherwhiles he preached publikely in the market place, in houses, and by the rivers sides. He was specially then the Apostle of the Gentiles: as *Peter* was of the Jewes: who notwithstanding preached Christ to the Gentiles also when occasion was offered.

And here he calleth uncircumcision the Gentiles, and circumcision the Jewes, by a figure named *Synecdoche*, which under a part comprehendeth the whole: which figure is commonly used in the Scripture: the Gospell then over uncircumcision, is that which was appointed to be sent unto the Gentiles. This Gospell, saith he, was committed unto him, as the Gospell over Circumcision was unto *Peter*. For as *Peter* preached the Gospell among the Jewes, so did he among the Gentiles.

This he often repeateth, that *Peter*, *James* and *John*, which seemed to be the pillars of the Church, taught him nothing, nor committed unto him the office of preaching the Gospell, as having authority and rule over him. But they themselves (saith he) did see that the Gospell was committed unto me, but not by *Peter*. For as I did not receive

Acts 13.2.*Acts* 9.10.
Paul preached also to the Jewes.*Acts* 28.28.*Rom.* 1.14.Vncircumcision.
Circumcision.*Paul* receiveth not his Gospell of the other Apostles.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Paul thus to doe: such as at this day we see in the Pope and his generation. But *Paul* had not here his owne businesse in hand, but a matter of faith. Now, as concerning faith we ought to be invincible, and more hard if it might be, then the Adamant stone. But as touching charity, we ought to be soft, and more flexible then the reed or leafe that is shaken with the wind, and ready to yeeld to every thing: Therefore the controversie was not here touching the glory of *Paul*; but the glory of God, the word of God, the true worship of God, true Religion, and the righteousnesse of faith, to the end that these things might still remaine pure and uncorrupt.

Verse 9. And when James, and Cephas, and John knew of the grace that was given unto me, (which are counted to be pillars) they gave to mee, and to Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we should preach unto the Gentiles, and they unto the circumcision.

That is to say, when they heard that I had received my calling and charge from God to preach the Gospell among the Gentiles, and that God had wrought so many miracles by me: moreover, that so great a number of the Gentiles were come to the knowledge of Christ through my ministry, and that the Gentiles had received the holy Ghost without the law and circumcision by the onely preaching of faith, they glorified God for this grace which was given unto me.

What *Paul* calleth grace in this place.

Peter approveth the ministry of *Paul*.

-He calleth grace here whatsoever he had received of God: to wit, that of a persecutor and waster of the Church, he was made an Apostle, was taught by Jesus Christ, and enriched with spirituall gifts. And herewithall he sheweth that *Peter* gave testimony unto him, that he was a true Apostle; sent and taught, not by himselfe nor by the other Apostles, but by God alone: and not onely acknowledged the ministry and authority of *Paul*; and the gifts of the spirit which were in him, as heavenly things, but also approved and confirmed the same, and yet not as a superiour and ruler, but as a brother and witness. *James* and *John* did likewise the same. Wherefore he concludeth that they which are esteemed for the chiefe pillars amongst the Apostles, are wholly with him, and not against him.

Verse 9. The right hands of fellowship.

As if they should have said: We (O *Paul*) in preaching the Gospell, doe agree with thee in all things: Therefore in doctrine we are

are companions, and have fellowship together therein: that is to say, we have all one doctrine, for we preach one Gospell, one baptisme, one Christ and one faith. Wherefore we can teach or enjoyne thee nothing, since there is one mutuall consent betwixt us in all things. For we doe not teach any other or more excellent things then thou doest: but the same gifts which we have, we see to be in thee also, saving that to thee is committed the Gospell over the uncircumcision, as the Gospell over the circumcision is unto us. But we conclude here, that neither uncircumcision nor circumcision ought to hinder our society and fellowship, since it is but one Gospell which we both preach.

Paul & the other Apostles taught all one Gospell.

Hitherto Paul hath proved by manifest witness, not onely from God, but also from man, that is to say, the Apostles, that he had truly and faithfully preached the Gospell. Therefore he sheweth, that what soever the false Apostles said to diminish his authority, is but fained and forged matter, and that the testimony of the Apostles maketh for him, and not for the false Apostles. But for that he is alone and without witness, therefore he addeth an oath, and calleth God to record that the things which he hath spoken are true.

* In the former chapter & 20. verses

Verse 10. Warning onely that wee should remember the poore, which thing also I was diligent to doe.

After the preaching of the Gospell, the office and charge of a true and faithfull Pastor is, to be mindfull of the poore. For where the Church is, there must needs be poore: who for the most part are the onely true disciples of the Gospell, as Christ saith: *The poore receive the glad tidings of the Gospell.* For the world and the devil doe persecute the Church, and bring many to poverty, who are afterwards forsaken and despised of the world. Moreover the world not onely offendeth herein, but also is carelesse for the preservation of the Gospell, true Religion, and the true service of God. There is none that will now take any care for the maintenance of the Ministers of the Church, and erecting of Schooles: but for the erecting and establishing of false worship, superstition and Idolatry, no cost was spared, but every man was ready to give most liberally and largely. And hereof came so many monasteries, so many Cathedrall Churches, so many Bishopricks in the Popes Church where all impiety reigned: with so

A good Minister must be carefull for the poore. Esa. 61.1. Mat. 11.5. Luk. 4.16.

The world is ready to give for the maintenance of ungodlines, but it careth not for Gods Ministers.

great.

great revenues provided for their sustentation: where as now a whole City thinketh much to find one or two poore ministers and preachers of the Gospell, which before, whiles the Pope and all impiety reigned, did sustaine sundry monasteries of Monks, Friars, Nunnies, and whole swarmes of massing Priests. To be briete, true religion is ever in neede. And Christ complaineth, *that he is hungry, thirsty, harbourlesse, naked and sicke.* Contrariwise, false religion and impiety flourisheth and aboundeth with all worldly wealth and prosperity. Wherefore a true and faithfull Pastour must have a care of the poore also: and this care *Paul* here confesseth that he had.

Mat. 23. 35.

Verse 11. *And when Peter was come to Antiochia, I withstood him to his face: for he was to be blamed.*

The Majesty of the article of Iustification.

Paul goeth on still in his confutation, saying that he, not onely hath for his defence the testimony of *Peter* and the other Apostles which were at Jerusalem: but also that he withstood *Peter* in the presence of the whole Church of *Antioch*. He sheweth here a matter, not done in a corner, but in the face of the whole Church. For (as before I have said) he hath here no trifling matter in hand, but the chiefest Article of all Christian Doctrine. The utility and the majesty whereof who so rightly esteemeth, to him all other things shall seeme but vile and nothing worth. For what is *Peter*? what is *Paul*? what is an Angell from Heaven? what are all other creatures to the article of Justification? which if we know, then are we in the cleare light: but if we be ignorant thereof, then are we in most miserable darknes. Wherefore if ye see this article impugned or defaced, teare not to resist either *Peter* or an Angell from Heaven, following the example of *Paul*, who seeing the majesty of this article to be in danger for the dignity of *Peter*, had no regard of his dignity and estimation, that he might keep the same pure and uncorrupt. For it is written: *He that loveth father or mother, or his owne life more then me, is not worthy of me.* Wherefore we are not ashamed, for the defence of the truth, to be counted and called of the hypocrites, proud and obstinate, and such as will be onely wise, will beare none, will give place to none. Here we must needs be obstinate and inflexible. For the cause why we offend many: that is to say, tread downe the majesty of the person or of the world, is so great, that the sins which the world counteth

Mat. 10. 37.

It behoveth us to be obdurate in God's matter.

teeth

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

No Saints
without sin.

Dissention
betweene
Paul and
Barnabas
Act. 15. 1, 39.

The falls of
the Saints
bring great
comfort un-
to us

Iud 16.
2 Sam. 11, 24
Job 3, 12.
Job 4.
Irr 20, 14.
Jan 11 4.

and if *Paul* had not resisted him, all the *Gentiles* which did believe, had bin constrained to receive circumcision and to keep the law: The believing *Jews* also had bin confirmed in their opinion: to wit, that the observation of these things was necessary to salvation, and by this means they had received again the law in stead of the Gospell, *Moses* in stead of *Christ*: and of all this great enormity and horrible sin *Peter* by this dissimulation had bin the only occasion. Therefore we may not attribute to the Saints such perfection as though they could not sin.

Luke witnesseth that there was such great dissention between *Paul* and *Barnabas* (which were put apart together for the ministry of the Gospell among the *Gentiles*, and had travelled through many regions, and preached unto them the Gospell) that the one departed from the other. Here we must needs say, that there was a fault either in *Paul* or *Barnabas*. And doubtles it could not be, but that the discord was exceeding great which separated these two, being joyned together in such a holy fellowship, as the Text witnesseth. Such examples are written for our consolation. For it is a great comfort unto us when we heare that even the Saints which have the Spirit of God do sin, which comfort they would take from us, which say that the Saints do not sin.

Sampson, *David*, and many other excellent men, full of the holy Ghost, fell into great sinnes. *Job* and *Jeremy* curse the day of their nativity. *Elias* and *Jonas* are weary of their life, and desire death. Such errours and offences of the Saints, the Scripture setteth forth to the comfort of those that are afflicted and oppressed with desperation, and to the terreur of the proud. No man hath so grievously fallen at any time, but he may rise again. And on the other side, no man taketh so fast footing, but he may fall. If *Peter* fell, I may likewise fall. If he rose again, I may also rise again. And such examples as these are, the weak hearted, and tender consciences ought to make much of, that they may the better understand what they pray, for when they say: *forgive us our trespasses*: and, *I beleve the forgiveness of sins*. We have the selte same spirit of grace and prayer which the Apostles and all the Saints had, neither had they any Prerogative above us. We have the same gifts which they had, the same *Christ*, baptisme, word, forgiveness of sins: All which they had no lesse need of then we have, and by the same are sanctified and saved, as we be.

Verse 12. For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles.

The *Gentiles* which were converted to the faith, did eat meats forbidden by the law, and *Peter* being conversant with the *Gentiles* which were converted, did eat with them, and drunke wine also which was forbidden, knowing that herein he did well, and therefore boldly transgressed the law with the *Gentiles*. *Paul* confesseth that he also did the like, when he saith, that he became as a Jew to the Jews; and to them that were without law, as though he were without law: That is to say, with the *Gentiles* he did eat and drinke like a *Gentile*, and kept no law at all: with the *Jews*, according to the law, he abstained from all things forbidden in the law: For he laboured to serve and please all men that he might gain all. Wherefore *Peter* in eating and drinking with the *Gentiles*, sinned not, but did well, and knew that it was lawfull for him so to do. For he shewed by this transgression, that the law was not necessary to righteousness, and also delivered the *Gentiles* from the observation of the law. For if it were lawfull for *Peter* in one thing to break the law, it was lawfull for him to break it in all things. And *Paul* doth not here reprove *Peter* for his transgression, but for his dissimulation, as followeth.

Peter lived with the *Gentiles* like a *Gentile*.

1 Cor 9. 19, 20 21.

Verse 12. But when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision.

Here then ye see *Peters* offence, as *Paul* plainly setteth it forth. *Paul* accuseth him not of malice or ignorance, but of dissimulation and infirmity, in that he abstained from meats forbidden in the law, fearing least the *Jews* which came from *James*, should be offended thereby, and had more respect to the *Jews* then to the *Gentiles*. Hereby he gave occasion, as much as in him was, to overthrow the Christian liberty and truth of the Gospel. For in that he did withdraw, and utterly separate himself, abstaining from meats forbidden in the law, (which notwithstanding he had eaten of before) he ministred a scruple of conscience to the faithfull, thus to gather upon his example: *Peter* abstaineth from meats forbidden in the law: therefore he that eateth meats forbidden in the law, sinneth and transgresseth the law: but he that abstaineth is righteous and keepes the law, for els would not *Peter* have withdrawne himselfe.

The offence of *Peter*.

What the believing Jews gathered of *Peter* abstaining.

BUT

But because he did so, and of purpose refused those meats which before he did eat, it is a sure argument that such as eat against the law do sin, and such as abstain from meats which the law forbiddeth, do keep the law and are justified therby.

The fact is
one thing &
the end ther-
of is another

Here note, that the end of this fact of *Peter* is reprov'd of *Paul*, and not the fact it selfe: for the fact in it self was not evill. To eat and drinke, or not to eat and drink is nothing: but the end, that is: If thou eat, thou sinnest: if thou abstain thou art righteous, is evill. So circumcision of it self is good, but this end is evill: If thou be not circumcised after the law of *Moses*, thou canst not be saved. Also to eat meats prohibited in the law, is not evill: but this shrinking and dissimulation of *Peter* is evill. For it might be said: *Peter* abstaineth from meats forbidden in the law, wherefore if thou dost not likewise abstain, thou canst not be saved. This *Paul* might in no wise dissemble: for the truth of the Gospell was here in danger. To the end therefore that this truth might continue sound and uncorrupt, he resisted *Peter* to his face.

Meats may
be refused
two manner
of wayes.
1 Cor 9.

And here we must make a distinction. For meats may be refused 2 manner of wayes. First, for Christian charities sake. And herein there is no danger: for to beare with the infirmity of my brother it is good. So *Paul* himselfe both did and taught. Secondly, by abstaining from them to obtain righteousness, and for not abstaining, to sin and to be damned. Here accursed be charity with all the service and works of charity, whatsoever. For thus to refrain from meats, is to deny Christ, to tread his body under our feet; to blaspheme the holy Ghost, and to despise all holy things. Wherefore if we must lose the one, let us rather lose man our friend and brother, then God our Father. For if we lose God our Father, man our friend and brother cannot continue.

The dissimu-
lation of Pe-
ter.

Jerome, who neither understood this place nor the whole Epistle besides, thinketh this to be but a fained reprehension of *Paul*, and therefore he excuseth *Peters* fall, saying, that it was done by ignorance. But *Peter* offended through dissimulation, and thereby had established the necessity of the law, had constrained both *Gentiles* and *Jewes* to revolt from the truth of the Gospell, had given them great occasion to forsake Christ, to despise grace, to returne to the Jewish Religion, and to beare all the burdens of the law, if *Paul* had not reprov'd him, and by that meanes revoked the *Gentiles* and *Jewes* which were offended through this example of *Peter*.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Peters dissi-
mulation.

Dissimulati-
on what it is

Here you may plainly see that *Paul* chargeth *Peter* with dissimulation. If *Peter* dissembled, then did he, certainly, know what was the truth and what was not. He that dissembleth knoweth not of ignorance, but deceiveth by a colour which he knoweth himselfe to be false. And others (saith he) dissembled likewise with *Peter*, insomuch that *Barnabas* also (who was *Pauls* companion, and had now a long time preached among the Gentile, faith in Christ without the law, together with *Paul*) was brought into their dissimulation. Ye have here then *Peters* offence plainly described to be mere dissimulation, which afterwards had bin an occasion of the ruine of the Gospell, then newly received, if *Paul* had not resisted him.

And this is a wonderfull matter, that God preserved the Church, being yet but young, and the Gospell it self, by one only person. *Paul* alone standeth to the truth: for he had lost *Barnabas* his companion, & *Peter* was against him. So sometime one man is able to do more in a Council than the whole Council besides: which thing the Papists themselves do witness: and for example they alledge * *Paphnutius* who withstood the whole Council of *Nice* (which was the best of all that were after the Council of the Apostles at *Ierusalē*) and overcame it.

* *Paphnutius* stood in the defence of the marriage of Ministers against the whole Council.

* The law & the Gospell must be discerned one from the other. The law and reason are against faith.

This I say, to the end, that we should diligently learne the article of justification, and make a plaine difference betweene the * law and the Gospell, and that in this matter we should doe nothing by dissimulation, or give place to any man, if we will retaine the truth of the Gospell and faith sound and uncorrupt: which, as I have said, are soone hurt. Wherefore in this case away with reason, which is an enemy to faith: which also in tentations of sin and death, leaneth not to the righteousness of faith (for thereof it is utterly ignorant) but to her own righteousness, or at the least, to the righteousness of the law. Now, as soone as the law and reason joyne together, faith looseth her virginity: for nothing fighteth more strongly against faith than the law & reason. And these two enemies cannot be conquered but with great labour and difficultie: which we must conquer notwithstanding, if we will be saved.

What we must doe when our conscience is terrified.

Wherefore, when thy conscience is terrified with the law, and wrastleth with the judgement of God, aske Counsell neither of reason nor of the law, but rest onely upon grace and the word of consolation, and so stand herein, as if thou hadst never heard any thing of the law, ascending up to the glasse of faith, where neither the law

law nor reason do shine, but onely the light of Faith, which assureth us that we are saved by Christ alone without any law. Thus the Gospell leadeth us beyond and above the light of the law and reason, into the deepe secrets of faith, where the law and reason have nothing to do. Notwithstanding we must hearken also unto the law, but in place and time. *Moses* whiles he was in the mountaine, where he talked with God face to face, had no law, made no law, ministred no law: but when he was come down from the mountain, he was a law-giver, and governed the people by the law. So the conscience must be free from the law, but the body must be obedient to the law.

Moses in the mountaine was above the law: so in matters of faith wee must have nothing to do with the law.

Hereby it appeareth that *Paul* reproveth *Peter* for no light matter, but for the chiefest article of all Christian doctrine, which by *Peter's* dissimulation was in great danger. For *Barnabas* and the other Jewes dissembled together with him, which did all offend, not through ignorance or malice, but for feare of the Jewes: whereby their hearts were so blinded, that they did not see their sin. And certainly it is much to be marvelled, that such excellent men as *Peter*, *Barnabas* and others should so suddenly and so lightly fall, especially in that thing which they knew to be well done, and had also before taught unto others. It is a perilous thing, therefore to trust to our owne strength, be we never so holy, never so well learned, and although we think our selves never so sure of that we know: For in that wherof we think our selves most sure, we may erre & fall, & bring our selves and others into great danger. Let us, therefore diligently and with all humility exercise our selves in the study of the holy Scriptures, and let us heartily pray that we never loose the truth of the Gospell.

Wee must not trust in our owne strength.

Thus we see then that we are nothing with all our gifts, bee they never so great, except God assist us. When he leaveth us to our selves our wisdom and knowledge is nothing. For in the houre of temptation it may suddenly come to passe, that by the subtiltie of the devill, all the comfortable places of the Scripture shall be taken out of our sight, and such places onely as containe threatnings shall be set before our eyes, which shall oppresse us and utterly confound us. Let us learne therefore that if God withdraw his hand, we may soone be overthrowne, and let no man glory of his owne righteousness, wisdom and other gifts, but let him humble himselfe and pray with the Apostles: *Lord increase our faith.*

Without God we can do nothing.

Luke 17.5.

Verse 14. But when I saw that they went not the right way to the truth of the Gospell.

This is a wonderful example of such excellent men and pillars of the Church. There is none but Paul that hath his eyes open, and doth the offence of Peter, of Barnabas and the other Jewes which dissembled with Peter. On the other side, they do not see their own offence: nay, they rather think that they do well in bearing with the infirmity of the weak Jewes. Wherefore it was very necessary that Paul should reprove their offence and not dissemble it, and therefore hee accuseth Peter, Barnabas and other, that they went not the right way to the truth of Gospell; that is to say, they swarved from the truth of the Gospell. It is a great matter that Peter should be accused of Paul as one that was false from the truth of the Gospell. Hee could not be more grievously reprehended. Yet he suffered it patiently, and no doubt but he gladly acknowledged his offence: I said before, that many have the Gospell, but not the truth of the Gospell. So Paul saith here, that Peter, Barnabas and other of the Jewes went not the right way to the truth of the Gospell: that is to say, they had the Gospell, but they walked not uprightly according to the Gospell. For albeit they preached the Gospell; yet through their dissimulation (which could not stand with the truth of the Gospell) they established the law: but the establishing of the law is the abolishing of the Gospell. Who so then can rightly judge between the law and the Gospell, let him thank God, and know that he is a right Divine. In the time of temptation, I confesse that I my selfe doe not know how to doe it as I ought. Now the way to discern the one from the other, is to place the Gospell in heaven, and the Law on the earth: to call the righteousnesse of the Gospell heavenly, and the righteousnesse of the law earthly, and to put as great difference between the righteousnes of the Gospell and of the Law, as God hath made between heaven and earth, between light and darknesse, between day and night. Let the one be as the light and the day, and the other as the darknesse and the night. And would to God we could yet further seperate the one from the other. Wherefore if the question bee concerning the matter of faith or Conscience, let us utterly exclude the Law, and leave it on the earth: but if we have to doe with workes, then let us lighten the lanterne of workes and of the righteousnes of the Law.

in 2004

Peter know- ed not his error

2004

2004

The difference of the law and the Gospell ought most diligently to be learned.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



also confounded and mixed politicall and ecclesiasticall matters together: which is a devillish and hellish confusion.

The Gospell
a stranger in
temptations:
the Law a
continuall
guest.

The time of
the Gospell.
An object.

When we
must heare
the law.

This place touching the difference betweene the law and the Gospell, is very necessary to be knowne: for it containeth the summe of all Christian doctrine. Wherefore let all that love and feare God; diligently learne to discern the one from the other, not onely in words, but in deed and in practise, that is to say, in heart and conscience. For as touching the words, the distinction is easie: but in time of temptation thou shalt find the Gospell but as a stranger and a rare guest in thy conscience: but the law contrariwise thou shalt find a familiar and continuall dweller within thee: for reason hath the knowledge of the law naturally. Wherefore when thy conscience is terrified with sin, which the law uttereth and increaseth, then say thou: There is a time to die, and a time to live; there is a time to heare the law, and a time to despise the law: there is a time to heare the Gospell, and there is a time to be ignorant of the Gospell. Let the law now depart, and let the Gospell come: for there is now no time to heare the law, but the Gospell. But thou hast done no good: nay thou hast done wickedly, and hast grievously sinned. I grant: notwithstanding I have remission of all my sins for Christs sake. But out of the conflict of conscience, when externall duties must be done, there is no time to hearken to the Gospell: then must thou follow thy vocation, and the works thereof.

Verse 14. I said unto Peter openly: If thou being a Jew livest as the Gentiles and not as the Jewes, why constrainest thou the Gentiles to doe like the Jewes?

To live like
the Jewes.

That is to wit, thou art a Jew, and therefore thou art bound to live like a Jew, that is, to abstaine from meates forbidden in the law. Notwithstanding thou livest like a Gentile: that is to say, thou doest contrary to the law, and transgresseth the law. For as a Gentile which is free from the law, thou eatest common and uncleane meates, and therein thou doest well. But in that thou being afraid at the presence of the brethren converted from the Jewish religion, abstainest from meates forbidden in the law, and keepest the law, thou compellest the Jewes likewise to keepe the law: that is, thou constrainest them of necessity to observe the law. For in that thou abstainest from prophane meates, thou givest occasion to the Gentiles thus to thinke: *Peter* abstaineth from those meates which the Gen-
tiles

tiles use to eate, which he also himselfe before did eate: therefore we ought likewise to avoid the same, and to live after the manner of the Jews: otherwise we cannot be justified or saved. We see then that *Paul* reproveth not ignorance in *Peter* (for he knew that he might freely eate with the Gentiles all manner of meats) but dissimulation, whereby he compelleth the Gentiles to live like the Jewes.

Peter through his dissimulation, compelled the Gentiles to live like the Jewes.

Here I say againe, that to live as the Jew, is not evill of it selfe, for it is a thing indifferent either to eate Swines flesh, or any other meates. But so to play the Jew, that for conscience sake thou abstainest from certaine meates, this is to deny Christ and to overthrow the Gospell. Therefore when *Paul* saw that *Peters* act tended to this end, he withstood him and said: Thou knowest that the keeping of the law is not necessary to righteousnesse, but that we are justified onely through faith in Christ, and therefore thou keepest not the law, but transgressesst the law and eatest all manner of meats. Notwithstanding by thy example thou constrainest the Gentiles to forsake Christ, and to returne to the law. For thou givest them occasion thus to thinke: Faith only is not sufficient to righteousnesse, but the law and works are also required. And this *Peter* teacheth us by his example. Therefore the observation of the law must needs be joyned with faith in Christ, if we will be saved. Wherefore *Peter* by his example is not only prejudiciall to the purity of doctrine, but also to the truth of faith and Christian righteousnesse. For the Gentiles received this of him, that the keeping of the law was necessary to righteousnesse: which error in case it be admitted, then doth Christ profit us nothing at all.

Things indifferent may not clog mens consciences.

Peters error.

Hereby it plainly appeareth to what end this discord betweene *Paul* and *Peter* tendeth. *Paul* doth nothing by dissimulation, but dealeth sincerely and goeth plainly to worke, *Peter* dissembleth, but his dissimulation *Paul* reproveth. The controversie was for the maintenance of pure doctrine, and the verity of the Gospell: and in this quarell *Paul* did not care for the offence of any. In this case all people and nations, all Kings and Princes, all Judges and Magistrates ought to give place. Since then it is so dangerous a thing to have to doe with the law, and that this fall was so sudden and so great as if it had beene from Heaven above, even downe into hell, let every Christian diligently learne to discern betweene the Law and the Gospell. Let them suffer the law to rule over the body and members thereof, but not over the conscience. For the Queene and spouse

Liberty of
conscience.

may not be defiled with the law, but must be kept without spot for her only husband Christ, as *Paul* saith, 2 *Cor.* 11. *I have espoused you to one husband, &c.* Let the conscience then have her bride-chamber, not in the low valley, but in the high mountaine: in the which let Christ lie and there rule and reigne, who doth not terrifie and afflict sinners, but comforteth them, pardoneth their sins and saveth them.

What an af-
flicted con-
science ought
to behold.

Wherefore let the afflicted conscience think upon nothing, know nothing, set nothing against the judgement of God, but the word of Christ, which is the word of grace, of remission of sins, of salvation and everlasting life. But this to performe in deed, is a hard matter. For mans reason and nature cannot stedfastly cleave unto Christ, but oftentimes it is carried away with the cogitations of the law and sin, and so alwayes seeketh to be at liberty after the flesh, but according to conscience a servant and a slave.

Vers 15. *Wee which are Jewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles.*

The prerogative of
the Jewes.

Gen. 17. 10.

That is to say, we are borne unto the righteousness of the law, to *Moses*, and to circumcision, and even in our birth we bring the law with us. We have the righteousness of the law by nature, as *Paul* before saith of himselfe in the first Chapter: *Being zealous of the traditions of the fathers.* Wherefore if we be compared to the Gentiles, we are no sinners: we are not without the law and without works like unto the Gentiles: but we are Jewes borne, we are borne righteous and brought up in righteousness. Our righteousness beginneth even with our birth, for the Jewish religion is naturall unto us. For God commanded *Abraham* to circumcise every man child the eight day. This law of circumcision received from the fathers, *Moses* afterward confirmed. It is a great matter therefore that we are Jewes by nature. Notwithstanding, although we have this prerogative, that we are righteous by nature, borne to the law and the works thereof, and are not sinners as the Gentiles, yet are we not therefore righteous before God.

Hereby it is evident that *Paul* speaketh not of ceremonies, or of the ceremoniall law, as some doe affirme, but of a farre weightier matter, namely of the nativity of the Jewes whom he denieth to be righteous, although they be borne holy, be circumcised, keepe the law, have the adoption, the glory, the covenant, the fathers,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

both one) he speaketh generally of the whole law, setting the righteousnesse of faith, against the righteousnesse of the whole law. For by the righteousnesse of the law (saith he) a man is not pronounced righteous before God: but the righteousnes of faith God imputeth freely through grace, for Christs sake. The law (no doubt) is holy, righteous and good, and consequently the works of the law are holy, righteous and good, yet notwithstanding a man is not justified thereby before God.

Workes done before and after justification.

Cicero, Pomponius, Atticus.

1 Cor 4 4. Paul intreateth of the whole law.

Now, the works of the law may be done either before justification or after. There were many good men even among the Pagans, as *Xenophon, Aristides, Fabius, Cicero, Pomponius, Atticus*, and others, which before justification performed the deeds of the law, and did notable works. *Cicero* suffered death valiantly in a good and just cause. *Pomponius* was a constant man, and loved truth, for he never made lye himselfe, nor could suffer the same in any other. Now, constancy and truth are noble virtues and excellent works of the law, and yet were they not justified thereby. After justification, *Peter, Paul*, and all other Christians have done and doe the works of the law, and yet are they not justified thereby. *I know not my selfe guilty in anything (saith Paul) and yet am I not thereby justified.* We see then, that he speaketh not of any part of the law, but of the whole law, and all the works thereof.

The Divinity of the Popish Sophisters, commonly called the Schoolemen.

The Papists divinity.

Merit of congruence before grace which God of very equity must reward.

Merit of worthinesse after grace, which of right and duty deserveth everlast life.

WHEREFORE the wicked and pernicious opinion of the Papists, is utterly to be condemned, which attribute the merit of grace and remission of sinnes to the worke wrought. For they say that a good worke before grace, is able to obtaine grace of Congruence (which they call *meritum de Congruo*,) because it is meete that God should reward such a worke. But when grace is obtained, the work following deserveth everlasting life of due debt and worthinesse, which they call *meritum de Condigno*. As for example: If a man being in deadly sinne, without grace, doe a good worke of his owne good naturall inclination: that is, if he say or heare a Masse, or give almes, and such like, this man of congruence deserveth grace. When he hath thus obtained grace, he doth now a worke which of worthinesse deserveth everlasting life. For the first, God

God is no debter: but because he is just and good, it behoveth him to approve such a good worke though it be done in deadly sin, and to give grace for such a service. But when grāce is obtained, God is become a debter, and is constrained of right and duty to give eternall life. For now it is not only a worke of Free-will, done according to the substance, but also done in grace, which maketh a man acceptable unto God, that is to say, in charity.

This is the Divinity of the Antichristian kingdome: which here I recite to the end that the disputation of *Paul* may be the better understood (for too contrary things being set together may be the better known:) and moreover that all men may see how far from the truth these blind guides, and leaders of the blind have wandred, and how by this wicked and blasphemous doctrine they have not only darkened the Gospell, but have taken it cleane away, and buried Christ utterly. For if I being in deadly sin can doe any little worke which is not only acceptable in Gods sight of it selfe, and according to the substance, but also is able to deserve grace of congruence, and when I have received Grace, I may doe works according to grace, that is to say, according to charity, and get of right and duty eternall life, what need have I now of the grace of God, for forgiveness of sins, of the promise, and of the death and victory of Christ? Christ is now to me unprofitable, and his benefit of none effect: For I have Free-will and power to doe good works, whereby I deserve grace of congruence, and afterwards by the worthinesse of my worke, eternall life.

Such monstrous and horrible blasphemies should have beene set forth to the *Turkes* and *Jewes*, and not to the Church of Christ. And hereby it plainly appeareth that the Pope with his Bishops, Doctors, Priests, and all his religious rabble, had no knowledge or regard of holy matters, and that they were not carefull for the health of the silly and miserable scattered flock. For if they had seene, but as it were through a cloud, what *Paul* calleth sinne, and what he calleth grace, they would never have compelled the people to beleve such abominations and execrable lyes. By deadly sin they understood onely the externall worke committed against the law, as murder, theft, and such like. They could not see, that ignorance, hatred, & contempt of God in the heart, ingratitude, murmuring against God, and resisting the will of God, are also deadly sinne, and that the

The doctrine of the Papists blasphemous against Christ and his righteousness.

What the Papists call deadly sin.

Chap. II.

Vpon the EPISTLE

flesh cannot think, speak, or doe any thing, but that which is devillish & altogether against God. If they had seen these mischiefs fast rooted in the nature of man, they would never have devised such impudent & execrable dreams touching the desert of congruence and worthines.

A description of a deadly sinner.

Wherefore we must properly and plainly define what a wicked man or a deadly sinner is. He is such a holy and a bloody hypocrite as *Paul* was when he went to *Damascus*, to persecute *Jesus of Nazareth*, to abolish the doctrine of the Gospell, to murder the faithfull, and utterly to overthrow the Church of Christ. And who will not say but that these were horrible sinnes? Yet could not *Paul* see them. For he was so blinded with a perverse zeale of God, that he thought these abominations to be perfect righteousness and high service unto God: and shall we say that such as defend these horrible sins to be perfect righteousness, doe deserve grace?

Desert of congruence and worthines, a vaine and foolish toy. The ground of the whole Popedom.

Wherefore with *Paul*, we utterly deny the merit of congruence and worthines, and affirme that these speculations are nothing else but meere deceits of Satan, which were never done indeed, nor notified by any examples. For God never gave to any man grace and everlasting life for the merit of congruence or worthinesse. These disputations therefore of the Schoolemen touching the merit of congruence and worthines, are nothing else but vaine toies and dreames of idle braines, to no other end and purpose but to draw men from the true worship of God. And hereupon is the whole papacie grounded. For there is no religious person, but he hath this imagination: I am able by the observation of my holy Order to deserve grace of congruence, and by the works which I doe after that I have received this grace, I am able to heape up such treasure of merit, as shall not only be sufficient for me to obtaine eternall life, but also to give or sell unto others. Thus have all the religious Orders taught, and thus have they lived. And to defend this horrible blasphemy against Christ, the Papists doe at this day attempt against us what they can. And there is not one of them all, but the more holy hypocrite and merit-monger he is, the more cruell and deadly enemy he is to the Gospell of Christ.

The true Way to Christianity:

The first part of true Christianity, is

NOW the true way to Christianity, is this, that a man doe first acknowledge himselfe by the law; to be a sinner, and that it is impos-

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



fed by such as were never exercised with any tentations, never had any true feeling of sin or of the terrour of death, and therefore they know not what they say, or what they teach. Moreover, they can shew no example of any worke done either before or after grace that could justifie before God. Wherefore they are nothing else but vaine toys and foolish fables, whereby the Papists deceive both themselves and other. For *Paul* here plainly affirmeth, that no man is justified by the works of the law, either going before grace (wherof he speaketh in this place) or coming after grace. You see then that Christian righteousness is not such an essential quality ingrafted in the nature of man, as the Schoolemen do imagine when they say :

(*The divinitie of the Schoolemen.*)

WHEN a man doth any good worke, God accepteth it, and for that work he powreth into him charity, which they call charity infused: this charity (say they) is a quality remaining in the heart, and this they call formall righteousness (which manner of speaking it is expedient for you to know) & they can abide nothing less than to heare that this qualitie of forming and adorning the soule, as whitnesse doth the wall, should not be counted righteousness. They can clime no higher than to this cogitation of mans reason, that man is righteous by his owne formall righteousness, which is grace making him acceptable unto God, that is to say charity. So to this quality cleaving unto the soule, that is to wit, charitie (which is a worke after the law, for the law saith: *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, &c.*) They attribute formall righteousness, that is to say, true Christian righteousness, and they say that this righteousness is worthy of everlasting life, and he that hath it, is formally righteous, and moreover hee is effectually or actually, righteous, because hee now doth good workes, whereunto everlasting life is due. This is the opinion of the Popish Schoolemen, yea even of the best of them all.

The Papists take their formall righteousness, which they call charity, to be that grace, whereby wee are made acceptable unto God.

Scotus and Occam doctors of helish darkness.

Some other there be which are not so good as *Scotus* and *Occam*, which said, that for the obtaining of the grace of God, this charity infused or given of God, is not necessary: but that a man even by his owne naturall strength, may procure this charitie above all things. For so reasoneth *Scotus*: If a man may love a creature, a young man a maiden, a covetous man money, which are the
lesse

lesse good, he may also love God which is the greater good. If he have a love of the creature through his naturall strength, much more hath he a love to the Creator. With this argument were all the Sophisters convicted, and none of them all was able to refute it. Notwithstanding thus they reply.

The Scripture compelleth us to confesse (say they) that God, besides that naturall love and charity which is ingrafted in us (where-with alone he is not contented) requireth also charity, which he himselfe giveth. And hereby they accuse God as a tyrant and a cruell exactor, who is not content that wee keep and fulfill his law, but above the law (which we our selves are able to fulfill) requireth also, that we should accomplish it with other circumstance and furniture, as apparell to the same. As if a Mistresse should not bee contented that her Cooke had dressed her meat excellently well, but should chide her for that she did not prepare the same, being decked with precious apparrell, and adorned with a crowne of gold. Now what a Mistris were this, who when her Cooke had done all that she was bound to doe, and also exactly performed the same, would moreover require that she should weare such ornaments as she could not have? Even so, what a one should God be if he should require his law to be fulfilled of us (which notwithstanding by our own natural strength we observe and fulfill) with such furniture as we cannot have?

But here lest they should seeme to avouch contrary things, they make a distinction and say, that the law is fulfilled two manner of waies: first according to the substance of the deed, and secondly according to the mind of the Commander. According to the substance of the deed (say they) we may fulfill all things which the law commandeth, but not according to the minde of the Commander, which is that God is not contented that thou hast done all things which are commanded in the law (although he can require no more of thee) but he further requireth, that thou shouldst fulfill the law in charity: not that charity which thou hast by nature; but that which is above nature and heavenly, which bee himselfe giveth. And what is this els but to make of God a tyrant and a tormentor, which requireth that of us which we are not able to performe? And it is in a manner as much as if they should say, that the fault is not in us if we be damned, but in God, which with this circumstance requireth his law to be accomplished of us.

The blasphemous doctrine of the Schoolmen, which dreame, that besides that strength which they say we have of our selves to fulfill the law, and is sufficient to salvation, God requireth yet a farther perfect on in us which wee cannot have

The law fulfilled two manner of wayes (say the Paiples) according to the substance of the deed, and according to the mind of the commander

These.

Chap II.

Vpon the E P I S T L E

These things I doe the more diligently repeat, that you may see how far they have strayed from the true sence of the Scripture, which have said that by our owne naturall strength wee may love God above all things, or at least, by the worke wrought we may deserve grace and everlasting life. And because God is not content that wee fulfill the law according to the substance of the deed, but will have us also to fulfill the same according to the mind of the commandment. Therefore the Scripture further compelleth us to have a quality above nature poured into us from above, and that is charity; which they call formall righteousnesse, adorning and beautifying faith, being also the cause that faith justifieth us. So faith is the body, and the shell: charity the life, the kernell, the forme and furniture. These are the monstrous dreames of the Schoolemen.

But we in the stead of this charity do place faith, and we say that faith apprehendeth Iesus Christ, who is the forme which adorneth and furnisheth faith, as the colour adorneth and beautifieth the wall. Christian faith therefore is not an idle quality or empty huske in the heart, which may be in deadly sin untill charity come and quicken it: but if it be true faith, it is a sure trust and confidence of the heart, and a firme consent whereby Christ is apprehended: So that Christ is the object of faith, yea rather even in faith Christ himselfe is present. Faith therefore is a certaine obscure knowledge, or rather darknesse which seeth nothing, and yet Christ apprehended by faith, sitteth in this darknesse: like as God in *Sinai* and in the Temple late in the midst of darknesse. Wherefore our formall righteousnesse is not charity furnishing and beautifying faith, but it is faith it selfe, which is as it were, a certain cloud in our hearts: that is to say, a stedfast trust and affiance in the thing which we see not, which is Christ: who although he be not seene at all, yet is he present.

Faith therefore justifieth, because it appprehendeth and possesseth this treasure, even Christ present. But this presence cannot be comprehended of us, because it is in darknes, as I have said. Wherefore, where assured trust and affiance of the heart is, there Christ is present, yea even in the cloud and obscurity of faith. And this is the true formall righteousnesse, whereby a man is justified, and not by charity, as the Popish Schoolemen do most wickedly affirme. To conclude, like as the Schoolemen say that charity furnisheth and adorneth faith: so do we say that it is Christ which furnisheth

Christian faith.

Christ is the object which faith beholdeth and looketh unto.

*Exo. 19.9. 1. Reg. 8.10. True formall and Christi- an righte- ousnesse.

How Christ is present in faith, mans heart cannot compre- hend

and

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY
BIBLE**

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

sinnes. If thou feele thy sinnes and the burden thereof, looke not upon them in thy selfe, but remember that they are translated and laid upon Christ, whose stripes have made thee whole, *Esa.* 53. 5.

This is the beginning of health and salvation. By this meanes we are delivered from sin, justified and made inheritours of everlasting life: not for our own works and deserts, but for our faith, whereby we lay hold upon Christ. Wherefore we also doe acknowledge a quality and a formall righteousness: in the heart: not charity (as the Sophisters doe) but faith, and yet so notwithstanding, that the heart must behold and apprehend nothing but Christ the Saviour. And here it is necessary that you know the true definition of Christ. The Schoole-men being utterly ignorant hereof, have made Christ a judge and a tormentour, devising this fond fantasie concerning the merit of congruence and worthinesse.

Christ is no
law-giver.

Rem. 3. & 4.

But Christ, according to his true definition, is no law-giver, but a forgiver of sinnes, and a Saviour. This doth faith apprehend and undoubtedly beleve, that he hath wrought works and merits of congruence and worthinesse before and after grace abundantly. For he might have satisfied for all the sins of the world by one only drop of his blood: but now he hath shed it plentifully, and hath satisfied abundantly. *Heb. 9.* By his owne blood hath hee entred into the holy place once for all, and obtained eternall redemption. Also, *Rom. 3.* And we are justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus, whom God hath set forth to be a reconciliation unto us, through faith in his blood. Wherefore it is a great matter, by faith to lay hold upon Christ bearing the sinnes of the world. And this faith alone is counted for righteousness.

Christ.
Faith
Imputation.

Here is to be noted, that these three things, faith, Christ, acceptance or imputation, must be joyned together. Faith taketh hold of Christ, and hath him present, and holdeth him inclosed, as the ring doth the precious stone. And whosoever shall be found having this confidence in Christ apprehended in the heart, him will God account for righteous. This is the meane, and this is the merit whereby we attaine the remission of sinnes and righteousness: Because thou beleevest in me, saith the Lord, and thy faith layeth hold upon Christ, whom I have freely given unto thee that he might be thy Mediatour and high Priest, therefore be thou justified and righteous.

ous. Wherefore God doth accept or account us as righteous, only for our faith in Christ.

Imputation necessary.

And this acceptation or imputation is very necessary: first, because we are not yet perfectly righteous; but whiles we remaine in this life, sin dwelleth still in our flesh: and this remnant of sin God purgeth in us. Moreover we are sometimes left of the holy Ghost and fall into sins, as did Peter, David and other holy men. Notwithstanding we have alwayes recourse to this article: that our sins are covered, and that God will not lay them to our charge, *Psal. 32. & Rom 4.* Not that sin is not in us (as the Papists have taught, saying, that we must be alwayes working well until we feele that there is, no guilt of sin remaining in us;) yea sin is in deed alwayes in us, and the godly doe feele it, but it is covered and is not imputed unto us of God for Christs sake: whom because we doe apprehend by faith, all our sins are now no sins. But where Christ and faith be not, there is no remission or covering of sins, but meere imputation of sins and condemnation. Thus will God glorifie his Son, and will be glorified himselfe in us through him.

They that beleefe in Christ, shall not be charged with their sins.

When we have thus taught faith in Christ, then doe we teach also good works. Because thou hast layed hold upon Christ, by Faith, through whom thou art made righteous. Begin now to work well. Love God and thy neighbour, call upon God, give thanks unto him, praise him, confesse him: These are good works indeed, which flow out of this faith and this cheerefulnesse conceived in the heart; for that we have remission of sins freely by Christ.

The doctrine of good works must be taught after the doctrine of faith.

Now, what crosse or affliction soever doe afterwards insue, they are easily borne, and cheerefully suffered. For the yoke that Christ layeth upon us, is sweet, and his burden is easie. When sin is pardoned, and the conscience delivered from the burden and sting of sin, then may a Christian beare all things easily. Because he feeleth all things within sweet and comfortable, therefore he doth and suffereth all things willingly. But when a man walketh in his own righteousness, whatsoever he doth is grievous and tedious unto him, because he doth it unwillingly.

The Crosse. Mat. 11. 30.

no man can be a Christian.

We therefore doe make this definition of a Christian, that a Christian is not he which hath no sin, but he to whom God imputeth not his sin, through faith in Christ. This doctrine bringeth great consolation to poore afflicted consciences in serious and inward

who is a right Christian.

Chap. II.

Upon the EPISTLE

terrors. It is not without good cause therefore that we doe so often repeat and beat into your minds the forgivenesse of finnes and imputation of righteousnesse for Christs sake: also that a Christian hath nothing to do with the law and sinne, specially in the time of temptation. For in that he is a Christian, he is above the law and sinne. For he hath Christ the Lord of the law present and inclosed in his heart (as we have said) even as a ring hath a jewell or precious stone inclosed in it. Therefore when the law accuseth and sin terrifieth him, he looketh upon Christ, and when he hath apprehended him by faith, he hath present with him the Conquerour of the law, sin, death, and the Devill: who reigneth and ruleth over them, so that they cannot hurt him. Wherefore a Christian man, if ye define him rightly, is free from all laws; and is not subject unto any creature, either within or without: in that he is a Christian (I say:) and not in that he is a man or a woman, that is to say, in that he hath his conscience adorned and beautified with this faith, with this great and inestimable treasure, or (as Paul saith) this *unspeakable gift*: which cannot be magnified and praised enough, for it makes us the children and heires of God. And by this meanes a Christian is greater then the whole world. For he hath such a gift, such a treasure in his heart, that although it seemeth to be but little, yet notwithstanding the smallnesse thereof is greater then Heaven and earth, because Christ which is this gift is greater.

Christians
are judges
of all kinds
of doctrine

The doctrine
of the Pope.

Whiles this Doctrine pacifying and quieting the conscience, remaineth pure and uncorrupt, Christians are made Judges over all kinds of Doctrine; and are Lords over the lawes of the whole World. Then can they certainly judge that the Turke with his Alcoran is damned, because he goeth not the right way, that is, he acknowledgeth not himselfe to be miserable and damnable; nor apprehendeth Christ by faith; for whose sake he might be assured that his finnes are pardoned. In like manner they boldly pronounce sentence against the Pope, that he is condemned with all his Kingdomes, because he so walketh and so teacheth (with all his religious rabble of Sophisters and Schoole-men,) that by the merit of congruence we must come to grace; and that afterward by the merit of worthinesse we are received into Heaven. Here saith the Christian, this is not the right way to justifie us, neither doth this way lead us to Heaven. For I cannot (saith he) by my workes going before

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Chap. II. Upon the EPISTLE

The true use
of the Com-
munion ta-
ken away by
the Pope.

Christ, even so and no lesse abominable are these prophanations of the
Papists. Wherefore they ought not to be lightly esteemed or forgot-
ten, but diligently weighed and considered. And this maketh very
much also for the amplifying of the grace of God, and benefit of
Christ, as by the contrary. For the more we know the prophanation
of the Papisticall Masse, so much the more we abhorre and detest the
same, and embrace the true use of the holy Communion, which the
Pope hath taken away, and hath made merchandise thereof, that being
bought for mony, it might profit others. For he saith that the massing
Priest, an Apostata, denying Christ and blaspheming the holy Ghost,
standing at the Altar, doth a good work, not only for himself, but al-
so for others both quick and dead, and for the whole Church, and that
only by the work wrought, and by no other means. *(act dicit)*
Wherefore even by this we may plainly see the inestimable pati-
ence of God, in that he hath not long ago destroyed the whole PAPA-
cy; and consumed it with fire and brimstone, as he did *Sodom* and *Gom-
morrah*. But now these jolly fellows go about, not only to cover, but
highly to advance their impiety and filthines. This we may in no case
dissemble. We must therefore with all diligence set forth the article of
justification, that as a most cleare Sun, it may bring to light the dark-
nes of their hypocrisie, and discover their filthines and shame. For
this cause we do so often repeat, and so earnestly set forth the righte-
ousnes of faith, that the adversaries may be confounded, and this ar-
ticle established and confirmed in our hearts. And this is a most ne-
cessary thing; for if we once loose this Sun, we fall again into our for-
mer darknes. And most horrible it is that the Pope should ever be able
to bring this to passe in the Church, that Christ should be denied, tro-
den under foot, spit upon, blasphemed, yea, and that even by the Gos-
pell and Sacraments: which he hath so darkned, and hath turned into
such an horrible abuse, that he hath made them to serve him against
Christ, for the stablishing and confirming of his detestable abomina-
tions. O deep darknes, O horrible wrath of God!

The horrible
abuse of the
Gospell and
Sacraments
in the Pope-
dome.

*Verse 16. Even we, I say, have beleevd in Jesus Christ, that we might be
justified.*

This is the true meane to become a Christian, even to be justifi-
ed by faith in Jesus Christ, and not by the works of the law. Here
we must stand not upon the wicked glosse of the Schoolmen, which
say

say that faith then justifieth; when charity and good works are joy-
ned withall. With this pestilent glosse the Sophisters have darkned
and corrupted this and other like sentences in *Paul*, wherein he ma-
nifestly attributeth justification to faith only in Christ. But when a
man heareth that he ought to believe in Christ, and yet not withstan-
ding faith justifieth not except it be formed and furnished with cha-
rity, by and by he falleth from faith, and thus he thinketh: if faith
without charity justifieth not, then is faith in vain and unprofitable,
and charity alone justifieth: for except faith be formed with charity,
it is nothing.

The School-
mens glosse
is wicked,
which saith,
that faith a-
dorned with
charity justifi-
fieth.

And to confirm this pernicious and pestilent glosse, the adversaries
do alledge this place, *1 Cor. 13. Though I speake with the tongues of men
and Angels, and have no love, I am nothing.* And this place is their bra-
sen wall. But they are men without understanding, and therefore they
can see or understand nothing in *Paul*: and by this false interpretation
they have not only perverted the words of *Paul*, but have also denied
Christ, and buried all his benefits: wherefore we must avoid this glosse
as a most deadly and devillish poyson, and conclude with *Paul*, that
we are justified, not by faith furnished with charity, but by faith only
and alone.

Re 1 60 2

Who d 15 2
ed d 21 141
1 10 1 1 2
1 d 1 5 1 1 1

1 1 1 1 1 1 1
Faith iustifi-
eth without
the law.

We grant that we must teach also good works and charity, but it
must be done in time and place; that is to say, when the question is
concerning works, and toucheth not this article of justification. But
here the question is, by what means we are justified and attaine eter-
nall life. To this we answer with *Paul*, that by faith only in Christ we
are pronounced righteous, and not by their works of the law or chari-
ty: not because we reject good works, but that we will not suffer
our selves to be removed from this ankerhold of our salvation: which
Satan most desireth. Wherefore since we are now in the matter of ju-
stification, we reject and condemn all good works: for this place wil
admit no disputation of good works. In this matter therefore we do
generally cut off all laws and all the works of the law.

The doctrine
of good works is not
to be negle-
cted.

1 1 1 1 1 1 1
1 1 1 1 1 1 1

But the law is good, just and holy. True it is. But when we are in
the matter of justification, there is no time or place to speake of the
law: but the question is, what Christ is, and what benefit he hath
brought unto us. Christ is not the law, he is not my worke, or
the worke of the law, he is not my charity, my obedience, my
poverty, but he is the Lord of life and death, a Mediatour, a Savi-
our,

An obiectio-
1 1 1 1 1 1 1
1 1 1 1 1 1 1
1 1 1 1 1 1 1
1 1 1 1 1 1 1

Christ

our redeemer of those that are under the law and sin, in him we are by faith, and he in us. This bridegroom must be alone with the bride in his secret chamber, all the servants and family being put apart. But afterwards, when the dore is open and he cometh forth, then let the servants and hand-maidens return, to minister unto them: then let charity do her office, and let good works be done.

We must learne therefore to discern all lawes, yea even the law of God, and all works, from the promise of the Gospell, and from faith, that we may define Christ rightly. For Christ is no law, and therefore he is no exactor of the law and works, but *he is the Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the world.* This doth faith alone lay hold of; and not charity, which notwithstanding, as a certain thankfulness must follow faith. Wherefore victory over sin and death, salvation and everlasting life come not by the law, nor by the works of the law, nor yet by the power of free-will, but by the Lord Jesus Christ only and alone.

Job. 1. 29.

Faith only
justifieth, be-
cause it only
taketh hold
of the bene-
fit of Christ.

Verse 16. That we might be justified by faith in Christ, and not by the works of the law.

Paul speaketh not here of the ceremoniall law onely (as before we have said) but of the whole law. For the ceremoniall law was as well the law of God as the morall law was. As for example, circumcision, the institution of the Priesthood, the service and ceremonies of the Temple, were as well commanded of God as the Com- mandements. Moreover, when *Abraham* was commanded to offer up his sonne *Isaac* in Sacrifice, it was a law. This work of *Abraham* pleased God no less than other workes of the ceremoniall law did and yet was he not justified by this work, but by faith: for the Scripture saith: *Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for righteousness.*

Paul speaketh of the whole law.

Gen. 15. 6.
Rom. 4. 3.

The law
shall not be
suffered to
reigne in the
conscience.

But since the revealing of Christ (say they) the ceremoniall law killeth and bringeth death. Yea, so doth the law of the ten Com- mandements also, without faith in Christ. Moreover, there may no law be suffered to raigne in the conscience, but onely the law of the spirit and life, whereby wee are made free in Christ from the law of the letter and of death, from the workes thereof, and from all sins: Not because the Law is evill, but for that it is not able to justify: for it hath a plaine contrary effect and working. It is an high

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

of refusing
to his owne
traditions
which Paul
taketh from
the law of
God.

nances of men, to the wicked traditions of the Pope, to the hypocri-
ticall works and merits of Monks and Friers, which *Paul* the Apo-
stle of Christ taketh from the law of God. For if no flesh be justified
by the works of the law, much lesse shall it be justified by the rule of
Benedict, Francis, or Augustine, in the which there is not one jot of
true faith in Christ: but this only they teach, that whosoever keepeth
these things hath life everlasting.

Who were
saved in the
kingdom of
the Pope.

Wherefore I have much and often marvelled, that these Sects of
perdition reigning so many years in so great darknes and errors, the
Church could indure and continue as it hath done. Some there were
whom God called by the Text of the Gospell and by baptisme. These
walked in simplicity and humblenes of heart, thinking the Monkes
and Friers, and such only as were annoited of the Bishops to be re-
ligious and holy, and themselves to be prophane and secular, and not
worthy to be compared unto them. Wherefore they finding in them-
selves no good works to set against the wrath and judgment of God,
did fly to the death and passion of Christ, and were saved in this
simplicity.

The Papists
prefer mans
traditions
before the
Gospell.

Horrible and unspeakable is the wrath of God, in that he hath so
long time punished the contempt of the Gospell and Christ in the
Papists, and also their ingratitude, in giving them over into a repro-
bate sence, insomuch that they blaspheming and denying Christ al-
together as touching his office, in stead of the Gospell received the ex-
ecrable rules, ordinances and traditions of men, which they devoutly
adored and honoured, yea, and preferred the same far above the word
of God, untill at length they were forbidden to marry, and were
bound to that incestuous single life: wherein they were outwardly
polluted and defiled with all kinds of horrible wickednes, as adultery,
whordome, uncleanes, Sodomitry, and such other abominations. This
was the fruit of that filthy single life.

1 Cor. 1. 31.

So God punishing sinne with sinne, inwardly gave them over un-
to a reprobate mind, and outwardly suffered them to fall into such
horrible abominations, and that justly, because they blasphemed the
only Sonne of God, in whom the Father would be glorified, and
whom he delivered to death, that all which beleve in him, might
be saved by him, and not by their owne execrable rules and or-
ders. *Him that honoureth me (saith he) I will honour.* Now, God
ishonoured in his Sonne: Who so then beleeveth that the Sonne is
our

our Mediator and Saviour, he honoureth the Father, and him againe doth. God honoureth that is to say, adorneh him with his gifts, forgiveness of sins, righteousness, the holy, Ghost, and everlasting life. Contrariwise, *They that despise me (saith he) shall be despised.*

This is then a generall conclusion: *By the deeds of the law no flesh shall be justified.* The law of God is greater then the whole world, for it, comprehendeth all men, and the works of the law, do far excell, even the most glorious will-works of all the merit-mongers: and yet *Paul* saith, that neither the law nor the works of the law do justify. Therefore we conclude with *Paul*, that faith only justifieth. This proposition he goeth about to confirm in this manner.

The dignity of the law.

Paul

first

17

Verse 17. If then while we seeke to be made righteous by Christ, we ourselves are found sinners, is Christ therefore the minister of sin? God forbid.

If this be true (saith he) that we are justified by Christ, then is it impossible that we should be sinners, or should be justified by the law. On the contrary, if this be not true, but that we must be justified by the law and the works of the law, it is then impossible that we should be justified by Christ. One of these two must needs be false. Either we are not justified by Christ, or we are not justified by the law. But the truth is that we are justified by Christ: therefore we are not justified by the law. He reasoneth therefore after this manner: *If then while we seeke to be made righteous by Christ, &c.* That is, if we seek to be justified by Christ, and so being justified are yet found sinners, having need of the law to justify us being sinners: If we have need (I say) of the observation of the law to justify us, so that they which are righteous in Christ are not righteous, but have yet need of the law to justify them: or if he that is justified by Christ must yet further be justified by the law, then is Christ nothing else but a law-giver, and a minister of sin. Therefore he that is justified and holy in Christ, is not justified or holy, but hath yet need of the righteousness and holiness of the law.

The first argument in defence of the righteousness of faith

But we are indeed justified and made righteous in Christ: For the truth of the Gospell teacheth us that a man is not justified in the law, but in Christ. Now, if they which are justified in Christ are yet found sinners, that is, doe yet still belong to the law, and

are

are under the law (as the false Apostles teach) then are they not yet justified. For the law accuseth them, and sheweth them to be yet sinners, and requireth of them the works of the law as necessary to their justification. Therefore they that are justified in Christ, are not justified: and so it followeth that Christ is not a justifier, but a minister of the law.

The iusticia-
ries make
Moses Christ,
and the law
grace.

With these words he vehemently chargeth the false Apostles and all merit-mongers, that they pervert all together: for they make of the law grace, and of grace, the law, of *Moses* Christ, and of Christ *Moses*. For they teach, that besides Christ and all the righteousness of Christ, the observation of the law is necessary to justification. And thus we see that by their intolerable perverseness, they make the law Christ: for by this means they attribute that to the law, which properly belongeth unto Christ. If thou do the workes of the law (say they) thou shalt be saved: but if thou do them not, thou shalt not be justified, although thou do believe in Christ never so much. Now if it be so that Christ justifieth not, but is the minister of sin (as it needs must follow by their doctrine) then is Christ the law: for we have nothing els of him (seeing he teacheth that we are sinners) than that we have by the law. So Christ being the minister of sin, sendeth us to the law and *Moses*, as to our justifier.

Mat. 19 17.

It cannot be therefore but that the Papists, and all such as are ignorant of the righteousness of Christ, or have not the true knowledge thereof, must needs make of Christ *Moses* and the law, and of the law Christ. For thus they teach: It is true (say they) that faith in Christ justifieth, but withall we must needs keep the commandments of God. For it is written, *If thou wilt enter into life, keepe the Commandments*. Here even at the first dash, Christ is denied and faith abolished, because that is attributed to the Commandments of God, or to the law, which belongeth to Christ alone. For Christ, according to his true definition, is a justifier and a redeemer from sinnes. If I attribute this to the law, then is the law my justifier; delivering me from my sinnes, because I doe the workes thereof: and so now the law is Christ, and Christ utterly looseth his name, his office and glory, and is nothing else but a minister of the law, reprooving, accusing, terrifying, presenting and sending the sinner to another that may justifie him: which is the proper office of the law.

But

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

law, and grace? Indeed they doe distinguish them in name, but in effect they call grace charity. Thus doe all they which so straightly require the observation of the law, and attribute justification to the law and works. Wherefore whosoever doth not perfectly understand the article of justification, must needs confound and mingle the law and grace together.

Let every man therefore diligently learne above all things, to put a difference between the law and grace in deed and in practise: not in words only, as the Pope and the fantastical Anabaptists doe: who as touching the words, do confesse that they are two distinct things: but in very deed (as I have said) they confound and mingle them together, for they will not grant that faith justifieth without works. If this be true then Christ profiteth me nothing. For though my faith be never so perfect, yet after their opinion, if this faith be without charity, I am not justified. And thus Christ apprehended by faith is not a justifier, grace profiteth nothing, neither can faith be true faith without charity.

They that say the law is necessary to righteousness, are like to the false Apostles.

Luk. 10. 28.
Mat 19. 7.

With this doctrine these lying spirits and sects of perdition doe darken and deface the benefit of Christ at this day: they take away from him the glory of a justifier, and make him a minister of sinne. They are in all things like to the false Apostles. For even as they throughout all the Churches did require circumcision and the observation of the law besides faith in Christ, insomuch that without circumcision and keeping of the law, they denied the justification of faith (for except ye be circumcised, said they, after the law of Moses, ye cannot be saved:) even so at this day these strait exactors of the law, besides the righteousness of faith, do require the keeping of the commandements of God, according to that saying: *Doe this and thou shalt live.* Also, *If thou wilt enter into life, keepe the commandments.* Wherefore there is not one among them be he never so wise, that understandeth the difference between the law and grace.

But we put a difference, and say, that we doe not here dispute whether we ought to doe good works: whether the law be good, holy, and just: whether it ought to be kept or no: for this is another manner of question. But our question is concerning justification, and whether the law doe justify or no. This the adversaries will not heare: they will not answer to this question; nor make any distinction as we doe: but only cry out, that good works ought to be done, that the law

law ought to be observed. We know that well enough. But because these are divers and distinct matters, we will not suffer them to be mingled together. That good works ought to be done, we will hereafter declare when time shall serve. But since we are now in the matter of justification, we set aside here all good works, for the which the adversaries doe so earnestly strive, ascribing unto them wholly the office of justifying: which is to take from Christ his glory, and to ascribe the same unto works.

Wherefore this is a strong argument, which I have oftentimes used to my great comfort: *If then while we seek to be made righteous by Christ, &c.* As though Paul should say: if we being justified by Christ, are counted yet as not justified and righteous, but as sinners which are yet to be justified by the law, then may we not seeke justification in Christ, but in the law. But if justification cometh by the law, then cometh it not by grace. Now if justification cometh not by grace, but by the law, what hath Christ done and wrought by his death, by his preaching, by his victory which he hath obtained over the law, sin and death, and by sending the holy Ghost? We must conclude therefore, that either we are justified by Christ, or else that we are made sinners, culpable and guilty through him. But if the law doe justify, then cannot it not be avoided, but needs it must follow, that we are made sinners through Christ, and so Christ is a minister of sin. The case standing thus, let us then set down this proposition. Every one that beleeveth in the Lord Jesus Christ is a sinner, and is guilty of eternall death, and if he flie not unto the law, doing the works thereof, he shall not be saved.

If righteous-
ness come
by the law
then is Christ
unprofitable.

The holy Scripture, especially the new Testament, maketh often mention of faith in Christ, and highly advanceth the same: which faith, that whosoever beleeveth in him, is saved, perisheth not, is not judged, is not confounded, hath eternall life, &c. But contrariwise they say, he that beleeveth in him is condemned, &c. because he hath faith without works, which doth condemne. Thus doe they pervert all things, making of Christ a destroyer and a murtherer, and of Moses a Saviour. And is not this an horrible blasphemy, so to teach, that by doing good works thou shalt be made worthy of eternall life: but by beleeving in Christ thou shalt be made culpable and guilty of eternall death? that the law being kept and accomplished saveth, and faith in Christ condemneth?

Faith in
Christ.

Job 3. 16.
Job 2. 24.

Faith infused.

The doctrine of the Papists.

The selfe same words (I grant) the adversaries doe not use: but in very deed such is their doctrine. For faith infused (say they) which properly they call faith in Christ, doth not make us free from sinne, but that faith which is furnished with charity. Hereof it followeth that faith in Christ without the law saveth us not. This is plainly to affirme that Christ leaveth us in our sins and in the wrath of God, and maketh us guilty of eternall death. On the other side, if thou keep the law and doe the works thereof, then faith justifieth thee, because it hath works, without the which faith availeth nothing. Therefore works justifie and not faith. O horrible impiety! What pernicious and cursed doctrine is this.

Joh. 16.

The Papists are touched.

Paul therefore groundeth his argument upon an impossibility, and a sufficient division. If we being justified in Christ are yet found sinners, and cannot be justified by another meane then by Christ, that is to wit, by the law, then cannot Christ justifie us, but he onely accuseth and condemneth us: and so consequently it followeth that Christ died in vaine, and that these with other like places are false: *Behold the Lambe of God that taketh away the sinnes of the World: Also: Hee that beleeveth in him hath everlasting life: yea the whole Scripture is false, which beareth witness that Christ is the justifier and Saviour of the world.* For if we be found sinners after that we be justified by Christ, it followeth of necessity that they which fulfill the law, are justified without Christ. If this be true, then are we either *Turks* or *Jenes*, or *Tartarians*, professing the name and word of God in outward shew, but in deed and verity utterly denying Christ and his word. It is great impiety therefore to affirm that faith, except it be formed with charity, justifieth not. But if the adversaries will needs defend this doctrine, why doe they not then reject faith in Christ altogether: especially seeing they make nothing else of it but a vaine quality in the soule, which without Christ availeth nothing? Why doe they not say in plaine words, that works doe justifie and not faith? yea, why doe they not generally deny, not onely *Paul*, but also the whole Gospell (as in very deed they doe) which attribute righteousness to works, and not to faith alone? For if faith and works together doe justifie, then is the disputation of *Paul* altogether false, which plainly pronounceth that a man is not justified by the deeds of the law, but by faith alone in *Jesus Christ*.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Deut 27 6.
Gal 3 10
The ministry
of the law
is the mini-
stery of sin

Exod 5.
The Scrip-
ture calleth
the teachers
of the law
exactors and
tyrants, bring-
ing mens
soules into
spirituall
slavery.

The history
of the publi-
shing of the
law in *Exod.*
19. 10.

The office
of the law.

according to that saying: *Cursed is hee that abideth not in all things that are written in this booke.* Therefore he that teacheth the law is a minister of the law.

Wherefore it is not without good cause that *Paul* in the *2 Cor. 3.* calleth the ministry of the law the ministry of sinne: For the law sheweth and uttereth sinne, which without the law is dead. Now, the knowledge of sinne (I speake not here of that speculative knowledge of hypocrites, but of a true knowledge, by the which we see the wrath of God against sinne, and feele a true taste of death) terrifieth the heart, driveth downe to desparation, killeth and destroyeth. *Rom. 7.* Wherefore these Schoole-masters of the law and works, are called in the Scripture oppressours and tyrants. For as the task-masters in *Egypt* did oppresse the children of *Israel* with corporall servitude, so doe these law-givers and task-masters drive men into spirituall and most miserable bondage of soule, and at length bring them to desparation and utter destruction. These doe neither know themselves nor the force of the law: Neither is it possible for them to have quietnesse and peace of conscience in great and inward terrours, and in the agony of death, yea though they have observed the law, loved their neighbours, done many good works, and suffered great afflictions: for the law alwayes terrifieth and accuseth, saying: thou never diddest accomplish all that is commanded in the law: but accursed is he that hath not done all things contained therein. Wherefore these terrours remaine still in the conscience and increase more and more. And if such Schoole-masters of the law be not raised up by faith and the righteousnesse of Christ, they are driven downe headlong to desparation.

This also was notably figured when the law was given, as we may see in the *19. and 20. of Exodus.* *Moses* brought the people out of the tents to meeete with the Lord, that they might heare him speake unto them out of the darke cloud. Then the people being astonished and trembling for feare, fled back (which a little before had promised to do all that God had commanded) and standing aloofe off, said unto *Moses*: *Who can abide to see the fire, and to heare the thundrings and noise of the Trumpet? Talke thou with us, and wee will heare thee: but let not God talke with us, least we die.* So the proper office of the law is to leade us out of our tents and tabernacles, that is to say, from the quietnesse and security wherein we dwell, and from trust-
ing

sting in our selves, and to bring us before the presence of God, to re-
veale his wrath unto us, and to set before us our sins. Here the consci-
ence feeleth that it hath not satisfied the law, neither is able to satisfie
it, nor to beare the wrath of God, which the law revealeth when it
bringeth us forth after this manner before the presence of God, that
is to say, when it feareth us, accuseth us, and setteth before us our sins.
Here it is impossible that we should be able to stand: and therefore
being throughly afraid, we flie; and we crie out with the children of
Israel: *We shall die, we shall die: Let not the Lord speake unto us, but speake
thou unto us, &c.*

He then which teacheth that faith in Christ justifieth not without
the observation of the law, maketh Christ a minister of sinne; that is
to say, a Schoole-master of the law, which teacheth the selfe-same
doctrine that *Moses* did. By this meanes Christ is no Saviour, no
giver of grace, but a cruell tyrant, who requireth such things (as
Moses did) which no man is able to performe. See how all the me-
ritmongers doe take Christ to be but a new law-giver, and the Gos-
pell to be nothing else but a certaine booke which containeth new
laws concerning works, as the Turks dreame of their Alcoran. But
as touching laws there is enough in *Moses*. The Gospell then is a
preaching of Christ, which forgiveth sins, giveth grace, justifieth
and saveth sinners. Now, where as there are commandements found
in the Gospell; they are not the Gospell, but expositions of the law,
and matters depending upon the Gospell.

To conclude, if the law be the ministry of sinne, then is it also the
ministry of wrath and of death. For as the law revealeth sin, so doth
it terrifie a man, it sheweth unto him his sin and the wrath of God,
and striketh into him a terrour of death and damnation. For thus the
conscience by and by gathereth: Thou hast not kept the Comman-
dements of God: therefore is God angry with thee. If he be angry
with thee, he will destroy thee and condemne thee for ever. And it
thinketh this to be an infallible consequence: I have sinned, therefore
I must die. And so it followeth that the ministry of sin is the mini-
stery of wrath and condemnation. For after that sinne is revealed, by
and by ensueth the wrath of God, death and damnation. And hereof
it cometh that many which are not able to beare the judgement and
wrath of God, which the law setteth before their eyes; do kill, hang,
or drowne themselves.

Who ma-
keth Christ
a minister of
sin

The Gospell.

Commande-
ments in the
Gospell.
The law is
the ministe-
ry of sinne,
wrath and
death.

The consci-
ence thus
gathereth:
Thou hast
sinned, ther-
fore God is
angry with
thee, & will
condemne
thee for ever

Chap. II.

Upon the E P I S T L E

Verse 17. GOD forbid.

A picture of
Christ.

As though he would say, Christ is not the minister of sin, but the giver of righteousness and eternall life. Wherefore *Paul* separateth *Moses* far from Christ. Let *Moses* then tary on the earth: Let him be the Schoole-master of the letter, and exactor of the law: let him torment and crucifie sinners. But the beleevers (saith *Paul*) have another Schoole-master in their conscience: not *Moses*, but Christ, which hath abolished the law and sin, hath overcome the wrath of God, and destroyed death. He biddeth us that labour and are oppressed with all manner of calamities, to come unto him. Therefore when ye flie unto him; *Moses* with his law vanisheth away, so that his sepulcher can no where be seene, sin and death can hurt us no more. For Christ our instructor is Lord over the law, sin and death: so that they which beleve in him, are delivered from the same. It is therefore the proper office of Christ to deliver from sin and death: And this *Paul* teacheth and repeateth every-where.

Deut. 34.

The Law.
Christ.

We are condemned and killed by the law, but by Christ we are justified and restored to life. The law astonisheth us; and driveth us from God: but Christ reconcileth us to God and maketh for us an entrance, that we may boldly come unto him. For he is the Lambe of God that hath taken away the sins of the world. Now, if the sin of the world be taken away, then is it taken away from me also which doe beleve in him. If sin be taken away, then is the wrath of God, death and damnation taken away also. And in the place of sin succeedeth righteousness, in the place of wrath, reconciliation and grace, in the place of death, life, and in the place of damnation, salvation. Let us learne to practise this distinction; not in words only, but in life and lively experience; and with an inward feeling. For where Christ is, there must needs be joy of heart and peace of conscience: for Christ is our reconciliation, righteousness, peace, life and salvation. Briefly, whatsoever the poore *afflicted conscience desireth, it findeth in Christ abundantly. Now *Paul* goeth about to amplify this argument, and to perswade as followeth.

Christ hath
take away all
evils, & hath
brought un
to us all
good things.

* Whatsoe
ver the af-
flicted con-
science desi-
reth in
Christ abun-
dantly.

Verse 18. For if I build againe the things that I have destroyed, I make my selfe a trespasser.

As if he should say: I have not preached to this end, that I might build againe those things which I once destroyed. For if I should

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

The difference of the law and the Gospel, must be diligently marked.

But we by the grace of Christ holding the article of justification, do assuredly know that we are justified and reputed righteous before God by faith only in Christ. Therefore we do not mingle the law and grace, faith and works together: but we separate them far asunder. And this distinction or difference between the law and grace, let every true Christian mark diligently, and let him suffer the same to take place, not in letters and syllables, but in practise and inward experience: So that when he heareth that good works ought to be done, and that the example of Christ is to be followed, he may be able to judge rightly and say: well all these things will I gladly do. What then followeth? I thou shalt then be saved and obtain eternall life. Nay not so, I grant indeed that I ought to do good workes, patiently to suffer troubles and afflictions, and to shed my blood also if need be, for Christs cause; but yet am I not justified, neither doe I obtain salvation thereby.

How the Monks were wont to comfort condemned persons at the time of their death.

We must not therefore draw good works into the article of justification, as the Monks have done, which say, that not only good works, but also the punishments and torments which malefactors suffer for their wicked deeds, do deserve everlasting life. For thus they comfort them when they are brought to the gallows, or place of execution: Thou must suffer willingly and patiently this shamefull death: which if thou do, thou shalt deserve remission of thy sins and everlasting life. What an horrible thing is this, that a wretched thief, a murderer, a robber should be so miserably seduced in that extreame anguish and distresse, that even at the very point of death, when he is now ready to be hanged or to have his head cut-off, he should refuse the Gospel and sweet promises in Christ, which are only able to bring comfort and salvation, and should be commanded to hope for pardon of his sins, if he willingly and patiently endure that opprobrious death which he suffereth for his mischievous deeds? What is this els but to heap upon him, which is already most miserably afflicted, extreame perdition and destruction, and through a false confidence in his own death, to shew him the ready way to hell?

Hereby these hypocrites do plainly declare, that they neither teach nor understand one letter or syllable concerning grace, the Gospel, or Christ. They retain only in outward shew the name of the Gospel and of Christ, that they may beguile the hearts of the people. Notwithstanding they denying and rejecting Christ indeed, do

do attribute more to the traditions of men, then to the Gospell of Christ. Which thing to be true, so many kinds of false worship, so many religious orders, so many ceremonies, and so many will works do plainly witness: All which things were instituted as available to deserve grace, righteousness and everlasting life. In their confessions they make no mention of Faith, or the merit of Christ, but they teach and set forth the satisfactions and merits of men, as it may plainly appear in this forme of absolution (I speak nothing here of other matters) which the Monks used among themselves, yea and such as would be counted more devout, and more religious then others: which I thinke good here to set down, that our posterity may see how great and how horrible the kingdom of the Pope is.

The manner
of Popish
confession.

The forme of a Monkish Absolution.

God forgive thee my brother. The merit of the Passion of our Lord Jesus Christ, and of blessed S^c. Mary always a Virgin, and of all the Saints: the merit of thine order, the straightnes of thy Religion, the humility of thy confession, the contrition of thy heart, the good works which thou hast done and shalt do for the love of our Lord Jesus Christ; be unto thee available for the remission of thy sins, the increase of desert and grace, and the reward of everlasting life. Amen.

Ye heare the merit of Christ mentioned in these words: but if ye weigh them well, ye shall perceive that Christ is there altogether unprofitable, and that the glory and name of a justifier and Saviour is quite taken from him, and given to Monkish merits. Is not this to take the name of God in vaine? Is not this to confess Christ in words, and in very deed to deny his power, and blaspheme his name? I my selfe also was once entangled with this errour, I thought Christ to be a judge (although I confessed with my mouth that he suffered and dyed for mans redemption) and ought to be pacified by the observation of my rule and order. Therefore when I prayed or when I said Masse, I used to adde this in the end: O Lord Jesus, I come unto thee, and I pray thee that these burdens and this straitnesse of my rule and religion may be a full recompence for all my sinnes. But now, I give thanks unto God the Father of all mercies, which hath called me out of darkenesse unto the light

of his glorious Gospel, and hath given unto me plentiful knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whose sake I count all things to be but loss, yea I esteeme them but as dung, that I may gain Christ, and that I may be found in him, not having mine owne righteousnes out of the rule of *Augustine*, but that righteousnes which cometh by faith in Christ: Unto whom with the Father and the holy Ghost be praise and glory, world without end. Amen!

Faith without works.

We conclude therefore with *Paul*, that we are justified by faith only in Christ, without the law: Now after that a man is once justified, and possesseth Christ by faith, and knoweth that he is his righteousnes and life, doubtles he will not be idle, but as a good tree he will bring forth good fruits. For the believing man hath the holy Ghost, and where the holy Ghost dwelleth, he will not suffer a man to be idle, but stirreth him up to all exercises of piety and godliness and of true Religion, to the love of God, to the patient suffering of afflictions, to prayer, to thanksgiving, to the exercise of charity towards all men.

Hitherto we have handled the first argument, wherein *Paul* contendeth that either we cannot be justified by the Law, or else that Christ must needs be the minister of sin. But this is impossible: Wherefore we conclude that justification cometh not by the law. Of this place we have largely intreated, as it is well worthy, and yet can it not be taught, and beaten into mens heads sufficiently.

Verse 19. For I through the Law am dead to the Law, that I might live unto God.

Paul's manner of speech unknown to mans reason

Paul calleth grace the law.

Phrases of speech only proper to the Scripture

These are marvellous words, and unknowne kinds of speech, which mans reason can in no wise understand. And although they be but few, yet are they uttered with great zeal and vehemency of spirit, and as it were in great displeasure. As if he should say: why do ye boast so much of the law? wherof in this case I will be ignorant. But if ye will needs have the law, I also have the law. Wherefore, as though he were moved through indignation of the holy Ghost, he calleth grace it selfe the law, giving a new name to the effect and working of grace, in contempt of the law of *Moses* and the false Apostles, which contended that the law was necessary to justification: and so he setteth the law against the law. And this is a sweet kind of speech and full of consolation, when in the Scriptures, and specially in *Paul*, the law is set against the law, since against sinne, death

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

The whole
law is abro-
gated.

And here *Paul* speaketh not of the ceremoniall law only (as before we have declared more at large) but of the whole law; whether it be ceremoniall or morall, which to a Christian is utterly abrogated, for he is dead unto it: not that the law is utterly taken away, nay it remaineth, liveth and reigneth still in the wicked. But a godly man is dead unto the law, like as he is dead unto sin, the devill, death and hell; which notwithstanding do still remain, and the world with all the wicked shall still abide in them. Wherefore when the Papist understandeth that the ceremoniall law only is abolished; understand thou that *Paul* and every Christian is dead to the whole law, and yet the law remaineth still.

Christ free
from the
grave, &c.

As for example: Christ rising from death is free from the grave, and yet the grave remaineth still. *Peter* is delivered from the prison, the sick of the palsie from his bed, the yong man from his coffin, the maiden from her couch, and yet the prison, the bed, the coffin, the couch do remain still. Even so the law is abolished when I am not subject unto it, the law is dead when I am dead unto it, and yet it remaineth still. But because I am dead unto it by another law, therefore it is dead also unto me: as the grave of Christ, the prison of *Peter*, the couch of the maiden, &c. do still remain: and yet Christ by his resurrection is dead unto the grave, *Peter* by his deliverance is freed from the prison, and the maid through life is delivered from the couch.

I am dead
to the law.

Wherefore these words: *I am dead to the law*, are very effectual. For he saith not: I am free from the law for a time, or I am Lord over the law: but simply I am dead to the law, that is to say, I have nothing to do with the law. *Paul* could have uttered nothing more effectually against the righteousness of the law, then to say: I am dead to the law, that is, I care nothing at all for the law, therefore I am not justified by it.

What it is to
die to y^e law.

Now, to die to the law, is, not to be bound to the law, but to be free from the law and not to know it. Therefore let him that will live to God, endeavour that he may be found without the law, and let him come out of the grave with Christ. The souldiers were astonished when Christ was risen out of the grave: and they also which saw the maiden raised up from death to life; were amazed. So mans reason and wisdom is astonished, and becommeth foolish when it heareth that we are not justified except we be dead to the law: for it is not able to reach unto this mysterie. But we know that when we apprehend Christ by faith inwardly in conscience, we enter into a certain

A certain new law, which swallowed up the old law that held us captives. As the grave in which Christ lay dead, after that he was risen again was void and empty, and Christ vanished away: so when I believe in Christ, I rise again with him, and die to my grave, that is to say, the law which held me captive: so that now the law is voyd, and I am escaped out of my prison and grave, that is to say, the law. Wherefore the law hath no right to accuse me, or to hold me any longer, for I am risen again.

It is necessary, that mens consciences should be diligently instructed, that they may well understand the difference between the righteousness of the law and grace. The righteousness of grace or the liberty of conscience doth in no wise pertaine to the flesh. For the flesh may not be at liberty, but must remain in the grave, the prison, the couch: it must be in subjection to the law, and exercised by the Egyptians. But the Christian conscience must be dead to the law, that is to say, free from the law, and must have nothing at all to do with it. It is good to know this: for it helpeth very much for the comforting of poor afflicted consciences. Wherefore when you see a man terrified and cast down with the sense and feeling of his sin, say unto him: Brother thou dost not rightly distinguish. Thou placest the law in thy conscience, which should be placed in the flesh. Awake, arise up, and remember that thou must believe in Christ the conquerour of the law and sin. With this faith thou shalt mount up above and beyond the law; into that heaven of grace where is no law nor sin. And albeit the law and sin do still remain, yet they pertain nothing to thee; for thou art dead to the law and sin.

Let the flesh be subiect to the law, but not the conscience.

How afflicted consciences must be comforted.

This is easily said: but blessed is he which knoweth how to lay sure hold on these things in time of distresse, that is, which can say, when sin over-weigheth him, and the law accuseth him: what is this to me, O law, that thou accusest me, and sayest that I have committed many finnes? Indeed I grant that I have committed many, finnes, yea and yet still doe commit finnes daily without number. This toucheth me nothing: I am now deafe and cannot heare: therefore thou talkest to me in vaine, for I am dead unto thee. But if thou wilt needs dispute with me as touching my finnes, I get thee to my flesh and members my servants: teach them, exercise and crucifie them: But trouble not me, not me Conscience, I say, which am a Lady and a Queene, and have nothing to do

How thou must defend thy selfe against the accusation of the law.

The conscience answering to the accusation of the law.

do' with thee: for I am dead to thee, and now I live to Christ, with whom I am under another law, to wit, the law of grace, which releaseth over sin and the law. By what means? By faith in Christ, as Paul declareth hereafter.

To live to the law, is to die to God, & contrariwise to die to the law, is to live to God.

But this seemeth a strange and a wonderfull definition, that to live to the law, is to die to God: and to die to the law, is to live to God. These two Propositions are cleane contrary to reason, and therefore no crafty Sophister, or law-worker can understand them. But learn thou the true understanding thereof. He that liveth to the law, that is, seeketh to be justified by the works of the law, is and remaineth a sinner: therefore he is dead and condemned. For the law cannot justify and save him, but accuseth, terrifieth and killeth him. Therefore to live unto the law, is to die unto God: and contrariwise, to die to the law, is to live unto God. Wherefore if thou wilt live unto God, thou must die to the law: but if thou wilt live to the law, thou shalt die to God. Now, to live unto God, is to be justified by grace or by faith for Christs sake, without the law and works.

To live unto God.

A Christian

This is then the proper and true definition of a Christian, that he is the child of grace and remission of sinnes, because he is under no law, but is above the law, sinne, death, and hell. And even as Christ is free from the grave, and Peter from the prison, so is a Christian free from the law. And such a respect there is betweene the justified conscience and the law, as is betweene Christ raised up from the grave, and the grave: and as is betweene Peter delivered from the prison, and the prison. And like as Christ by his death and resurrection is dead to the grave, so that it hath now no power over him, nor is able any longer to hold him, but the stone being rolled away, the scales broken, and the keepers astonished, he riseth againe and goeth away without any let: And as Peter by his deliverance is freed from the prison, and goeth whither he will: even so the conscience by grace is delivered from the law: So is every one that is borne of the spirit. But the flesh knoweth not from whence this cometh, nor whither it goeth, for it cannot judge but after the law. But on the contrary, the spirit saith: let the law accuse me, let sinne and death terrifie me never so much, yet I do not therefore despaire: for I have the law against the law; stone against sin, and death against death.

Mat. 23.

The conscience by grace delivered from the law.

Therefore when I feele the remorse and sting of conscience for sinne

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



how I may be delivered out of their hands justified and saved. Here I find neither law, worke nor charity, which is able to deliver me from their tyranny. There is none but the Lord Jesus only and alone, which taketh away the law, killeth and destroyeth my death in his body, and by this meanes spoileth hell, judgeth and crucifieth the devill, and throweth him downe into hell. To be briefe, all the enemies which did before torment and oppresse me, Christ Jesus hath brought to nought: *Hath spoiled them, and made a shew of them openly, triumphing by himselfe over them,* in such sort that they can now rule and reigne no more over me, but are constrained to obey me.

Col. 2. 15.

In the matter of justification there is nothing for us to do, but to heare what Christ hath done for us, and to apprehend the same by faith.

By this we may plainly see, that there is nothing here for us to doe: Only it belongeth unto us, to heare that these things have beene wrought and done in this sort, and by faith to apprehend the same. And this is the true formed and furnished faith indeed. Now, when I have thus apprehended Christ by faith, and through him am dead to the law; justified from sin, delivered from death, the devill and hell, then I do good works, I love God, I give thanks to him, I exercise charity towards my neighbour. But this charity or works following do neither forme nor adorne my faith, but my faith formeth and adorneth charity. This is our Divinity: which seemeth strange and marvellous, or rather foolish to carnall reason: to wit, that I am not only blind and deafe to the law, yea delivered and freed from the law, but also wholly dead unto the same.

This sentence well understood in the time of trouble, maketh a man strong against all temptations.

A speech or dialogue between the law and conscience.

This sentence of *Paul*: *Through the law I am dead to the law,* is full of consolation. Which if it may enter into a man in due season, and take sure hold in his heart with good understanding, it may so work, that it will make him able to stand against all dangers of death, and all terrors of conscience and sinne, although they assaile him, accuse him, and would drive him to desperation never so much. True it is that every man is tempted: if not in in his life, yet at his death. There when the law acculeth him and sheweth unto him his sins, his conscience by and by saith: Thou hast sinned. If then thou take good hold of that which *Paul* here teacheth, thou wilt answer: I grant I have sinned. Then will God punish thee. Nay, he will not so doe. Why, doth not the law of God so say? I have nothing to doe with that law. Why so? Because I have another law which striketh this law dumbe, that is to say, liberty. What liberty is that? The liberty of Christ, for by Christ I am utterly freed from the law. Therefore that

that law which is and remaineth a law to the wicked, is to me liberty, and bindeth that law which would condemne me : And by this means that law which would bind me and hold me captive, is now fast bound it selfe, and holden captive by grace and liberty, which is now my law: Which saith to that accusing law: Thou shalt not hold this man bound and captive, for he is mine : but I will hold thee captive, and bind thy hands that thou shalt not hurt him, for he liveth now unto Christ, and is dead unto thee.

A consolation
on against
the terrours
of the law,
etc.
The binding
of the law
through
Christ is
bound itself.

This to doe, is to dash out the teeth of the law, to wrest his sting and all his weapons from him, and to spoile him of all his force: And yet the same law notwithstanding continueth and remaineth still to the wicked and unbelievers : and to us also that be weake, so farre forth as we lack faith, it continueth yet still in his force, here it hath his edge and teeth. But if I doe beleeve in Christ, although sinne drive me never so much to despaire, yet staying upon this liberty which I have in Christ, I confesse that I have sinned : but my sinne which is a condemned sinne, is in Christ which is a condemning sinne : Now this condemning sinne is stronger then that which is condemned : for it is justifying grace, righteousness, life and salvation. Thus when I feele the terrour of death, I say: Thou hast nothing to doe with me, O death: for I have another death which killeth thee my death, and that death which killeth, is stronger then that which is killed.

Sinne condem-
ned, and con-
demning.

Death killed
and death
killing
1 Job. 5.4.

Thus a faithfull man by faith only in Christ, may raise up himselfe, and conceive such sure and sound consolation, that he shall not need to feare the devill, sinne, death, or any evils. And although the devill set upon him with all might and maine, and goe about with all the the terrours of the world to oppresse him, yet he conceiveth good hope even in the midst thereof, and thus he saith : Sir devill, I feare not thy threatnings and terrours, for there is one whose Name is Jesus Christ, in whom I beleeve: he hath abolished the law, condemned sinne, vanquished death, and destroyed hell : and he is thy tormentour, O Satan, for he hath bound thee and holdeth thee captive, to the end that thou shouldest no more hurt me, or any that beleeveth in him. This faith the devill cannot overcome, but is overcome of it. For this is the victory. (saith S. John) that overcometh the world, even our faith. Who is it that overcometh the world, but he which beleeveth that Jesus is the Son of God?

PAUL

A new name
given to the
law, that it is
dead and
condemned.

The law is
bound and
condemned,
therefore it
cannot ac-
cuse us, &c.

A holy pride

Paul therefore through a vehement zeale and indignation of spirit, calleth grace it selte the law, which notwithstanding is an exceeding & inestimable liberty of grace which we have in Christ *Jesus*. Moreover he giveth this approbrious name unto the law (to let us understand for our consolation, that there is now a new name given unto it,) that it is not now alive any more, but dead and condemned. And here (which is a pleasant sight to behold) he bringeth forth the law; and setteth it before us as a theefe and a robber which is already condemned and adjudged to death. For he describeth it as it were a prisoner having both hands and feet fast bound, and all his power taken away, so that it cannot exercise his tyranny, that is to say, it cannot accuse and condemne any more: and with this most pleasant sight he maketh it odious and contemptible to the conscience: so that now he which beleeveth in Christ, dare boldly and with a holy pride; triumph over the law after this manner: I am a sinner: if thou canst do any thing against me O law, now do thy worst. So far off is it then, that the law is now terrible unto him which doth beleeve.

Since *Christ* is risen from death, why should he now feare the grave? Since *Peter* is delivered from the prison, why should he now feare it? When the maiden was at the point of death, then might she indeed feare the bed: but being now raised up, why should she feare it? In like manner; why should a Christian which enjoyeth and possesseth *Christ* by faith, feare the law? True, it is that he feeleth the terrours of the law, but he is not overcome of them: but staying upon the liberty which he hath in *Christ*, he saith: I heare thee murmuring, O law, that thou wouldst accuse me and condemne me: but this troubleth me nothing at all. Thou art to me as the grave was unto *Christ*; for I see that thou art fast bound hand and foot: and this hath my law done. What law is that? Liberty, which is called the law, not because it bindeth me, but because it bindeth my law. The law of the ten Commandments did bind me. But against that law I have another law, even the law of grace: which notwithstanding is to me no law, neither doth it bind me, but setteth me at liberty. And this is a law against that accusing and condemning law: which law it so bindeth, that it hath no power to hurt me any more. So against my death which bindeth me I have another death, that is to say, life, which quickneth me in *Christ*: and this death looseth and freeth me from the bonds

Why he calleth liberty the law.

The law of grace, binding the law of the ten commandments.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

death, that I may obtaine life: Christ fighting against the devill, that I may be the child of God: and destroying hell, that I may enjoy the kingdom of Heaven.

Verse 19. That I might live unto God.

The flesh
subject to
the law, but
not the con-
science.

That is to say, that I might live before God. Ye see then that there is no life unlesse ye be without the law, yea unlesse ye be utterly dead unto the law, I meane in conscience. Notwithstanding in the meane season (as I have often said) so long as the body liveth, the flesh must be exercised with laws, and vexed with exactions and penalties of laws, as were the *Egyptians*. But the inward man not subject to the law, but delivered and freed from it, is a lively, a just, and a holy person, not of himselfe, but in Christ, because he beleeveth in him, as followeth.

Verse 20. I am crucified with Christ.

This he addeth to declare that the law is a devourer of the law. Not onely (saith he) I am dead to the law through the law, that I may live to God, but also I am crucified with Christ. But Christ is Lord over the law, because he is crucified and dead unto the law: Therefore also am I Lord over the law: for I likewise am crucified and dead unto the law, for as much as I am crucified and dead with Christ: By what means? By grace and faith. Through this faith because I am now crucified and dead unto the law, therefore the law loseth all his power which it had over me, even as it hath lost all his power which it had over Christ. Wherefore, even as Christ himselfe was crucified to the law, sin, death and the devill, so that they have no further power over him: even so I through faith being now crucified with Christ in spirit, am crucified and dead to the law, sin, death, and the devill, so that they have no further power over me, but are now crucified and dead unto me!

To be crucified with
Christ.

Paul speaketh not here of crucifying by imitation or example: (for to follow the example of Christ, is also to be crucified with him,) which crucifying belongeth to the flesh. Whereof *Peter* speaketh in his first Epistle and second Chapter: *Christ suff'rd for us,* (saith he) *leaving unto us an example that wee should follow his steps.* But he speaketh here of that high crucifying, whereby sinne, the devill and death are crucified in Christ, and not in me. Here Christ Jesus doth all himselfe alone. But I beleeving in Christ,

Christ, am by faith crucified also with Christ, so that all these things are crucified and dead unto me.

Verse 20. Thus I live.

I speake not so (saith he) of my death and crucifying, as though I now lived not: Yea I live, for I am quickned by this death and crucifying, through the which I die: That is, for as much as I am delivered from the law, sin and death, I now live indeed. Wherefore that crucifying, and that death wherby I am crucified and dead to the law, sin, death and all evils, is to me resurrection and life. For Christ crucifieth the Devill, he killeth death, condemneth sin, and bindeth the law: and I believing this, am delivered from the law, sin, death and the Devill. The law therefore is bound, dead and crucified unto me, and I againe am bound, dead and crucified unto it: Wherefore even by this death and crucifying, that is to say, by this grace or liberty, I now live.

The true life of the faith; full.

Here (as before I have said) we must observe Pauls manner of speaking. He saith that we are dead and crucified to the law, whereas in verity deed the law it selfe is dead and crucified unto us: But this manner of speech he useth here of purpose, that it may be the more sweet and comfortable unto us. For the law, (which notwithstanding continueth, liveth and reigneth in the whole world, which also accuseth and condemneth all men.) is crucified, and dead unto those only, which believe in Christ: therefore to them alone belongeth this glory, that they are dead to sin, hell, death and the Devill.

The faithfull are crucified and dead to the law.

The glory of the faithfull.

Verse 20. Yetidom not I.

That is to say, not in mine owne person, nor in mine owne substance. Here he plainly sheweth by what means he liveth: And he teacheth what true Christian righteousness is, namely that righteousness wherby Christ liveth in us, and not that which is in our person. Therefore when we speake of Christian righteousness, we must utterly reject the person. And here Christ and my conscience must become one body, so that nothing remaine in my sight, but Christ crucified and raised from the dead. But if I behold my selfe only and for Christ aside, I am gone. For by and by I fall into this cogitation: Christ is in heaven, and thou art on the earth: how shalt thou now come unto him? Forsooth I will live holily, and do that

in the

Christian righteousness

Wee must have Christ only in sight and before our eye.

which the Law requireth: so shall I enter into life. Here, returning to my self, and considering what I am, what I ought to be, and what I am bound to do, I lose the sight of Christ, who is my righteousness and life. Who being lost, there is no counsell nor succour now remaining, but certain desperation and destruction must needs follow.

Such is our misery, that intentions & afflictions we see Christ aside, & look back into our selves, & our life past.

And this is a common evill among men. For such is our misery, that when temptation or death cometh, by and by setting Christ aside, we consider our owne life past, and what we have done. Here except we be raised up again by faith, we must needs perish. Wherefore we must learne in such conflicts and terrours of conscience (forgetting our selves, and setting the Law, our life past, and all our works apart, which drive us to the consideration of our selves onely) to turne our eyes wholly to the brazen serpent Christ Jesus crucified, and assuredly believe that he is our righteousness and life, not fearing the threatenings and terrours of the law, sin, death, and the judgement of God. For Christ, on whom our eyes are fixed, in whom we live, who also liveth in us, is Lord and conquerour of the law, sin, death and all evils: in whom most certain and sure consolation is set forth unto us, and victory given.

Verse 20. *Thus I live, yet not I now, but Christ liveth in me.*

Where he saith: *Thus I live*, he speaketh it, as it were, in his own person. Therefore he by and by correcteth himselfe saying: *Yet not I now*. That is to say, I live: not now in mine owne person, but Christ liveth in me. Indeed the person liveth, but not in himself, nor for any thing that is in him. But who is that *I*, of whom he saith: *yet not I*. This *I* is he which hath the law, and is bound to doe the works thereof: who also is a certaine person separate from Christ. This person Paul rejecteth. For, as he is separated from Christ, he belongeth to death and hell. Therefore he saith: *Now not I, but Christ liveth in me*. He in my forme, my furniture and perfection, adorning and beautifying my faith, as the colour, the cleare light, or the whitnesse do garnish and beautifie the wall. Thus are we constrained grossly to set forth this matter. For we cannot spiritually conceive, that Christ is so nearely joyned and united unto us, as the colour or whitnesse are unto the wall, Christ therefore (saith he) thus joyned and united unto me and abiding in me, liveth this life in me which I now live: yea Christ himselfe

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



The faithfull
both righteous
and sinners.

The Papists
Faith.

I live not: I am dead, I am not dead: I am a sinner, I am not a sinner: I have the law, I have not the law. Which phrase is sweet and comfortable to all those that beleve in Christ. For in that they behold themselves, they have both the law and sin: but in that they looke unto Christ, they are dead to the law and have no sin. If therefore in the matter of justification thou separate the person of Christ from thy person, then art thou in the law, thou abidest in the law, thou liuest in the law and not in Christ, and so thou art condemned of the law, and dead before God. For thou hast that faith which (as the Sophisters dreame) is furnished with charity. Thus I speake for examples sake. For there was never any one found that was saved by this faith. And therefore what things soever the Popish Sophisters have written touching this faith, are nothing else but vain toys and meere deceits of Satan. But let us grant that such there be as have this faith, yet are they not therefore justified. For they have but an historicall faith concerning Christ, which the devill also & all the wicked have.

Faith so knit-
teth us and
Christ toge-
ther, that we
become one
with him.

Faith therefore must be purely taught: namely that thou art so entirely and nearely joyned unto Christ, that he and thou art made as it were one person: so that thou mayest boldly say, I am now one with Christ, that is to say, Christs righteousness, victory and life are mine. And againe, Christ may say, I am that sinner, that is, his sins and his death are mine, because he is united and joyned unto me, and I unto him. For by faith we are so joyned together, that we are become one flesh and one bone, *Eph. 5.* we are the members of the body of Christ, flesh of his flesh, and bone of his bones: So that this faith doth couple Christ and me more neare together, then the husband is coupled to his wife. This faith therefore is not an idle quality, but the excellency thereof is such, that it utterly confoundeth these foolish dreames of the Sophisters touching their formed faith and counterfeit charity, their merits, works and worthines. These things I would gladly set forth more fully, if by any meanes I could.

True faith is
not idle.

Hitherto we have declared this to be the first argument of *Paul*, that either Christ must needs be the minister of sin, or else the law doth not justifie. When he had finished this argument, he set forth himselfe for an example, saying, that he was dead unto that old law by a certaine new law. Now he answereth two objections which might have beene made against him. His first answer is against the cavillations of the proud, and the offence of the weake. For when remission

remission of sins is freely preached, then doe the malicious by and by slander this preaching, as *Rom. 3.* *Let us doe euill that good may come thereof.* For these fellowes, as soon as they heare that we are not justified by the law, forthwith doe maliciously conclude and say: why, then let us reject the law. Againe, if grace doe there abound (say they) where sin doth abound, let us then abound in sin, that we may become righteous, and that grace may the more abound. These are the malicious and proud spirits which spitefully and wittingly slander the Scriptures and sayings of the holy Ghost, even as they slandered *Paul* whiles the Apostles lived, to their owne confusion and condemnation, as it is said, *2 Per. 3.*

What occasion the malicious take of this doctrine.

Moreover, the weake which are not malicious, are offended when they heare that the law and good works are not to be done as necessary to justification. These must be holpen, and must be instructed how good works doe not justify: how they ought to be done, how not to be done. These ought to be done, not as the cause, but as the fruits of righteousness: and when we are made righteous, we ought to doe them: but not contrariwise, to the end that when we are unrighteous, we may be made righteous. The tree maketh the apple, but not the apple the tree.

How the weak are to be instructed

Good works are not the cause, but the fruits of righteousness

He said before: *I am dead, &c.* here the presumptuous and malicious might soon take occasion to cavill after this manner. 'What sayest thou *Paul*? art thou dead? how then dost thou speake? how dost thou write? The weake also might soon be offended, and say unto him: what art thou *Paul*? Doe we not see that thou art living, and dost such things as pertaine to this life? To this he answereth: I live indeed, and yet now not I, but Christ liveth in me. There is then a double life. The first is mine, which is naturall: the second is the life of another, that is to say, the life of Christ in me: As touching my naturall life I am dead, and now I live another life, I live not now as *Paul*, but *Paul* is dead. Who is it then that liveth? The Christian. *Paul* therefore as he liveth in himselfe, is wholly dead through the law: but as he liveth in Christ, or rather as Christ liveth in him, he liveth by another life: for Christ speaketh in him, liveth in him, and exerciseth all the operations of life in him. This cometh not now of the life of *Paul*, but of the life of the Christian and regenerate person. Therefore thou malicious spirit, where I say that I am dead, now slander my words no more.

Malicious cavillers.

Life taken two manner of wayes.

The faithfull
live not
their owne
life, but the
life of
Christ.

And thou that art weake, be not offended, but distinguish and divide this matter rightly. For (as I said) there are two lives: to wit, my naturall life, and the life of another. By mine own life I live not: for if I did, the law would have dominion over me, and hold me in captivity. To the end therefore that it should not hold me in captivity and bondage, I am dead to it by another law: and this death purchaseth unto me the life of an other, even the life of Christ: which life is not mine by nature, but is given unto me by Christ through faith.

Secondly, this objection might have been made against *Paul*: What sayest thou *Paul*: Doest thou not live by thine own life, or in thine own flesh, but in Christ? we see thy flesh, but we see not Christ. Wouldest thou then delude us by thine enchantments that we should not see thee present in flesh, living as thou didst before, and doing all things in this corporall life as others doe? He answereth:

Verse 20. And in that I now live in the flesh, I live by faith in the Sonne of God.

Christ is our
life

As if he should say: True it is that I live in the flesh, but this life whatsoever it is, I esteeme as no life: for in very deede it is no true life, but a shadow of life, under the which an other liveth, that is to say, Christ who is my true life indeede: which life thou seest not, but only hearest, and I feele. *Thou hearest the winde, but knowest not whence it cometh or whither it goeth, Joh. 3.* Even so thou seest me speaking, eating, labouring, sleeping and doing other things, and yet thou seest not my life. For this time of life which I now live, I live indeede in the flesh, but not through the flesh or according to the flesh, but through faith and according to faith. *Paul* then denieth not that he liveth in the flesh, because he doth all things that belong to a naturall man. He useth also carnall things, as meate, drinke, apparell and such like, which is to live in the flesh: but he saith that this is not this life: And although he seeth these things, yet he liveth not through them, as the world liveth through the flesh and after the flesh: for it neither knoweth nor hopeth for any life besides this.

The faithfull
live in the
flesh, but not
according to
the flesh.

To live in
the faith of
the Son of
God.

Therefore (saith he) this life which I now live in the flesh; whatsoever it is, I live in the faith of the Sonne of God. For this word which I now corporally speake, is the word, not of flesh, but of the holy Ghost, and of Christ. This sight which goeth in, or cometh

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY
BIBLE**

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

of the spirituall man; he knoweth his face, his manners and his gestures: but he seeth not whence those words, which are not now wicked and blasphemous as before, but holy and godly, or whence those motions and actions doe come. For this life is in the heart by faith, where the flesh is killed, and Christ reigneth with his holy Spirit, who now seeth, heareth, speaketh, worketh, suffereth and doth all other things in him, although the flesh doe resist. To conclude, this is not the life of the flesh, although it be in the flesh: but of Christ the Son of God, whom the Christian possesseth by faith.

Verse 20. *Who loved me and gave himselfe for me.*

The true manner of justification.

Here have ye the true manner of justification set before your eyes and a perfect example of the assurance of faith. He that can with a firme and a constant faith say these words with Paul: *I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himselfe for me*, is happy indeed. And with these words Paul taketh away the whole righteousness of the law and works, as afterwards we will declare. We must therefore diligently weigh and consider these words: *The Sonne of God loved me, and gave himselfe for me*. It was not I then that first loved the Son of God, and delivered my selfe for him: as the Sophisters dreame, that they love the Sonne of God, and deliver themselves for him. For they teach that a man, *ex puris naturalibus*, that is, of his own pure naturall strength, is able to doe meritorious works before grace, and love God and Christ above all things. These fellowes prevent the love of God and Christ: for they doe that is in them (say they:) that is, they do not only fulfill the commandements, but also they observe the *counsels, they doe the works of *supererogation, and sell their superfluous merits to lay-men, and so (as they dreame) they give themselves for Christ, and thereby save both themselves and others, turning the words of Paul: *Which loved me, &c.* cleane contrary, and saying: we have loved Christ and given our selves for him. Thus, whiles the wicked, being puffed up with the wisdom of the flesh, imagine that they doe what in them lieth, they love God, they deliver themselves for Christ: what doe they else but abolish the Gospell, deride, deny and blaspheme Christ, yea spit upon him and treade him under foote? They confesse in words that he is a justifier and a Saviour: in verie deede they take from him the power both to justifie and save, and give the same to their own will-works, their ceremonies and devotions.

*The Papists divide the Gospell into precepts and counsels. To the precepts men are bound, say they, but not to the counsels. * Works of supererogation the Papists call those which they doe of their owne devotion, more then God requireth.

devotions. This is to live in their own righteousness and works, and not in the faith of the Son of God.

Wherefore this is not the true way to attaine justification, to doe that which in thee lieth: as the Popish Sophisters and Schoole Doctors doe teach, which affirme that if a man doe what in him lieth, God will undoubtedly give unto him his grace. But this saying may not be straightly urged, say they. For if we doe those works which may be approved by the judgement of any good man, it is enough: for then grace shall surely follow, because God, in that he is good and just, must needs give grace as a recompence for such good works. And hereof commeth this Verse.

To do what in us lieth.

Ultra posse viri non vult Deus ulla requiri. That is.

God will no more require of man, then of himselfe performe he can.

Indeede this is a good saying if it be used rightly, and in place convenient: that is, in the government of common-weales or families: As if I being in the kingdom of reason, doe execute the office of a Magistrate, or govern a family, doing that in me lieth, I am excused. This kingdom hath his bounds and limits: to the which also these sayings doe pertaine: *To doe what in us lieth: To doe as much as we are able.* But the Papists apply these sayings to the spirituall kingdome, wherein a man can do nothing else but sin: for he is ** sold under sinne:* But in externall things (such I meane as pertain to civil and household government) he is not a servant, but a Lord and ruler. Wherefore they have done wickedly in applying these sentences to the Church, which properly pertaine to the government of common-weales and families. For the kingdom of mans reason and the spirituall kingdome must be separate far asunder.

The Papists apply matters of policy and civill government to the Church
* Rom 7.14

Moreover, they say that nature is corrupt, but the qualities of nature notwithstanding are sound and uncorrupt, which also they attribute even unto devils. Upon this ground they reason after this manner: If the naturall qualities of man be sound and uncorrupt, then is his understanding and his will sound and uncorrupt, and so consequently all other qualities of nature are pure and perfect in him. To know these things it is necessary for you, that ye may hold the sincerity of the doctrine of faith. Where they say then that the naturall qualities of man are sound and uncorrupt, and thereof doe infer, that a man is able of himselfe to fulfill the law, and to love God with all his heart, applying these qualities to the spirituall

The Papists grant that nature is corrupt, but they say that the powers and qualities of nature remaine sound and uncorrupt.

kingdome,

kingdome, I deny the consequence. And here I make a distinction between the natural and the spirituall qualities (which they confound and mingle together) and I say that the spirituall qualities are not sound, but corrupt, yea utterly quenched through sin both in man and divell, so that there is in them nothing else but corrupt understanding, and a will continually striving against the will of God, which can think nothing else but that which is altogether against God. Notwithstanding, I grant that the naturall qualities are uncorrupt. But what qualities are they? That a man being drowned in sin and iniquity, and a bondslave of Satan, hath will, reason and power notwithstanding, to execute the office of a Magistrate, to govern a Family, to guide a ship, to build a house, & to do such other things as are subject unto man: for these things are not taken from him. We do not then deny but that these sentences are true in the corporall kingdome: but if ye wrest them to the spirituall kingdom, I utterly deny them: for there (as I said) we are cleane overwhelmed and drowned in sin. Whatsoever is in our will is evill: whatsoever is in our understanding is error. Wherefore in spirituall matters man hath nothing but darknes, errors, ignorance, malice & perversnes both of will & understanding. How then shall he work well, fulfill the law, and love God?

Christ first
loved us, &
we not him.

Wherefore *Paul* saith here, that Christ first began and not we, *He, even he (saith Paul) loved me, and gave himselfe for me.* As if he said: He found in me no good will or right understanding: but this good Lord had mercy upon me. He saw me to be nothing else but wicked, going astray, contemning God, and flying from him more and more: yea rebelling against God, taken, led and carryed away captive of the divell. Thus of his meere mercy preventing my reason, my will and my understanding, he loved me, and so loved me, that he gave himselfe for me, to the end that I might be freed from the law, sin, the divell and death.

Againe, these words: *The Sonne of God loved me, and gave himselfe for me,* are mighty thundrings and lightnings from heaven against the righteousness of the law and all the workes thereof. So great and so horrible wickednesse, error, darkenesse and ignorance was in my will and understanding, that it was impossible for me to be ransomed by any other meanes then by such an inestimable price. Why doe we then vaunt of the integrity and soundnesse of nature, of the rule of reason, of free will, and of doing what in us lieth?

The brag-
ging of the
Papists.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



How Sects
maybe with-
stood.

have sprung up amongst them. For faith would by and by have answered: why dost thou choose this kind of life, this Religion, this worke. Dost thou this to please God, or to be justified thereby? Dost thou then not heare, ô thou wretch, that the Son of God shed his blood for thou? Thus true faith in Christ would easily have withstood all manner of Sects.

The Majesty
of Christ the
Son of God.

Wherefore I say (as I have oftentimes said) that there is no remedy against Sects, or power to resist them, but this only Article of Christian Righteousnesse. If we lose this Article, it is impossible for us to withstand any errors or sects: As we may see at this day in the fantastical spirits the *Anabaptists* and such like: who being fallen away from this Article of Justification, will never cease to fall, err, and seduce others, untill they come to the fullnes of all iniquity. There is no doubt, but they will raise up innumerable sects, and still devise new works. But what are all these things (though they have never so goodly a shew of holines) if ye compare them to the death and blood of the Son of God, *who gave himselfe for me*? Consider well, I pray you, who this Sonne of God is, how glorious he is, how mighty he is. What is heaven and earth in comparison of him? Let all the Papists and all the Authours of Sects, yea though the whole world take their part, be throwne downe into hell, with all their righteousnes, works and merits, rather then the truth of the Gospell should be blemished, and the glory of Christ perish. What meane they then, to brag so much of workes and merits? If I being a wretch and a damned sinner could be redeemed by any other price, what needed the Sonne of God to be given for me? But because there was no other price either in heaven or in Earth, but Christ the Sonne of God, therefore it was most necessary that he should be delivered for me. Moreover, this he did of inestimable love: For *Paul* saith, *Which loved me*.

Which loved
me, &c.

Wherefore these words: *Which loved me*, are full of Faith. And he that can utter this word *Me*, and apply it unto himself with a true and a constant faith, as *Paul* did, shall be a good disputer with *Paul* against the law. For he delivered neither Sheep, Oxe, Gold nor Silver, but even God himselfe entirely and wholly for me, even for *Me* (I say) a miserable and a wretched sinner. Now therefore, in that the Sonne of God was thus delivered to death for me, I take comfort and apply this benefit unto my self. And
this

this manner of applying is the very true force and power of Faith.

The true force of faith.

These words (which are the pure preaching of grace and Christian righteousness indeed) *Paul* setteth against the righteousness of the law. As if he said: Be it so that the law is an heavenly doctrine, and hath also his glory: yet notwithstanding it loved not me, nor gave it selfe for me: yea it accuseth me, terrifieth me, and driveth me to desperation. But I have now another which hath delivered me from the terrours of the law, sin and death, and hath brought me into liberty, the righteousness of God, and eternall life: who is called, the Son of God: to whom be praise and glory for ever.

The law loveth not sinners, but accuseth them.

Faith therefore (as I have said) embraceth and wrappeth in it selfe Christ Jesus the Sonne of God, delivered to death for us, as *Paul* here teacheth, who being apprehended by faith, giveth unto us righteousness and life. And here he setteth out most lively the Priesthood and offices of Christ: which are, to pacifie God, to make intercession for sinners, to offer up himselfe a sacrifice for their sins, to redeeme, to instruct, and to comfort them. Let us learne therefore to give a true definition of Christ, not as the Schoole Divines doe, and such as seeke righteousness by their own works, which make him a new law-giver, who abolishing the old law, hath established a new. To these Christ is nothing else but an exactor and a tyrant. But let us define him as *Paul* here doth: namely that he is the Sonne of God, who not for our desert, or any righteousness of ours, but of his own free mercy offered up himselfe a sacrifice for us sinners, that he might sanctifie us for ever.

the offices of Christ.

Christ then is no *Moses*, no exactor, no giver of laws, but a giver of grace, a Saviour, and one that is full of mercy: briefly: he is nothing else but infinite mercy and goodness, freely given and bountifully giving unto us. And thus shall you paint out Christ in his right colours. If you suffer him any otherwise to be painted out unto you, when temptation and trouble cometh, you shall soone be overthrowne. Now, as it is the greatest knowledge and cunning that Christians can have, thus to define Christ: so of all things it is the hardest. For I my selfe even in this great light of the Gospell, wherein I have beene so long exercised, have much a doe to hold this definition of Christ which *Paul* here giveth: So deeply hath this doctrine and pestilent opinion, that Christ is a law-giver, entred even as it were oyle into

A true definition of Christ.

The greatest cunning that Christians can have is to define Christ rightly.

my bones. Ye young men therefore are in this case much more happy then we that are old. For ye are not infected with these pernicious errors, wherein I have beene so nussed and so drowned even from my youth, that at the very hearing of the Name of Christ my heart hath trembled and quaked for feare: for I was perswaded that he was a severe judge. Wherefore it is to me a double travaile, and trouble to correct and reforme this evill: First to forget, to condemne, and to resist this old grounded error, that Christ is a law-giver and a judge: for it alwayes returneth and placketh me back: Then to plant in my heart a new and true perswasion of Christ, that he is a justifier and a Saviour. Yee (I say) that are young may learne with much lesse difficulty, to know Christ purely and sincerely, if ye will. Wherefore if any man feele himselfe oppressed with heavinesse and anguish of heart, he must not impute it unto Christ, although it come under the name of Christ, but unto the devill, who oftentimes cometh under the colour of Christ, and transformeth himselfe into an Angell of light.

This opinion, that Christ is a judge, is not easily rejected.

Let us learne therefore to put a difference between Christ and a law-giver, not onely in word but also in deed and practise, that when the devill shall come under the shadow of Christ, and shall goe about to trouble us under his name, we may know him, not to be Christ, but a very fiend in deed. For Christ when he cometh, is nothing else but joy and sweetnesse to a trembling and broken heart, as here *Paul* witnesseth, who setteth him out with this most sweet and comfortable title, when he saith: *which loved me, and gave himselfe for me.* Christ therefore in very deed is a lover of those: which are in trouble and anguish, in sin and death, and such a lover as gave himselfe for us: who is also our high Priest, that is to say, a Mediator between God and us miserable and wretched sinners. What could be said (I pray you) more sweet and comfortable to the poore afflicted conscience? Now, if these things be true (as they are in deed most true, or else the Gospell must be nothing but a fable,) then are we not justified by the righteousnes of the law: but much lesse by our own righteousnesse.

Christ is a lover of the afflicted, and such as feele the burden of their sins.

Me, for Me.

Reade therefore with great vehemencie these words, *Me, and for Me,* and so inwardly practise with thy selfe, that thou, with a sure faith maist conceive and print this *Me* in thy heart, and apply it unto thy selfe, not doubting but thou art in the number of those to whom

whom

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Chap II.

Upon the EPISTLE

and to say: I will justify thee, and I will save thee. By what meanes? By masses, pilgrimages, pardons, merits and such like. We see then how proudly Antichrist hath lift up himselfe against and above God, and set himselfe in the place of Christ, rejected the grace of God, and denyed the faith. For this is his doctrine: Faith availeth nothing (saith he) unlesse it be joyned with works: and by this false and detestable doctrine he hath defaced, darkened, and utterly buried the benefit of Christ, and in the stead of the grace of Christ and his Kingdome, he hath established the doctrine of workes and the kingdome of ceremonies, and hath confirmed the same with meeke trifles and doting dreames, and by this meanes he hath wrested the whole world out of Christs hands (who alone ought to reigne in the conscience) and hath throwne it downe headlong into hell.

Hereby we may easily understand what it is to reject and refuse the grace of God, even to seeke righteousness by the law. Now who hath ever heard that a man by keeping of the law, rejecteth grace? Do we then sinne in keeping of the law? No forsooth. But we despise grace when we observe the law to this end, that we may be justified through it. The law is good, holy and profitable, and yet it justifieth not. He then that keepeth the law to be justified thereby, rejecteth grace, denieth Christ, despiseth his sacrifice, and will not be saved by this inestimable price, but will satisfie for his sins through the righteousness of the law, or deserve grace by his owne righteousness: and this man blasphemeth and despiseth the grace of God. Now, what an horrible thing is it to say, that any man should be so devillish, as to despise the grace and mercy of God? And yet notwithstanding all the world doth so: Albeit it cannot abide that any man should so judge of it, but will seeme to do high service and honour unto God. Now followeth the second argument.

Verse 21. *For if righteousness come by the law, then Christ died in vaine.*

These words of Paul ought diligently to be weighed and considered in this wise. Is it true that Christ suffered death or not? Again, did he suffer in vaine or not? Here we are constrained to answer, except we be starke mad, that he suffered in very deede, and that he suffered not in vaine, nor for himselfe, but for us. If then he suffered not in vaine, it followeth of necessity that righteousness cometh not by the law.

Here

Antichrist
rejecteth
grace, and
denieth the
faith.

To reject
the grace of
God.

The world is
so wicked
and perverse
that it re-
jecteth the
grace of
God.

Here againe I admonish you, that *Paul* speaketh not of the ceremoni-
 all law only, as the Papists do continually dreame. Take now there-
 fore the ceremoniall law, and even the morall law it selfe also, or the
 law of the ten Commandements, wherein is contained the most per-
 fect religion, and the highest service of God : that is to say, faith, the
 feare of God, the love of God, and the love of our neighbour, and
 shew me any man: that hath beene justified thereby: yet is it true
 notwithstanding that Christ died in vaine. For he that is justified by
 this law, hath power in himselfe to obtaine righteousness. For in
 that he doth what in him lyeth, he deserveth grace, and the holy
 Ghost is powred into him, whereby he is now able to love God and
 his neighbour. This being granted, it must needs follow that Christ
 dyed in vaine. For what need of Christ hath he which both loveth
 Christ and giveth himselfe for him, so that he is able by the merit of
 congruence before grace to obtaine grace, and then to do such works
 as by the merit of worthines after grace, he is able to deserve eternall
 life? Then take away Christ with all his benefits, for he is utterly
 unprofitable. But why was he borne? why was he crucified? why
 did he suffer? why was he made my high Priest, loving me and gi-
 ving himselfe an inestimable sacrifice for me? In vaine (no doubt)
 and to no purpose at all, if righteousness come by no other meanes
 then the Papists teach: for, without grace and without Christ, I find
 no righteousness either in my selfe or in the law.

Not onely
 the ceremo-
 niall law, but
 also the law
 of the ten
 commande-
 ments is un-
 able to jus-
 tifie.

Is this horrible blasphemy to be suffered or dissembled, that the divine
 Majesty, not sparing his owne deare Son, but delivering him to death
 for us all, should not do all these things seriously and in good earnest,
 but as it were in sport? Before I would admit this blasphemy, I would
 not onely that the holinesse of all the Papists and merit-mongers, but
 also of all the Saints and holy Angels should be throwne into the bot-
 tom of hell, and condemned with the devill. Mine eyes shall behold
 nothing else but this inestimable price, my Lord and Saviour Christ.
 He ought to be such a treasure unto me that all other things should be
 but dung in comparison of him. He ought to be such a light unto me,
 that when I have apprehended him by faith, I should not know whe-
 ther there be any law, any sin, any righteousness or any unrighteousnes
 in the world. For what are all things which are in heaven and earth
 in comparison of the Son of God Christ Iesus my Lord and Saviour,
Who loved me and gave himselfe for me?

The righte-
 ounes of all
 Saints, is no-
 thing in co-
 parison of
 the righte-
 ounesse of
 Christ.

A common
stone to re-
iect the
grace of
God.

The Pope is
the author
of all abho-
minations in
the Church.
The Popes
pardons

Wherefore to reject the grace of God, is an horrible sin and commonly reigning throughout the world: whereof all they are guilty which seeke righteousness by their owne works. For whiles they seeke to be justified by their owne works and merits, or by the law, they reject the grace of God and Christ, as I have said. And of all these abominations the Pope hath bin the onely author. For he hath not onely defaced and troden under his feete the Gospell of Christ, but hath also replenished the world with his curled traditions. And hereof, amongst other enormities, his bulls and pardons are a sufficient witness: whereby he absolveth, not such as beleeve, but such as are contrite, make confession to a Priest, and reach out their helping hand to the maintenance of his pomp and traditions. Yet notwithstanding in this great light of the Gospell, the blind and obstinate Papists do continue still in their wicked opinions and doting dreames, saying that the qualitics of nature do remaine sound and uncorrupt, and that men are able to prepare themselves to grace, or to deserue grace by their owne works and merits. And so farre off is it that they will acknowledge their impiety and errour, that they do yet still obstinately defend the same even against their owne conscience.

If the law
justifie, then
Christ died
in vaine

But we do constantly affirme with *Paul* (for we will not reject the grace of God) that either Christ dyed in vaine, or else the law justifieth not. But Christ dyed not in vaine: therefore the law justifieth not. Christ the Sonne of God, of his owne free grace and mercy, hath justified us: therefore the law could not justifie us: For if it could, then had Christ done unwisely in that he gave himselfe for our finnes, that we theseby might be justified. We conclude therefore, that we are justified neither by our owne works and merits before grace or after, neither yet by the law.

A compari-
son between
Christ and
the law.

Now, if my salvation was so costly and deare a price unto Christ, that he was constrained to dye for my finnes, then all my workes with all the righteousness of the law, are but vile and nothing worth in comparifon of this inestimable price. For how can I buy that for a farthing, which cost many thousand talents of gold? Now the law (to speake nothing of other matters which are of much lesse value) with all the works and righteousness thereof, is but as a farthing, if ye compare it unto Christ: who by his death hath vanquished my death, and hath purchased righteousness and everlasting life. Should I then despise and reject this incomparable price, and
by

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

he saith: *If righteousness come by the law, then Christ died in vaine*, he speaketh here nothing of mans strength, reason or wisdom, be it never so great (for the greater it is, the sooner it deceiveth a man) but he saith plainly without all condition: *If by the law, &c.* Wherefore reason lightned, aided and directed by the law, yea even by the law of God, is so unable to attaine righteousness, that it draweth a man from righteousness, and rejecteth Christ: Set thou therefore the death of Christ alone against all laws, and with *Paul*, know nothing but Jesus Christ crucified. Receive no light either of reason, or of the law, or of any thing else than of Christ alone. Then shalt thou be learned indeed, righteous and holy, and shalt receive the holy Ghost, which shall preserve thee in the purity of the word and faith: but set Christ aside, and all things are but vaine.

1 Cor. 2.2.

The commendation of the righteousness of the law.

To make the death of Christ unprofitable.

Here againe we see, what a goodly commendation *Paul* giveth to the righteousness of the law, or mans own righteousness, namely, that it is a contemning and rejecting of the grace of God, and an abolishing of the death of Christ. *Paul* is no great Rhetorician, and yet see what matter he ministreth to him that listeth to play the Rhetorician. What eloquence is able sufficiently to set forth these words, *To reject grace, the grace of God: Also, that Christ died in vaine?* The horribleness whereof is such, that all the eloquence in the world is not able to expresse it. It is a small matter to say, that any man died in vaine: but to say that Christ died in vaine, is to take him quite away. Who so listeth to play the Rhetorician, hath here matter enough to dilate and amplify at large, what an horrible and blasphemous doctrine it is to set up the righteousness of the law and works. For what can be more blasphemous and horrible, then to make the death of Christ unprofitable? and what do they else which keep the law to this end, that they may be justified thereby? Now, to make the death of Christ unprofitable, is to make his resurrection, his victory, his glory, his kingdom, heaven, earth, God himselfe, the Majestic of God, and briefly all things else unprofitable, and of none effect.

This thundring and lightning from heaven against the righteousness of the law and mans own righteousness, should make us to abhorre it. And here with this thunder-clap falleth down all the orders of Monks and Friars, with all such superstitious religions. For who will not detest his own vowes, his cowles, his shaven crowne, all mens traditions, yea the very law of *Moses* also, if he heare that for these

these things he rejecteth the grace of God, and maketh the death of Christ unprofitable: The world hearing this, doth not beleve that it is true. It thinketh that such horrible wickednes cannot enter into any mans heart, that he should reject the grace of God, and esteeme the death of Christ as a thing of nought? And yet this sin commonly reigneth. For whosoever seeketh righteousnesse without Christ, either by works, merits, satisfactions, afflictions, or by the law, rejecteth the grace of God, and despiseth the death of Christ, whatsoever he protesteth with his mouth to the contrary.

The third Chapter.

Verse 1. *O foolish Galathians.*



PAUL here sheweth his Apostolicall care and burning zeale which he beareth to the Church: so that in disputing and confuting, he intermingleth sometimes gentle exhortations, and sometimes he sharply reproveth, according to his owne rule given to *Timothie*, *Preach* (saith he) *the word: be instant in season and out of season: improve, rebuke, exhort, 2 Tim. 4.* Here the simple reader may haply be deceived if he be not circumspect, to thinke that *Paul* in teaching keepeth no order at all. And indeed after the manner of the Rhetoricians he observeth none: but as concerning the Spirit he useth a goodly order.

Pauls order
in teaching.

Now, after that he hath sufficiently proved, and with two strong arguments confirmed this article, that Christian righteousnesse cometh not by keeping of the law, but by faith in Christ, and withall hath confuted the doctrine of the false Apostles: in the midst of this discourse he turneth his talke to the *Galathians*, and reproveth them, saying: *O yee foolish Galathians, &c.* As if he should say: Alas, from whence are yee false, O ye miserable *Galathians*? I have most carefully and diligently taught you the truth of the Gospell and ye also have received the same of me with fervent zeale and great diligence. How then cometh it to passe, that ye are so suddenly false away from it? who hath bewitched you?

O ye foolish
Galathians.

He reproveth the *Galathians* very sharply (as it seemeth) when he calleth them *fooles*, *bewitched*, and *disobedient to the truth.*

Now, whether he did this of zeale or compassion, I will not here contend: both may be true. A carnall man would interpret this to be a reviling, rather then a godly reprehension. Did *Paul* then give an evill example, or was he spitefull against the Churches of *Galathia*, because he called them foolish and bewitched? No, not so. For with a Christian zeale it is lawfull for an Apostle, a Pastour or Preacher, sharply to reprove the people committed to his charge: and such reprovings are both fatherly and godly. So parents, of a fatherly and motherly affection, do sharply reprove and rebuke their children: which they would not beare if another should do it. The Schoolemaster sometimes is angry with his scholer, he rebuketh him and beateth him: all which he taketh in good part, & would not beare it at the hands of his equall. The Magistrate likewise is angry: he reproveth and punisheth such as are under his charge. And this dicipline is not only good, but also very necessary: without the which nothing can be well done. Wherefore unlesse the Magistrate, the Minister, the father and mother be angry, and use to reprove or rebuke when the case requireth, he is unprofitable, and never shall discharge his office rightly.

Wherefore sharp chidings and bitter words are as necessary in every kind of life, as any other vertue else. Yet notwithstanding this anger must be so tempered, that it proceed not of any envy or malice, but onely of a fatherly affection and Christian zeale: that is to say, it ought not to be childish or woman like, seeking revenge: but onely for the correcting of the fault: As the father correcteth not his child with desire to revenge, but onely that the child thereby may be the better. And these kinds of anger are good, and are called in the Scripture zeales or jealousies. For in chastising my brother, my child, my scholer or subject in this sort, I seeke not his destruction, but his profit and well-fare.

It may be then that *Paul* here rebuketh the *Galathians*, either of a very zeale (not to destroy them, but by this meanes to reduce them into the way againe, and to amend them) or else of pity and compassion, as it were by way of complaint, for that it grieveth him that they should be so miserably seduced. As if he should say: I am sorry and ashamed to heare of this your miserable case, your wretched doings, &c. In like manner doe we also reprehend the miserable: not that we tread them downe, or upbraide them with their misery, but as having compassion on them, and seeking their amendment. This

I say

The chiding
of parents
towards
their chil-
dren.

Anger some-
times a ne-
cessary ver-
tue.

Just anger is
called in the
Scripture,
zeale, or je-
lousie.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

The Scripture being one and the selfe-same truth, is of sundry persons diversly handled.

of divers spirits are diversly handled. One in teaching is milde and gentle: another more rough and rigorous. Thus the Spirit of God being powred into divers vessels, doth not quench at once the vices of nature: but by little and little during this life, he purgeth that sinne which is rooted, not onely in the *Galathians*, but also in all men of all nations.

Grace by little and little purgeth the godly from their old sins.

Albeit then, that the *Galathians* were lightned and did beleere, and had now received the holy Ghost by the preaching of faith, notwithstanding this remnant of vice (this foolishnesse I meane) and the originall corruption which afterwards did easily burst out into the flame of false doctrine, remained in them still. Wherefore let no man trust so much in himselfe, as to thinke that when he hath received grace, he is throughly purged from his old vices. Indeed many things are purged in us, & principally the head of the Serpent, that is to say, infidelity and ignorance of God is cut off and bruised, but the slimy body & the remnants of sin remaine still in us. Let not man therefore presume so much of himselfe, that when he hath once received faith, he can by and by be throughly changed into a new man: Nay, he shall keepe some what of his old vices still cleaving unto him, though he be never so good and so perfect a Christian. For we are not yet dead, but wee still live in the flesh: which, because it is not yet pure, continually lusteth against the Spirit. *I am carnall (saith Paul) sold under sin. I see another law in my members rebelling against the law of my mind.* Wherefore the naturall vices that were in us before we received faith, do still remaine in us after that we have received faith: saving that now they are subdued to the Spirit, which hath the upper hand, to keepe them under that they rule not: and yet not without great conflict. This glory is due to Christ alone, and this title he beareth, that he is pure and without blemish. *1 Pet. 2. Who did no sinne, neither was there any guile found in his mouth.*

Heb. 12.1.
Gal. 5.17.
Rom. 7.14.

None pure but Christ alone,

Verse 1. *Who hath bewitched you that you should not beleere the truth?*

A commendation of the righteousness of the law.

Here have ye another commendation of this goodly righteousness of the law, and of our owne righteousness, namely that it maketh us to contemne the truth: it bewitcheth us in such sort that we do not beleere nor obey the truth, but rebell against it.

Of the bodily and spirituall witchcraft.

Paul calleth the *Galathians* foolish and bewitched, comparing them to children, to whom witchcraft doth much harme. As though he should say: It hapned to you as it doth to children, whom witches, forcerers and inchanters are wont to charme by their inchantments & by the illusion of the devil. Afterwards in the 5 Chapter he rehearseth sorcery among the works of the flesh, which is a kind of witchcraft, whereby he plainly testifieth, that indeed such witchcraft and sorcery there is, and that it may be done. Moreover, it cannot be denied but that the devill liveth, yea & reigneth throughout the whole world. Witchcraft and sorcery therefore are the works of the devill, whereby he doth not onely hurt men, but also, by the permission of God, he sometimes destroyeth them. Furthermore, we are all subject to the devill both in body & goods, and we be strangers in this world, whereof he is the Prince and god. Therefore the bread which we eat, the drinke which we drinke, the garments which we weare, yea the aire and whatsoever we live by in the flesh, is under his dominion.

Witchcraft and sorcery are the workes of the devill.

But he doth not onely bewitch men after this grosse manner, but also after a more subtill sort and much more dangerous: wherein he is a marvellous cunning workman. And hereof it commeth that Paul applieth the bewitching of the senses to the bewitching of the spirit. For by this spirituall witchcraft that old serpent bewitcheth not mens senses, but their minds with false and wicked opinions: which opinions they that are so bewitched, doe take to be true and godly. Briefly, so great is the malice of this Sorcerer the devill, and his desire to hurt, that not onely he deceiveth those secure and proud spirits with his inchantments, but even those also which are professors of true Christianity, and well affected in religion: Yea, as touching my selfe, to say the truth, he sometimes assaileth me so mightily, and oppresseth me with such heavy cogitations, that he utterly shadoweth my Saviour Christ from me, and in a manner taketh him cleane out of my sight. To be brieve, there is none of us all which is not oftentimes bewitched with false perswasions: that is to say, which doth not feare, trust, or rejoyce where he ought not, or doth not sometimes think otherwise of God, of Christ, of faith, of his vocation, &c. then he should doe.

Satan bewitcheth men spiritu- ally.

Luthers conficts with Satan.

Let us therefore learne to know the subtile sleights of this Sorcerer, lest if he find us sleeping in security, he deceive us by his enchantments. True it is, that by his sorcery he can do no hurt to our ministry: yet is he with us in spirit. Day and night he rangeth about, seeking how he may devoure every one of us alone, and unlesse he find us sober and armed with spirituall weapons, that is to say, with the word of God and faith, he will devoure us.

The profit that cometh to the godly by the temptation of Satan.

This is the cause that he oftentimes stirreth up new battailes against us. And indeed it is very profitable for us, that he thus assaileth us, and by his subtile traines exerciseth us: For by this meanes he confirmeth our doctrine, he stirreth up and increaseth faith in us. Indeed we have beene many times cast downe, and yet still are cast downe in this conflict, but we perish not: for Christ hath alwayes triumphed, and doth triumph through us. Wherefore we hope assuredly, that we shall also hereafter by Iesus Christ obtaine the victory against the devill. And this hope bringeth unto us sure consolation, so that in the midst of our tentations we take courage and say, Behold, Satan hath heretofore tempted us, and by his false illusions hath provoked us to infidelity, to the contempt of God, despairs, &c. yet hath he not prevailed, neither shall he prevaile hereafter. *He is greater that is in us, then he that is in the world.* Christ is stronger, who hath and doth overcome that strong one in us, and shall overcome him for ever. Notwithstanding the devill sometimes overcometh us in the flesh, that we may have experience of the power of a stronger against that strong one, and may say with *Paul*. When I am weake, then am I strong.

1 Iohn 4 4.

Satan continually bewitcheth men,

Iob 1. 8

crossed out

Let no man thinke therefore that the *Galathians* onely were bewitched of the devill: but let every man think that he himselfe might have been, and yet may be bewitched by him. There is none of us so strong that he is able to resist him, & specially if he attempt to do it by his owne strength. *Iob was an upright and a just man, fearing God; and there was none like unto him upon the earth.* But what power had he against the devill, when God withdrew his hand? Did not this holy man horribly fall? Therefore this enchanter was not onely mighty in the *Galathians*, but he goeth about continually to deceive, if not all men; yet as many as he can with his illusions and false persuasions: *For he is a lyer, and the father of lies.*

Ps 8. 44

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Chap. III.

Vpon the EPISTLE

The exam-
ple of Do-
ctor Kraus.

The devils
definition
of a false
Christ.

Doctor Kraus of Hal, which said: I have denied Christ, and therefore he standeth now before his Father and accuseth me. He being blinded with the illusion of the devill, had so strongly conceived in his mind this imagination, that by no exhortation, no consolation, no promises of God he could be brought from it, whereupon he despaired and so miserably destroyed himselfe. This was a meere lie, a bewitching of the devill, and a fantastical definition of a strange Christ whom the Scripture knoweth not. For the Scripture setteth forth Christ, not as a Iudge, a tempter, an accuser, but a reconciler, a mediator, a comforter and a throne of grace.

But the poore man deluded by the devill, could not then see this, and therefore against all Scripture, he thinketh this to be an undoubted truth: Christ accuseth thee before his Father: he standeth not for thee, but against thee: therefore thou art damned. And this temptation is not of man, but of the devill, which that enchanter most strongly imprinteth in the heart of the tempted. But unto us which are led and taught by another spirit, it is a cursed lie, and a bewitching of the devill. But unto those that are thus bewitched, it is so certaine a truth, that none can be more certaine.

The godly
must dili-
gently watch.
Worldly &
secure men
are soone
bewitched.

Seeing then that the devill is able to print in our hearts so manifest a lie, that wee would sweare a thousand times it were an undoubted truth, we must not be proud, but walke in feare and humility, calling upon the Lord Iesus, that we be not led into temptation. Worldly & secure men, which having heard the Gospell once or twice preached, do by and by imagine that they have received abundance of the spirit, fall at length in like manner, because they feare not God, they are not thankfull unto him, but perswade themselves that they are able not onely to hold and defend the doctrine of true religion, but also to stand against the devill in any assault or conflict, be it never so great. Such are meet instruments for the devill to bewitch and to throw downe to desperation.

On the other side, say not thou: I am perfect, I cannot fall: but humble thy selfe, and feare, lest if thou stand to day, to morrow thou be overthrowne. I my selfe, although I be a Doctor of Divinity, and have now preached Christ, and fought against the devill in his false teachers a great while, by mine owne experience, have found how hard a matter this is. For I cannot shake off Satan as I desire: neither can I so apprehend Christ as the Scripture setteth him forth: but of-
tentimes

tentimes the devill setteth before mine eyes a false Christ. But thanks be to God, who keepeth us in the word, in faith and in prayer, that we may walk before him in humility and feare, and not presume of our owne wisdome, righteoulnes and strength, but trust in the power of Christ, who is strong when we are weake, and by us weake and feeble creatures continually overcommeth and triumpheth: To whom be glory for ever.

This bewitching then, and this forcery, is nothing else but a plaine illusion of the devill, printing in the heart a false opinion of Christ and against Christ, and he that is deluded with this opinion, is bewitched. They therefore that have this opinion, that they are justified by the works of the law, or by the traditions of men, are bewitched: for this opinion is against faith and against Christ. Paul useth this word *bewitching* in contempt of the false Apostles, which so vehemently urged the doctrine of the law and works. As if he should say: what a devillish bewitching is this? For as the senses are perverted by bodily witchcraft, so are the minds of men also deluded by this spirituall witchcraft.

Witchcraft
what it is.

Who are
bewitched.

Verse 1. *That ye should not obey the truth?*

The Galatians at the first did gladly heare and obey the truth: Therefore when he saith *Who hath bewitched you?* he sheweth that they were bewitched by these false Apostles, and were falne away from the truth which before they did obey. But this seemeth yet a more bitter and vehement kind of speech, when he saith that they do not beleve the truth. For he signifieth by these words that they are bewitched, and that he would deliver them from this witchery, and yet they will not acknowledge nor receive this benefit. For it is certaine that he did not reduce all from the errors of the false Apostles unto the truth, but that many of them remained yet still bewitched. Therefore he useth these sharpe and vehement words: *Who hath bewitched you?* As if he would say: Ye are so deluded and bewitched, that now ye cannot obey the truth: I feare lest many of you are utterly lost, and so falne away, that ye will never returne againe to the truth.

And here ye have againe to note by the way, another goodly commendation of the law and of mans owne righteousnesse, that the doctrine and preaching thereof, be it never so fervent, if the preaching

An other
goodly com-
mendation
of the righ-
teousnes of
the law.

preaching of Christ and of the Gospell do not go withall, never bringeth with it true conversion and hearty repentance. Here of manifest demonstrations we have, not onely by plaine wordes of the Scripture, but also by evident experience. For as it is true which is written to the Hebrewes, that the law bringeth none to perfection: so in this epistle S. Paul by manifest example confirmeth the same, reasoning thus with the *Galathians*: Tell me, saith he, ye that would be justified by the law, received ye the Spirit of God, by hearing the law, or by the Gospell of faith preached? proving by their owne experience, that it is not the law nor the preaching thereof, but the Gospell and preaching of faith that raiseth a man being fallen, and quickeneth him to true repentance, as more fully is to be expressed hereafter when we come to the place. And yet neither is the preaching of the law without his effect: the use whereof onely serveth to shew forth the wrath of God and to cast downe: but to raise up a man, that cometh by the ministration of the Gospell, and the preaching of faith onely in Christ.

Verse 1. *To whom Iesus Christ before was described in your sight.*

It was bitterly spoken where he said before, that they were so bewitched; that they could not obey the truth: But it is more bitterly said, when he addeth that Christ was so lively described before them, that they might handle him with there hands, and yet they would not obey the truth. Thus he convinceth them even by their owne experience. As though he would say: Ye are so bewitched and deluded with the devillish opinions of the false Apostles, that now ye will not obey the truth. And whereas I have with great travell and diligence set forth Christ plainly before your eyes, yet doth this profit you nothing at all.

In these words he hath respect to the former arguments, whereby he proved, that to those that will be justified by the law, Christ is but the minister of sinne, that such do reject the grace of God, and that to them Christ dyed in vaine. Which arguments he had before more vehemently presented and more largely amplified in their presence, even as if a painter had pourtraied Christ Jesus before their eyes. Now being absent he putteth them in mind of the same things, saying: *To whom Iesus Christ was described in your sight.* As if he said: There is no painter that with his colours, can so lively set out

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

rebukes, slanders and injuries, they spit upon him, and with their wicked opinions they wound him, and thrust him through, that in them they may die most miserably: and in the stead of him they set up a glorious witch-craft, wherby men are so miserably charmed and deluded, that they cannot know Christ to be their justifier, their reconciler and Saviour, but a minister of sin, their accuser, their Judge and their destroyer, which must be pacified no otherwise then by our workes and merits.

The doctrine
of the Pa-
pists.

And out of this opinion did afterwards spring the most pestilent and pernicious doctrine that is in the whole Papacie, which is this: If thou wilt serue God, thou must merit forgiveness of sinnes and everlasting life, and must also helpe others that they may attaine to salvation: Thou must enter into a Monastery, vow obedience, chastitie, povertie, &c. Monkes and Friers, and the rest of that religious rabble, being puffed up with this opinion of their owne holiness, bragged that they only were in the life and state of perfection, and that other Christians led but a common life, for they did no * undue works, or more then they were bound to doe, that is, they did not vow and keepe chastitie, povertie, obedience, &c. they were but only baptized, and kept the ten Commandements: But as for themselves, besides that which was common as well to them as to other Christians, they kept also the works of supererogation, and the * counsels of Christ: wherfore they hoped to have merits and a place in heauen among the principall Saints, farr above the common sort of Christians.

* Undue
workes are
such as the
Papists say
they are not
bound to do

* The Pa-
pists bragge
that they
keepe, not
onely the
commande-
ments, but

also the
counsels &
exhortations
of Christ,
wherto they
say, they are
not bound.

In the time
of Poperie
we were so
bewitched,
that it was
impossible
to acknow-
ledge Christ
&c.

Mat. 23. 7.
Mat. 23. 15.

This was undoubtedly an horrible illusion of the devill, whereby he hath bewitched almost the whole world. And every man, the more holy he would seeme to be, the more he is snared with that witchery, that is to say, with the pestilent perswasion of his owne righteousness. And this was the cause that we could not know that Jesus Christ was our Mediatour and Saviour: but we thought that he was a severe Judge, which should be pacified by our own works: which was nothing else but most horribly to blaspheme Christ, and as *Paul* said before, to reject the grace of God, to make the death of Christ of none effect, and not only to kill him, but also most shamefully to crucifie him againe. And this is the right meaning of that which Christ alleadgath out of *Daniel*: *That abomination standeth in the holy place.* Wherfore every Monke and religious person, and every

every

every Justiciary seeking remission of sinnes and righteousnesse by his owne workes or by his afflictions, is a crucifier of Christ now reigning and living, although not in the proper person of Christ, yet in his owne heart and in the hearts of others. And whosoever doe enter into Monasteries to the end, that by the keeping of their rule they may be justified, do enter into the dens of theeves, and such as crucifie Christ again.

Wherefore *Paul* useth in this place very severe and sharp words, to the end that he may fear and call back the *Galathians* from the doctrine of the false Apostles. As if he should say, consider well what ye have done. Ye have crucified Christ again (and this doe I so plainly shew and paint out before your eyes, that ye may see it, yea and touch it with your hands) because ye seek to be justified by the law. But if righteousnes come by the law, then is Christ a minister of sin, and his death altogether in vain. If this be true, then must it needs follow that Christ is crucified again in you.

And it is not without cause that he addeth this clause, *in you*, or *among you*. For Christ is no more crucified, he dieth no more in his own person, as is said, *Rom. 6.* but he dieth in us; when we, rejecting true doctrine, grace, faith, free remission of sins, seek to be justified by our own works, or else by the works commanded in the law. Here Christ is crucified in us again. Now this false and wicked perswasion, to seek righteousnes by the law and works, is nothing else (as I have before more amply declared) but the illusion of the devill, wherewith men are so bewitched, that in no wise they can acknowledge the benefit of Christ: yea in all their life they can do nothing else, but deny the Lord who hath bought them, and in whose name they were baptised, and crucifie him again in themselves. Whosoever then hath any feare of God or love unto Christ and his true religion, let him fly quickly out of this *Babylon*, and let him tremble at the very name of the Papacy. For the impiety and abomination thereof is so horrible, that no man is able to expresse it with words, neither can it be otherwise seen, then with spirituall eyes only.

In you or among you.

To seeke righteousnesse by the law.

The horrible abomination of the Papacie.

These two arguments *Paul* persecuteth and beateth into the heads of the *Galathians* very diligently: First, that they are so bewitched of the devill, that they obey not the truth most clearly set forth before their eyes: Secondly, that they crucifie Christ againe in themselves. These seeme to be simple and plaine words, and

The Com-
mendations
of the right-
eousnes of
the law.

without any high eloquence, but in very deed they are so mighty that they exceed all the eloquence of man. It cannot therefore be comprehended, but only in spirit, how great an impiety it is to seek to be justified by the righteousness of the law, or by the righteousness and merits of man. For, as *Paul* saith here, it is nothing else but to be bewitched of the devill, to be disobedient to the truth, and to crucifie Christ again. Are not these goodly commendations of the righteousness of the law, and mans own righteousness?

The fall of
Lucifer.

The Apostle therefore is inflamed with a vehement zeal, and with bitter words he reproveth and condemneth the presumption of mans owne righteousness, rising upon the observation of the law of God, and chargeth it with this impiety, that it crucifieth againe the Sonne of God. Seeing then it is so dangerous a thing, it cannot be beaten downe enough, or condemned as it should be: For thereof ensueth such a fall, as is no less then the fall of *Lucifer*, and such a losse as can never be recovered, and therefore he useth so sharpe and rigorous words against it, that he spareth not the very law of God: against the which he so bitterly inveiyeth, that he seemeth utterly to reject and condemne it. And this doth he, being constrained by great necessity: for otherwise he could not withstand the false Apostles, nor defend the righteousness of faith against them. Albeit then that the law be holy, just and good, yet must it put on, as it were the visour of an hypocrite, seeking to be justified by works. Now he presseth them with an argument, whereof they themselves had good experience, and which they could not deny.

Verse 2. This only would I learne of you: Received yee the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith preached?

An argumēt
taken of the
Galathians
owne expe-
rience.

He speaketh these words with a certaine indignation and contempt of the false Apostles. If I had nothing else against you but even your owne experience (saith he) yet have I enough. As if he should say: Goe to now :: answer me I pray you, which am your scholler (for ye are so sodainely become Doctors, that ye are now my masters and teachers:) *Received yee the Holy Ghost by the workes of the law, or by the preaching of the Gospel?* With this argument hee so convinceth them, that they have nothing to reply againe. For their owne experience is altogether against them: to wit, that they had received the holy Ghost, not by the works of
the

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Chap. III. Vpon the EPISTLE

The law
bringeth not
the holy
Ghost.

Act. 19. 3.

Rom. 11. 7.

Mat. 3. 16.
The appea-
ring of the
holy Ghost.

It is manifest therefore that by the onely preaching of faith, ye received the holy Ghost before ye did any good work, or brought forth any fruits of the Gospell. On the other side, the accomplishing of the law never brought the holy Ghost: much lesse could the onely hearing of the law do it. Therefore not onely the hearing of the law, but that affection and zeale also, whereby ye go about to accomplish the law by your works, is vaine and unprofitable. Wherefore, although a man labour to do all things: that is to say, although he have a zeale of God, and with all his endeavour go about to be saved by the law, and exercise himselfe day and night in the righteousness thereof, notwithstanding he doth but labour and consume himselfe in vaine. For they which are ignorant of the righteousness of God, and go about to establish their own righteousness (as Paul saith in another place) do not submit themselves unto the righteousness of God. Againe: *Israel which followed the law of righteousness, attained not to the law of righteousness, &c.* Now Paul speaketh here of the manifestation of the holy Ghost in the primitive Church. For the holy Ghost came downe in a manifest likeness upon those that did beleve, and by this signe did plainly witness that he was there present at the preaching of the Apostles: also that they which heard the word of faith preached by the Apostles, were accepted as righteous before God: for else the holy Ghost would not have come downe upon them.

The Argument of the Booke containing the Acts of the Apostles.

Cornelius

Wherefore we must diligently weigh and consider the force of this argument, which is so often repeated in the Acts of the Apostles, which booke is written to confirme and establish this argument: for it teacheth nothing else but that the holy Ghost is not given by the law, but by the hearing of the Gospell. For when Peter preached, the holy Ghost forthwith fell upon all those that heard him; and in one day three thousand which were present at the preaching of Peter, beleved and received the holy Ghost, *Acts 2.* So *Cornelius* received the holy Ghost, not by the almes which he gave, but when Peter had opened his mouth; and was yet in speaking, the holy Ghost fell upon all them which with *Cornelius* heard the word, *Acts 10.* These are manifest arguments, experiences,

experiences, and divine workes which cannot deceive us. **L**uke also writeth of *Paul* in the 15 of the *Acts*, that where he had preached the Gospell together with *Barnabas* among the Gentiles, and was returned to *Jerusalem*, he set himselfe against the Pharisees and Disciples of the Apostles, which urged circumcision and the keeping of the law, as necessary to salvation: whose mouthes he so stopped (saith *Luke*) in shewing what things he and *Barnabas* had done amongst the Gentiles, that the whole Church was amazed at the hearing thereof, especially when they heard that God had wrought so many and so great miracles & wonders by them among the Gentiles: and when they which bare a zeale to the law, did wonder how it could be that the uncircumcised Gentiles, not doing the law nor the works thereof, nor having the righteousnes of the law, should notwithstanding attaine to this grace, to be justified and receive the holy Ghost as well as the Jews that were circumcised: here *Paul* and *Barnabas* did alledge nothing else but manifest experience: wherwith they were so confounded, that they had nothing to reply againe. By this meanes *Paulus Sergius* the Lieutenant, and all those Cities, Regions, Kingdoms and Countries where the Apostles had preached, by the onely preaching of faith did belceve, without the law and the works thereof.

Paulus Sergius the Lieutenant.

In the whole book therefore of the *Acts* there is nothing else handled in effect, but that it behoveth as well Jews as Gentiles, as well righteous as unrighteous, to be justified by faith alone in Christ *Jesus*, without the law and the works thereof: The which thing doth appeare as well by the preaching of *Peter*, of *Paul*, of *Stephen*, of *Philip* and the other Apostles, as also by the examples of the Gentiles and Jewes. For as God gave the holy Ghost to the Gentiles which lived without the law, by the preaching of the Gospell: so did he give the same to the Jews: yet not by the law nor by the ceremonies and sacrifices commanded in the law, but by the onely preaching of faith. Now, if the law had been able to justify, and the righteousnes of the law had been necessary to salvation, then doubtlesse the holy Ghost had not been given to the Gentiles which kept not the law. But experience it self doth plainly witness, that the holy Ghost was given unto them without the law (and this did the Apostles, both *Peter*, *Paul*, *Barnabas* and others see:) therefore the law doth not justify, but faith onely in Christ, which the Gospell setteth forth.

Both Jewes and Gentiles are justified by faith onely.

These things are diligently to be marked, because of the adversaries, which doe not consider what is handled in the Acts of the Apostles. I my selfe in times past also read this booke, when indeed I understood in it nothing at all: Therefore when thou hearest or readest in the Acts of the Apostles, or wheresoever it be in the Scriptures, this word *Gentiles*, thou must thinke that it is not to be understood literally of the common nature of the Gentiles, but it carrieth with it a spirituall meaning, and is to be taken, not for those which are under the law, as were the Jewes (as before is said in the second Chapter: *We by nature Jewes, &c.*) but for those which are without the law. Wherefore to say that the Gentiles are justified by faith, is nothing else, but that they which observe not the law nor do the works thereof, which are not circumcised, which sacrifice not, &c. are justified and receive the holy Ghost. By what means? Not by the law and the works thereof (for they have no law:) but freely and without any other meanes, except onely the hearing of the Gospell.

The Gentiles justified by faith.

So *Cornelius* and his friends whom he had called to his house, do nothing, neither looke they upon any works going before, and yet as many as are present, receive the holy Ghost. No man speaketh but *Peter*; they sitting by doe nothing: they think not of the law, much lesse do they keep it: they sacrifice not: they care not for the receiving of circumcision, but onely are bent to heare that which *Peter* speaketh. He by his preaching brought the holy Ghost into their hearts, as it were visibly: *For they spake with tongues, and glorified God.*

But some man may here cavill and say: Who knoweth whether it were the holy Ghost or no? Well let him cavill. Sure it is that the holy Ghost so bearing witness, doth not lie, but hereby sheweth that he accepteth the Gentiles for righteous, and justifieth them by no other meanes, then by the onely voice of the Gospell, or hearing of faith in Christ preached. We may see also in the Acts how greatly the Jewes marvelled at this new and strange thing. For the faithfull which were of the circumcision, and came with *Peter* to *Casarea*, seeing the gift of the holy Ghost to be powred out also upon the Gentiles in the house of *Cornelius*, were astonied. Also they that were at *Ierusalem* complained of *Peter*, for that he went in to men uncircumcised, and did eat with them. But when they heard the matter declared by *Peter* in order as it was done touching *Cornelius*.

Act. 10. 45

Act. 11. 3.

linus

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

That the ho-
ly Ghost is
given by the
only be-
lieving of faith.

not able to keep it: but we beleeve through the grace of our Lord Je-
sus Christ to be saved, even as they did. So *Peter* here standeth altoge-
ther unto this argument, that God gave unto the Gentiles the selfe-
same grace that he gave to the Jewes. As though he would say:
When I preached to *Cornelius*, I learned by mine owne experience,
that the holy Ghost was given without the law to the Gentiles, by
the onely hearing of faith: therefore in no case are they to be bur-
dened with the law. To conclude, since it is certaine that neither we
nor our fathers were ever able to fulfill the law, it behoveth you also
to reject this error, that righteousnesse and salvation cometh by the
law. And this the beleeving Jewes did by little and little: but the
wicked which by this preaching were offended, at the length were
altogether hardned.

*The commendation of the Booke containing
the Acts of the Apostles.*

The Papists
are our
Iews, which
molest us no
lesse, then
the Iews
did Paul.

The argu-
ment of the
booke con-
taining the
Acts of the
Apostles.

SO in the Acts ye shall find the experience, the preachings, and
also the examples of the Apostles for the confirmation of this
matter, against this obstinate opinion touching the righteousnesse of
the law. And we ought therefore the more to love, and the more
diligently to reade this booke, because it containeth most substan-
tiall testimonies, which are able to comfort and confirme us against
the Papists our Jewes: whose abominations and coloured hypocricie
we impugne and condemne by our doctrine, that we may set forth
the benefits and glory of Christ. Who, though they have no substan-
tiall matter to alledge against us (whereas the Iewes might have
layed against the Apostles, that they had received the law and all
these ceremonies from God,) yet notwithstanding they are no lesse
obstinate in defending their cursed traditions and abominations, then
the Iewes were in maintaining their law which they had received
from God, glorying and bragging that they sit in the place of Bi-
shops, and that the authority to governe the Churches, is commit-
ted unto them. Whereby they would bring us into bondage, and
wrest from us this article, that we are justified, not by faith formed
and adorned with charity (as they say,) but by faith alone. But we
set against them the booke of the Actes. Let them reade this booke,
and consider the examples contained in it, and they shall find this
to be the summe and the argument thereof, that we are justified by
faith

faith only in Christ without works, and that the holy Ghost is given by the only hearing of faith at the preaching of the Gospell, and not at the preaching of the law, nor by the works of the law.

Wherefore thus teach we: O man, although thou fast, give almes, honour thy parents, obey the Magistrate, &c. yet art thou not justified thereby. This voice of the law, honour thy parents, or any other else, either heard or fulfilled, doth not justify. What then? To heare the voice of the Spouse, to heare the word of faith: This word being heard, doth justify. Wherefore? Because it bringeth the holy Ghost which justifieth a man, and maketh him righteous before God.

Hereby we may see what is the difference between the law and the Gospell. The Law never bringeth the holy Ghost, but onely teacheth what we ought to do: therefore it justifieth not. But the Gospell bringeth the holy Ghost, because it teacheth what we ought to receive. Therefore the law and the Gospell are two contrary doctrines. To put righteousness therefore in the law, is nothing else but to fight against the Gospell. For *Moses* with his law is a severe exactor, requireth of us that we should work, and that we should give; briefly, it requireth and exacteth. Contrariwise the Gospell giveth freely and requirerth of us nothing else, but to hold out our hands, and to take that which is offered. Now, to exact and to give, to take and to offer are things contrary, and cannot stand together. For that which is given, I take: but that which I give, I do not take, but I offer it unto another. Therefore if the Gospell be a gift, it requireth nothing. Contrariwise, the law giveth nothing, but it requireth and straightly exacteth of us, yea even impossible things.

The difference between the law and the Gospell.

To exact. To give freely.

of Cornelius in the tenth of the Acts.

HERE our adversaries set against us the example of *Cornelius*. *Cornelius* (say they) was (as *Luke* witnesseth) a good man; just and fearing God, which gave almes to the people, and prayed to God continually: therefore of Congruence he did merit the forgiveness of sinnes, and the sending of the holy Ghost. I answer: *Cornelius* was a Gentile, and this cannot the adversaries deny: For the words which *Peter* alleadgeth in the 10 Chapter of the *Acts*, do plainly witness the same. Yee know (saith he) that it is unlawfull for a man that is a Jew, to accompany with one of another Nation.

Act 10. 28.

Chap. III.

Vpon the EPISTLE.

*Cornelius a
Gentile is
justified by
faith.*

Nation: but God hath shewed me that I should not call any man polluted or unclean. He was therefore a Gentile, and not circumcised, not keeping the law, yea not once thinking of it, because it pertained nothing unto him: and yet notwithstanding he was justified and received the holy Ghost. And this argument (as I said) is handled throughout the whole booke of the Acts: to wit, that the law availeth nothing to righteousness.

*The law
helpeth not
to righteous-
nesse.*

Let this suffice then for the defence of the article of justification, that *Cornelius* was a Gentile, not circumcised, not keeping the law: therefore he was not justified by the law, but by the hearing of faith. God justifieth therefore without the law, and so consequently the law availeth nothing to righteousness. For otherwise God would have given the holy Ghost to the Jewes onely, which had the law and kept it, and not to the Gentiles which had not the law, and much lesse did accomplish it. But God wrought cleane contrary: for the holy Ghost was given to them that kept not the law: wherefore righteousness cometh not by the law. By this meanes the objection of the adversaries which doe not understand the true manner of justification, is answered.

*How the fa-
thers in the
old Testa-
ment were
holy, &c.*

*Faith in
Christ to be
revealed &
now revea-
led and pre-
sent.*

Here againe the adversaries object against us, and say: Be it so that *Cornelius* was a Gentile, and did not receive the holy Ghost by the law, yet notwithstanding forasmuch as the text saith plainly, *that he was a just man, fearing God, giving almes, &c.* it may seeme that by these workes he deserved to have the holy Ghost afterwards given unto him. I answer, that *Cornelius* was a just and a holy man in the old Testament, because of his faith in Christ which was to come, as all the Fathers, Prophets and godly Kings were righteous and received secretly the holy Ghost through faith in Christ to come. But these Popish Sophisters put no difference betweene faith in Christ to come, and in Christ which is already come. Wherefore if *Cornelius* had died before Christ was revealed, yet had he not been damned, because he had the faith of the Fathers, which were saved by faith onely in Christ to come, *Acts 15. 11.* He remaineth then alwayes a Gentile, uncircumcised and without the law, and yet notwithstanding he worshipped the selfe-same God whom the fathers worshipped by faith in the *Messias* to come. But now, because the *Messias* was already come, necessary it was that it should be shewed unto him by the Apostle

Peter

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Naaman the Syrian.

Likewise Naaman the Syrian was (no doubt) a good and a godly man, and had a religious and reverent opinion of God. And although he was a Gentile and belonged not to the kingdome of *Moses*, which then flourished: yet notwithstanding his flesh was cleansed, and the God of Israel was revealed unto him, and he received the holy Ghost. For thus he saith; Now I know assuredly that there is no other God in all the world, but in Israel. He doth nothing at all, he keepeth not the law, he is not circumcised: but only he prayeth, that so much of that earth might be given unto him, as two Mules should be able to carry away. Moreover, it appeareth that faith was not idle in him. For thus he speaketh to the Prophet *Heliseus*: Thy servant will henceforth neither offer burnt sacrifice, nor offering to any other God, saving the Lord. But in this thing the Lord be mercifull unto thy servant, that when my Master goeth into the house of Rimmon to worship there, and leaneth on my hand, and I bow my selfe in the house of Rimmon: When I doe bow down (I say) in the house of Rimmon, the Lord be mercifull to thy servant in this point. To whom the Prophet saith, Go in peace. So was he justified. The few hearing this, fretteth for anger, and saith: what? should the Gentile be justified without the keeping of the law? Should he be compared with us which are circumcised?

2 Reg. 5. 6.

* He feeleth his conscience wounded in being present at idol service, and therefore desireth God to forgive him, lest others by his example might fall to idolatry.

The Gentiles justified without the law, even when the law and policie of *Moses* was yet in force.

Therefore God, long before, when the kingdome of *Moses* was yet standing and flourishing, did shew that he justifieth men without the law, as in deed he justified many Kings in *Egypt* and in *Babylon*: also *Job* and many other Nations of the East. Moreover, *Ninive* a great Citie was justified, and received the promise of God, that it should not be destroyed. By what meanes? Not because it heard and fulfilled the law: but because it believed the word of God which the Prophet *Jonas* preached. For so saith the Prophet: And the Ninivites beleaved God and proclaimed a fast, and put on sack-cloth: that is to say, they repented. Our adversaries doe craftily passe over this word *Beleaved*, and yet the effect of all together

Job. Ninivites.

Jonas 3. 5.

gether resteth therein. Thou readest not in *Jonas* : And the *Ninivites* received the law of *Moses*, were circumcised, offered sacrifice, fulfilled the works of the law: but believing the word, they repented in sackcloth and ashes.

This was done before Christ was revealed, when that faith yet reigned, which beleeveth in Christ to come. If then the Gentiles were justified without the law, and received secretly the holy Ghost, when the law was yet in force, why should the law be required as necessary to righteousness, which by the coming of Christ is now abolished? wherefore this is a strong argument, grounded upon the experience of the *Galathians* : Received yee the holy Ghost by the Works of *Gal. 3. 12.* the law, or by the hearing of faith preached? For they were compelled to grant that they heard nothing of the holy Ghost, before the preaching of *Paul* : but when he preached the Gospell, then received they the holy Ghost.

So we also at this day, convicted by the testimonie of our owne conscience, are constrained to confesse, that the holy Ghost is not given by the law, but by the hearing of faith. For many heretofore in the Papacie, have gone about with great labour and studie, to keepe the law, the decrees of the fathers, and the traditions of the Pope: and some with painfull and continuall exercises in watching and praying, did so wearie and weaken their bodies, that afterwards they were able to do nothing: whereby notwithstanding they gained nothing else, but that they miserably afflicted and tormented themselves. They could never attaine to a quiet conscience, and peace in Christ, but continually doubted of the good will of God towards them: But now, since the Gospell teacheth that the law and works doe not justifie, but faith alone in Jesus Christ, hereupon followeth a most certaine knowledge and understanding, a most joyfull conscience, and a true judgement of every kind of life, and of all things else whatsoever. The believing man may now easily judge, that the Papacie with all the religious orders and traditions thereof is wicked: which before he could not do. For so great blindness reigned in the world, that we thought those works which men had devised, not onely without the will of God, but also contrary to his commandement, to be much better then those, which the Magistrate, the house-holder, the child, the servant did at the commandement of God.

The conscience witnesseth that the holy Ghost is not given by the law, but by the hearing of faith.

The blindness of the Popes kingdom.

Indeed

Indeed we ought to have learned by the word of God, that the religious Orders of the Papists (which only they call holy) are wicked, since there is no commandment of God, or testimony in the holy Scriptures as touching the same. Contrariwise, other Orders of life which have the word and commandment of God, are holy & ordained of God. But we were then wrapped in such horrible darkness, that we could not truly judge of any thing. But now, since the cleare light of the Gospell doth appeare, all kinds of life in the world are under our judgement. We may bouldly pronounce out of the word of God, that the condition of servants, which before the world is most vile, is farr more acceptable unto God, then all the religious Orders of the Papists. For by his word he commendeth, approveth, & adorneth the state of servants, and so doth he not the Orders of Monkes, Friars & such other. Therefore this argument grounded upon experience, ought to prevaile with us also. For although many men in the Papacy wrought many and great works, yet could they never be certaine of the will of God towards them, but they were alwayes in doubt: they could never attaine to the knowledge of God, of themselves, of their calling: they never felt the testimony of the Spirit in their hearts. But now that the truth of the Gospell appeareth, they are fully instructed by the onely hearing of faith, in all these things.

It is not without cause that I doe so largely intreate of these things. For it seemeth to reason but a small matter, that the holy Ghost is received by the onely hearing of faith, and that there is nothing else required of us, but that we setting apart all our workes, should give our selves onely to the hearing of the Gospell. Mans heart doth not understand nor beleve that so great a treasure, namely, the holy Ghost, is given by the onely hearing of faith: but reasoneth after this manner: forgiveness of sinnes, deliverance from death, the giving of the holy Ghost, of righteousness and everlasting life, are great things: therefore if thou wilt obtaine these inestimable benefits, thou must performe some other great and weighty matter. This opinion the devill doth well like and approve, and also increaseth the same in the heart. Therefore when reason heareth this: Thou canst doe nothing for the obtaining of the forgiveness of sinnes, but must onely heare the word of God; by and by it crieth out, and saith: Fie, thou makest too small account of the remission of sinnes, &c. So the inestimable greatnes of the gifts, is the

cause

The orders and kinds of life appointed of God.

The condition of servants allowed before God.

The certaintie of true beleeyers.

By what meanes the holy Ghost is given unto us.

The disputation of mans reason.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Christian by
hearing the
doctrine of
faith.

Wherefore he that will exercise himself to righteousness must first exercise himself in hearing the Gospel. Now, when he hath heard and received the Gospel, let him give thanks to God with a joyfull and a glad heart, and afterwards let him exercise himself in those good workes which are commanded in the law, so that the law and workes may follow the hearing of faith. So may he quietly walk in the light which is Christ, and boldly chuse and do workes, not hypocriticall, but good workes indeed, such as he knoweth to please God and to be commanded of him, and contemne all those hypocriticall shadowes of free-will workes.

Our adversaries thinke that faith, whereby wee receive the holy Ghost, is but a light matter: but how high and hard a matter it is I my self do find by experience, and so do all they which with me do earnestly embrace the same. It is soon said that by the only hearing of faith, the holy Ghost is received: but it is not so easily heard, laid hold on, beleevd and retained, as it is said. Wherefore if thou heare of me that Christ is that Lambe of God sacrificed for thy sinnes, see also that thou heare it effectually. *Paul* very aptly calleth it *the hearing of faith*, and not the word of faith (although there be small difference:) that is, such a word as thou hearing doest beleve, so that the word be not onely my voyce, but may be heard of thee, and may enter into thy heart; and be beleved of thee: then is it truly and indeed the hearing of faith, through the which thou receivest the holy Ghost: which after thou hast once received, thou shalt also mortifie thy flesh.

The hearing
of faith.

as in 52

The striving
of the flesh
against the
Spirit in the
godly.

The faithfull doe finde by their owne experience, how gladly they would hold and embrace the word when they heare it, with a full faith, and abandon this opinion of the law and of their owne righteousness: but they feele in their flesh a mighty resistance against the Spirit. For reason and the flesh will needs worke together. This saying: *Yee must be circumcised and keepe the law*, cannot be utterly rooted out of our minds, but it sticketh fast in the hearts of all the faithfull. There is in the faithfull therefore a continuall conflict between the hearing of faith and the workes of the law. For the conscience alwaies murmureth, and thinketh that this is too easie a way, that by the onely hearing of the word, righteousness, the holy Ghost, and life everlasting is promised unto us. But come once to an earnest tryall thereof, and then tell me

To hear the
word of faith

how

how easie a thing it is to heare the word of faith. Indeed he which giveth is great : moreover, he giveth great things willingly and freely, and upbraideth no man therewith : but thy capacity is hard, and faith weake, still striving against thee, so that thou art not able to receive this gift. But let thy conscience murmur against thee never so much, and let this (*Must*) come never so often into thy mind, yet stand fast and hold out, untill thou overcome this (*Must*.) So, as faith increaseth by little and little, that opinion of the righteousness of the law will diminish. But this cannot be done without great conflicts.

Verse 3. *Are ye so foolish, that after ye have begun in the Spirit, ye would now end in the flesh?*

This argument being concluded, how that the holy Ghost cometh not by the works of the law, but by the preaching of faith: he beginneth here to exhort and terrifie them from a double danger or incommodity. The first is: *Are ye so foolish that after ye have begunne, in the Spirit, ye would now end in the flesh?* The other followeth: *Have ye suffered so great things in vaine?* As if he said: Yee began in the Spirit: that is, your religion was excellently well begunne. As also a little after he saith: *Ye ranne well, &c.* But what have ye gotten thereby? Forsooth ye will now end in the flesh.

To begin in the Spirit

Paul setteth here the Spirit against the flesh. He calleth not the flesh (as before I have said) fleshly lusts, beastly passions, or sensual appetites: for he intreateth not here of lust and such other fleshly desires: but of forgiveness of sinnes, of justifying the conscience, of obtaining righteousness before God, of deliverance from the law, sinne and death: and yet notwithstanding he saith here, that they forsaking the Spirit, doe now end in the flesh. Flesh therefore is here taken for the very righteousness and wisdom of the flesh, and the judgement of reason, which seeketh to be justified by the law. Whatsoever then is most excellent in man, the same here *Paul* calleth flesh, as the wisdom of reason, and the righteousness of the law it selfe.

What flesh signifies in this place

And this place must be well considered, because of the slanderous and cavilling Papists; which wrest the same against us, saying that we in Popery began in the Spirit, but now having married

10/1000
1/1000
all part

Chap III.

Upon the EPISTLE

The spirit.
The flesh.

What the
Papists call
worldly and
carnall.

wives, we end in the flesh. As though a single life, or not to have a wife, were a spirituall life: and as though it nothing hindered their spirituall life, if a man not contented with one whore, have many. They are mad men, not understanding what the spirit, or what the flesh is. The spirit is whatsoever is done in us according to the spirit: The flesh, whatsoever is done in us according to the flesh without the spirit. Wherefore all the duties of a Christian man, as to love his wife, to bring up his children, to govern his family, and such like (which unto them are worldly and carnall) are the fruits of the spirit. These blind buzzards cannot discern things, which are the good creatures of God, from vices.

Here is also to be noted the manner of speech which the Apostle useth, when he saith: *ut carne consummami*, speaking in the passive voice. As if he said: Ye end, yea rather ye are ended in the flesh. For the righteousnesse of the law, which *Paul* here calleth the flesh is so farre off from justifying, that they which after the receiving of the holy Ghost through the hearing of faith, fall backe againe unto it, are ended in it, that is to say, are utterly destroyed. Therefore whosoever teach that the law ought to be fulfilled to this end, that men might be justified thereby, whiles they goe about to quiet their consciences, they hurt them, and whiles they would justify them, they condemne them.

The doctrine
of the false
Apostles.

Paul hath alwaies a glaunce at the false Apostles: For they still urged the law, saying: Faith onely in Christ taketh not away sin, pacifieth not the wrath of God, justifieth not: therefore if ye will obtaine these benefits, ye must not only believe in Christ, but therewith ye must also keep the law, be circumcised, keep the feasts, sacrifices, &c. Thus doing ye shal be free from sin, from the wrath of God, from everlasting death. Yea, rather (saith *Paul*) by the self-same things ye establish unrighteousnes, ye provoke the wrath of God, ye add sin to sin, ye quench the spirit, ye fall away from grace, and utterly reject the same, and ye together with your disciples do end in the flesh. This is the first danger, from the which he terrifieth the *Galathians*, lest if they seek to be justified by the law, they loose their spirit, and foregoe their good beginnings for a wretched end.

Another
danger
from the

Verse 4. *Have ye suffered so many things in vaine*

The other danger or incommoditie is this: Have ye suffered so many

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



The office
of an Apo-
stle.

prehension that goeth before, which was somewhat sharpe. And this he doth as an Apostle, lest he should terrifie the *Galathians* too much. Although he chide them, yet notwithstanding he alwayes doth it in such sort, that he powreth in sweet oyle withall, lest he should drive them to desperation,

To end in
the flesh.

He saith therefore: *If notwithstanding it bee in vaine.* As if he would say: yet I do not take away all hope from you. But if ye would so end in the flesh, that is to say, follow the righteousness of the law and forsake the Spirit, as ye have begun, then know ye, that all your glory and affiance which ye have in God, is in vaine, and all your afflictions are unprofitable. Indeed I must needs speake somewhat roughly unto you in this matter: I must be fervent in the defence thereof, and somewhat sharpe in chiding of you, especially the matter being so weighty and constraining me thereunto, lest ye should think it to be but a trifle to reject the doctrine of *Paul*, and receive another. Notwithstanding I will not utterly discourage you, so that ye repent and amend. For sickly and scabbed children may not be cast away, but must be tendred and cherished more diligently then they which are in health. So that *Paul* here like a cunning Phisitian, layeth all the fault in a manner upon the false Apostles, the authours and onely cause of this deadly disease. Contrariwise he handleth the *Galathians* very gently, that by his mildness he might heale them. We therefore by the example of *Paul*, ought in like manner to reprehend the weake, and so to cure their infirmity, that in the mean time we leave not off to cherish and comfort them, lest if we handle them too sharply, they fall into desperation.

Verse 5. *He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doth he it through the Workes of the law, or by the hearing of faith preached?*

Paul maketh often rehearsal of the argument grounded upon experience.

This argument grounded upon the experience of the *Galathians*, doth so well like the Apostle, that after he hath reprov'd and terrified them, setting before them a double danger, he now repeateth the same againe, and that with a more large amplification, saying: *He which ministreth, &c.* That is to say: Ye have not onely received the Spirit by the hearing of faith, but whatsoever ye have either knowne or done, it came by the hearing of faith. As though he would say: It was not enough that God gave you
once

once the Spirit: but the same God also hath enriched you with the gifts of the Spirit, and increased the same in you, to the end that when ye have once received the Spirit; it might alwayes grow and be more and more effectually in you. Hereby it is plaine, that the *Galatians* had wrought miracles, or at the least, had shewed such fruits of faith as the true Disciples of the Gospell are wont to bring forth. For the Apostle elsewhere saith: *That the kingdome of God is not in word, but in power.* Now, this power is not onely to be able to speake of the kingdome of God: but also in very deepe to shew, that God through his Spirit is effectually in us. So, before in the second chapter, he saith of himselfe: *Hee that was effectually in Peter among the Jewes, was also effectually in me: He that was mighty by Peter in the Apostleship over the circumcision, was also mighty by me towards the Gentiles.*

1 Cor. 4. 20.
The king-
dome of God
consisteth
not in words
but in pow-
er.

When a preacher then so preacheth, that the word is not fruitlesse, but effectually in the hearts of the hearers, that is to say: when faith, hope, love and patience do follow, then God giveth his Spirit and worketh miracles in the hearers. In like manner *Paul* saith here, *That God hath given his Spirit to the Galatians, and hath wrought miracles among them.* As though he would say: God hath not onely brought to passe through my preaching, that ye should beleeve: but also that ye should live holily, bring forth many fruits of faith, and suffer many afflictions. Also by the same power of the holy Ghost, of adulterers, of wrathfull, impatient and covetous persons, and of very enemies, ye are become liberall, chaste, gentle, patient and lovers of your neighbours. Whereupon afterwards he giveth testimony of them in the fourth chapter, that they received him as an Angell of God, yea rather as Christ Jesus: and that they loved him so entirely, that they were ready to have plucked out their own eyes for him.

Now, to love thy neighbour so heartily, that thou art ready to bestow thy money, thy goods, thine eyes, and all that thou hast for his salvation, and moreover to suffer patiently all adversities and afflictions, these (no doubt) are the effects and fruits of the Spirit, and these (saith he) ye received and enjoyed before these false teachers came among you. But ye received them not by the law, but of God, who so ministred unto you, and daily increaseth in you his holy Spirit, that the Gospell had a most happy course amongst you, in teaching, beleiving, working and suffering. Now, seeing

The workes
of the holy
Ghost.

ye know these things (being convicted even by the testimony of your own consciences) how commeth it to passe that ye shew not the same fruits that ye did before; that is, that ye teach not truly, that ye beleve not faithfully, that ye live not holily, that ye work not rightly, and that ye suffer not patiently? Finally, who hath so corrupted you, that you beare not so loving affection towards me, as ye did before? that ye receive not *Paul* now as an Angell of God, nor as Jesus Christ? that ye will not pluck out your eyes to give them unto me? How commeth it to passe (I say) that this fervent zeale of yours waxeth so cold towards me, and that ye now prefer before me, the false Apostles, which do so miserably seduce you?

The works
of the devil.

In like manner it happeneth unto us at this day. When we first preached the Gospell, there were very many that favoured our doctrine, and had a good and reverend opinion of us: and after the preaching thereof, followed the fruits and effects of Faith. But what ensued? A sort of light and brainsick heads sprung up, and by and by destroyed all that we had in long time and with much travell planted before, and also made us so odious unto them which before loved us dearly, and thankfully received our doctrine, that now they hate nothing more then our name. But of this mischief the devill is the authour, working in his members contrary works, which wholly fight against the works of the holy Ghost. Therefore saith the Apostle, your experience (O ye *Galatians*) ought to teach you, that these great and excellent vertues proceeded not of the works of the law: for as ye had them not before the hearing of faith preached: so have ye them not now, although the false Apostles reigne in the midst of you.

What happy
successe
the Gospell
had when
it was first
preached.

We likewise may say at this day to those which vaunt themselves to be Gospellers, and to be freed from the tyranny of the Pope: have ye overcome the tyranny of the Pope, and obtained liberty in Christ through the Anabaptists and such other fantastical spirits, or through us which have preached faith in Jesus Christ? Here if they will confesse the truth, they must needs say: no doubt, by the preaching of faith. And true it is, that at the beginning of our preaching, the doctrine of faith had a most happy course, and downe fell the Popes pardons, Purgatorie, vows, Masses, and such like abominations, which drew with them the ruine of all Popery. No man could justly condemne us: for our doctrine was

pure,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Chap. III.

Upon the EPISTLE

Verse 6. *As Abraham beleved God, and it was imputed to him for righteousnesse.*

Hitherto Paul reasoneth upon the experiences of the Galathians; and with this argument he urgeth them vehemently. Ye (saith he) have beleved and beleaving have done miracles, and have shewed many notable signes: and moreover ye have suffered many afflictions, all which things are the effects and operations; not of the law, but of the holy Ghost. This the Galathians were constrained to confesse. For they could not deny these things, which were before their eyes and manifest to their senses: and therefore this argument grounded upon their own experience, is very strong.

Gen 15.6.
Rom. 4.23.

How Abrahams was justified before God.

Rom. 4.19,
20, 21, &c.

Now he addeth the example of Abraham, and rehearseth the testimony of the Scripture. The first is out of Genesis: *Abraham beleved God, &c.* This place the Apostle here mightily prosecuteth; as also he did in his Epistle to the Romans: *If Abraham (saith he) was justified by the works of the law, he hath righteousnesse and rejoycing, but not before God, but before men:* For before God there is in him nothing but sinne and wrath. Now, he was justified before God, not because he did worke, but because he did beleve. For the Scripture saith: *Abraham beleved God, and it was imputed to him for righteousnesse.* This place doth Paul there notably set forth and amplifie, as it is most worthy: *Abraham (saith he) was not weake in the faith; neither considered he his owne body which was now dead, being almost an hundred yeare. old: neither the deadnesse of Sarahs wombe: Neither did he doubt of the promise of God through unbelieve, but was strengthened in the Faith, and gave glory to God, being fully assured, that whatsoever God had promised, he was able to doe. Now, it is not written for him onely, that it was imputed to him for righteousnesse, but for us also, &c.*

The power of faith infinite.

To give glory to God.

Paul by these words, *Abraham beleved,* of faith in God, maketh the chiefest worship, the chiefest duty, the chiefest obedience, and the chiefest sacrifice. Let him that is a Rhetorician, amplifie this place, and he shall see that faith is an almighty thing, and that the power thereof is infinite and inestimable: For it giveth glory unto God, which is the highest service that can be given unto him. Now, to give glory unto God, is to beleve in him, to count him true, wise, righteous, mercifull, almighty: briefly to acknowledge him

him to be the authour and giver of all goodnes. This reason doth not, but faith. That is it which maketh us divine people, and (as a man would say) it is the creator of a certaine divinity, not in the substance of God, but in us. For without faith God loseth in us his glory, wisdom, righteousness, truth and mercy. To conclude, no majestie or divinity remaineth unto God, where faith is not. And the chiefest thing that God requireth of man is, that he give unto him his glory and his divinity: that is to say, that he take him not for an idoll, but for God: who regardeth him, heareth him, sheweth mercy unto him, and helpeth him. This being done, God hath his full and perfect divinity, that is, he hath whatsoever a faithfull heart can attribute unto him. To be able therefore to give that glory unto God, it is the wisdom of wisdoms, the righteousness of righteousnesses, the religion of religions, and sacrifice of sacrifices. Hereby we may perceive, what an high and excellent righteousness faith is, and so by the contrary, what an horrible and grievous sinne infidelitie is.

Faith giveth glory to God.

Whosoever then beleeveth the word of God, as *Abraham* did, is righteous before God, because he hath faith, which giveth glory unto God: that is he giveth to God that which is due to him. For faith saith thus: I beleeve thee (O God) when thou speakest. And what saith God? Impossible things, lies, foolish, weake, absurd, abominable, hereticall and devillish things, if ye beleeve reason. For what is more absurd, foolish and impossible, then when God saith to *Abraham*, that he should have a sonne of the barren and dead body of his wife *Sara*.

Righteous before God.

What God saith, if ye see faith aside and hearken unto reason.

So, if we will follow the judgement of reason, God setteth forth absurd and impossible things, when he setteth out unto us the Articles of the Christian faith. Indeed it seemeth to reason an absurd and a foolish thing, that in the Lords Supper is offered unto us the body and bloud of Christ, that Baptisme is the Laver of the new-birth, and of the renewing of the holy Ghost, that the dead shall rise in the last day, that Christ the Sonne of God was conceived and carried in the wombe of the virgin *Mary*, that he was borne, that he suffered the most reproachfull death of the crosse, that he was raised up againe, that he now sitteth at the right hand of God the Father, and that he hath all power both in heaven and in earth. For this cause *Paul* calleth the Gospell of Christ crucified, the word of the crosse and foolish preaching, which to the Jews was offensive,

The judgement of reason, touching the articles of faith.

The Gospell is the word of the crosse.

1 Cor. 1. 23.

and

The chief
worship of
God.

and to the Gentiles foolish doctrine. Wherefore reason doth not understand that to heare the word of God and to beleve it, is the chiefest service that God requireth of us: but it thinketh that those things which it chooseth and doth of a good intent (as they call it) and of her own devotion, please God. Therefore when God speaketh, reason judgeth his word to be heresie and the word of the devill, for it seemeth unto it, absurd and foolish.

Faith slaieth
reason,

But, faith killeth reason, and slayeth that beast which the whole world and all creatures cannot kill. So *Abraham* killed it by faith in the word of God, whereby seed was promised to him of *Sara*, who was barren and now past child bearing. Unto this word, reason yeelded not straightway in *Abraham*, but it fought against faith in him, judging it to be an absurd, a foolish and an impossible thing, that *Sara*, who was now not onely 90 yeares old, but also was barren by nature, should bring forth a sonne. Thus faith wrestled with reason in *Abraham*: but herein faith got the victory, killed and sacrificed reason, that most cruell and pestilent enemy of God. So all the godly entring with *Abraham* into the darknesse of faith, do kill reason, saying: Reason, thou art foolish, thou dost not favour those things which belong unto God: Therefore speake not against me, but hold thy peace: judge not, but heare the word of God and beleve it. So the godly by faith kill such a beast as is greater then the whole world, and thereby do offer to God a most acceptable sacrifice and service.

The wrest-
ling of faith
with reason
in *Abraham*.

The sacrifice
of Christi-
ans.

And in comparison of this sacrifice of the faithfull, all the religions of all nations, and all the works of all Monks and meritmongers, are nothing at all. For by this sacrifice, first (as I said) they kill reason, a great and mighty enemy of God. For reason despiseth God, denieth his wisdom, justice, power, truth, mercy, majesty and divinity. Moreover, by the same sacrifice they yeeld glory unto God: that is, they beleve him to be just, good, faithfull, true, &c. they beleve that he can do all things, that all his words are holy, true, lively and effectuall, &c, which is a most acceptable obedience unto God. Wherefore there can be no greater or more holy religion in the world, nor more acceptable service unto God, then faith is.

Reason
Gods ene-
mie.

The com-
mendation
of faith.

Contrariwise, the Justiciaries and such as seeke righteousness by their own workes, lacking faith, do many things. They fast, they pray, they watch, they lay crosses upon themselves. But be-
cause

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Chap. III. Upon the EPISTLE

Christ, for otherwise no flesh should be saved. Wee conclude therefore upon these words: *It was imputed to him for righteousness*, that righteousness indeed beginneth through faith, and by the same we have the first fruits of the Spirit: but because faith is weake, it is not made perfect without Gods imputation! Wherefore faith beginneth righteousness, but imputation maketh it perfect unto the day of Christ.

The blindness of the Schoolmen.

God accepteth our workes, say the Papists, of congruence, that is, because it is meet that God should reward the.

Rs. 8-7.

Reason must be killed by faith.

The Popish Sophisters and Schoolemen dispute also of imputation, when they speake of the good acceptation of the workes: but besides and cleane contrary to the Scripture: for they wrest it only to workes. They doe not consider the uncleannesse and inward poyson lurking in the heart, as incredulity, doubting, contemning, and hating of God, which most pernicious and perillous beasts are the fountaine and cause of all mischief. They consider no more but outward and grosse faults and unrighteousnesse, which are little rivers proceeding and issuing out of those fountains. Therefore they attribute acceptance to workes: that is to say, that God doth accept our workes, not of duty, but of congruence. Contrariwise we, excluding all workes, I doe goe to the very head of this beast, which is called reason, which is the fountaine and head-spring of all mischies. For reason feareth not God, it loveth not God, it trusteth not in God, but proudly contemneth him. It is not moved either with his threatnings or his promises. It is not delighted with his words or works, but it murmureth against him, it is angry with him, judgeth and hateth him: to be short, it is an enemy to God, not giving him his glory. This pestilent beast (reason I say) being once slain, all outward and grosse vices should be nothing.

Wherefore we must first and before all things goe about by faith, to kill infidelity, the contempt and hating of God, murmuring against his judgement, his wrath, and all his words and works: for then doe we kill reason, which can be killed by none other meanes but by faith, which in beleiving God, giveth unto him his glory, notwithstanding that he speaketh those things, which seem both foolish, absurd, and impossible to reason: notwithstanding also, that God setteth forth himselfe otherwise then reason is able either to judge or conceive, that is to say, after this manner: I will account and pronounce thee as righteous, not for the keeping of the law, nor for thy workes and thy merits, but for thy faith in Jesus Christ mine only begotten

gotten Sonne, who was borne, suffered, was crucified and died for thy sins: and that sin which remaineth in thee, I will not impute unto thee. If reason then be not killed, and all kinds of religion and service of God under heaven that are invented by men to get righteousness before God, be not condemned, the righteousness of faith can take no place.

When reason heareth this, by and by it is offended: it rageth and uttereth all her malice against God, saying: Are then my good works nothing? Have I then laboured and borne the burden and heat of the day in vaine? Hereof riseth those uproares of Nations, of Kings and Princes; against the Lord and against his Christ. For the world neither will nor can suffer that his wisdom, righteousness, religions and worshippings should be reprov'd and condemned. The Pope with all his popish rablement, will not seem to erre, much lesse will he suffer himself to be condemned.

Mat. 10. 17.

Ps. 2. 2.

Wherefore let those which give themselves to the study of the holy Scripture, learne out of it this saying: *Abraham beleev'd God, and it was counted to him for righteousness,* to set forth truly and rightly this true Christian righteousness after this manner: that it is a faith and confidence in the Son of God, or rather a confidence of the heart in God through Jesus Christ: And let them adde this clause as a difference: Which faith and confidence is accounted righteousness for Christs sake. For these two things (as I said before) worke Christian righteousness: namely, faith in the heart, which is a gift of God, and assuredly beleeveth in Christ: and also that God accepteth this imperfect faith for perfect righteousness, for Christs sake, in whom I have begun to beleve. Because of this faith in Christ, God seeth not my doubting of his good will towards me, my distrust, heaviness of spirit, and other finnes which are yet in me. For as long as I live in the flesh, sinne is truly in me. But because I am covered under the shadow of Christs wings, as is the chicken under the wing of the hen, and dwell without all feare under that most ample and large heaven of the forgiveness of finnes; which is spread over me, God covereth and pardoneth the remnant of sinne in me: that is to say, because of that faith wherwith I began to lay hold upon Christ, he accepteth my imperfect righteousness even for perfect righteousness, and counteth my sinne for no sin, which notwithstanding is sinne indeed.

A definition of the Christian faith.

Exod. 13. 21. So we shroud our selves under the covering of Christs flesh, who is our cloudy pillar for the day, and our pillar of fire for the night, lest God should see our sin. And although we see it, and for the same doe feele the terrours of conscience, yet flying unto Christ our Mediatour and reconciler (through whom we are made perfect) we are sure and safe: For as all things are in him, so through him we have all things, who also doth supply whatsoever is wanting in us. When we beleeve this, God winketh at the sins and the remnants of sinne yet sticking in our flesh, and so covereth them, as if they were no sins. Because (saith he) thou beleevest in my Son, although thou have many sins, yet notwithstanding they shall be forgiven thee, until thou be clean delivered from them by death.

Pauls divinity

Christian righteousness consisteth in two things.

Let Christians learn with all diligence to understand this article of Christian righteousness. And to this end let them reade *Paul*, and reade him again both often and with great diligence, and let them compare the first with the last: yea let them compare *Paul* wholly and fully with himselfe: then shall they find it to be true, that Christian righteousness consisteth in these two things: namely in faith which giveth glory unto God, and in Gods imputation. For faith is weak (as I have said) and therefore Gods imputation must needs be joynd withall, that is to say, that God will not lay to our charge the remnant of sin, that he will not punish it, nor condemne us for it: but will cover it and will freely forgive it, as though it were nothing at all: not for our sake, neither for our worthines and works, but for Jesus Christs sake, in whom we beleeve.

A Christian is both righteous and a sinner.

Thus a Christian man is both righteous and a sinner, holy and prophane, an enemy of God and yet a child of God. These contraries no Sophister will admit, for they know not the true manner of justification. And this was the cause why they constrained men to worke well so long, untill they should feele in themselves no sin at all. Whereby they gave occasion to many (which striving with all their indeavour to be perfectly righteous, could not attain therunto) to become stark mad: Yea an infinite number also of those which were the authours of this devillish opinion, at the hour of death were driven unto desperation. Which thing had hapned unto me also, if Christ had not mercifully looked upon me, and delivered me out of this error.

Contrariwise, we teach and comfort the afflicted sinner after this

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

fore excelleth all reason, that God doth account and acknowledge him for righteous without works, which imbraceth his Son by faith alone, who was sent into the world, was borne, suffered, and was crucified for us.

This matter, as touching the words is easie (to wit, that righteousness is not essentially in us, as the Papists reason out of *Aristotle*, but without us in the grace of God only and in his imputation: and that there is no essentiall substance of righteousness in us, besides that weak faith or first fruits of faith, whereby we have begun to apprehend Christ, and yet sin in the meane time remaineth verily in us:) but in very deed it is no small or light matter, but weighty and of great importance. For Christ which was given for us, and whom we apprehend by faith, hath done no small thing for us, but (as *Paul* said before:) *He hath loved us and given himself in very deed for us: He was made accursed for us, &c.* And this is no vain speculation, that Christ was delivered for my sins and was made accursed for me, that I might be delivered from everlasting death. Therefore to apprehend that * Sonne by faith, and with the heart to beleeve in him, given unto us and for us of God, causeth that God doth account that faith, although it be imperfect, for perfect righteousness.

And here we are altogether in another world-farre from reason, where we dispute not, what we ought to do, or with what works wee may deserve grace and forgivenesse of sinnes: but wee are in a matter of most high and heavenly divinity, where we do heare this Gospell or glad tidings, that Christ died for us, and that we beleeving this, are counted righteous, though sins notwithstanding doe remaine in us, and that great sinnes. So our Saviour Christ also defineth the righteousness of faith. *The Father* (saith he) *loveth you.* Wherefore doth he love you? Not because ye were *Pharisees* unreprouable in the righteousness of the law, circumcised, doing good workes, fasting, &c. but because I have chosen you out of the world, and yee have done nothing, but that yee have loved me, and beleeved that I came out from the Father. This object (*I*) being sent from the Father into the world, pleased you. And because you have apprehended and embraced * this object, therefore the Father loveth you, and therefore ye please him. And yet notwithstanding in another place he calleth them evill, and commandeth them to aske forgivenesse of their sinnes. These two things are quite contrary: to

wit,

Gal. 2. 20.
Gal. 3. 13.

* A child is
born unto
us, a Son is
given unto
us, *1/2/2/9/6.*

The righte-
ousnes of
faith defined
out of the
Chapter of
S. *Johns*
Gospel.

* Christ is
called our
object, be-
cause the
eye of our
faith is di-
rected unto
him.

wit, that a Christian is righteous and beloved of God, and yet notwithstanding he is a sinner. For God cannot deny his owne nature, that is, he must needs hate sin and sinners: and this he doth of necessity, for otherwise he should be unrighteous and love sin. How then can these two * contradictions stand together? I am a sinner, and most worthy of Gods wrath and indignation: and yet the Father loveth me? Here nothing commeth between, but only Christ the Mediatour. The Father (saith he) doth not therefore love you, because ye are worthy of love, but because ye have loved me, and have beleevd that I came out from him.

* Contrary sayings.

Job. 16. 27.

Job. 17. 8.

: Thus a Christian man abideth in true humility, feeling sin in him effectually, and confessing himself to be worthy of wrath and judgment of God and everlasting death for the same, that he may be humbled in this life: and yet notwithstanding he continueth still in his holy pride, in the which he turneth unto Christ, and in him he listeth up himself against this feeling of Gods wrath and judgment, and beleeveth that, not only the remnants of sin are not imputed unto him, but that also he is loved of the Father, not for his own sake, but for Christs sake, whom the Father loveth.

A holy and a Christian pride.

Job. 22. 3.

: Hereby now we may see, how faith justifieth without works, and yet notwithstanding, how imputation of righteousness is also necessary. Sins do remain in us, which God utterly hateth. Therefore it is necessary that we should have imputation of righteousness, which we obtain through Christ and for Christs sake who is given unto us and received of us by faith. In the mean time, as long as we live here, we are carried and nourished in the bosome of the mercy and long sufferance of God, untill the body of sin be abolished, and we raised up as new creatures in that great day. Then shall there be new heavens and a new earth, in which righteousness shall dwell. In the mean while under this heaven sin and wicked men doe dwell, and the godly also have sinne dwelling in them. For this cause Paul, Rom. 7. complaineth of sinne which remaineth in the Saints: yet notwithstanding he saith afterwards in the 8. Chapter: *That there is no damnation to them, which are in Christ Iesu.* Now, how shall these things so contrary and repugnant, be reconciled together, that sinne in us is no sinne? that he which is damnable shall not be condemned? that he which is rejected shall not be rejected? That he which is worthy of the wrath of God and everlasting damnation, shall not be punished?

Imputation of righteousness.

Things which are contrary in themselves, are reconciled in Christ

Chap. III.

Upon the EPISTLE

The only reconciler hereof is the Mediatour between God and men, even the man Jesus Christ, as Paul saith: *There is no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus.*

1 Tim. 1. 5.
Rom. 8. 1.

Verse 7. *Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.*

This is the generall argument and whole disputation of Paul against the Jewes, that they which beleve, are the children of Abraham, and not they which are borne of his flesh and his bloud. This disputation Paul vehemently profecuteth in this place, and in the 4. and 9. Chapter to the Romans. For this was the greatest confidence and glory of the Jewes: *We are the seed and children of Abraham.* He was circumcised and kept the law: therefore if we will be the true children of Abraham, we must follow our father, &c. It was (no doubt) an excellent glory and dignity, to be the seed of Abraham. For no man could deny but that God spake to the seed and of the seed of Abraham. But this prerogative nothing profited the unbelieving Jewes. By reason whereof Paul, especially in this place, mightily striveth against this argument, and wresteth from the Jewes this strong affiance in themselves. And this could he, as the elect vessell of Christ, do above all other. For if we at the beginning should have disputed with the Jewes without Paul, peradventure we should have prevailed very little against them.

Rom. 9. 7, 8.

The disputation of Paul against the Jewes.

Gen. vi. 12.

Gal. 2. 15.

So then Paul reasoneth against the Jewes which stood so proudly in this opinion, that they were the children of Abraham, saying: *We are the seed of Abraham.* Well, what then? Abraham was circumcised and kept the law: we doe the same. All this I grant: But will ye therefore seeke to be justified and saved? Nay not so. But let us come to the Patriarch Abraham himselfe, and let us see by what meanes he was justified and saved. Doubtlesse, not for his excellent vertues and holy workes: not because he forooke his country, kindred and fathers house: not because he was circumcised and observed the law: not because he was about to offer up in sacrifice at the commandement of God, his sonne Isaac, in whom he had the promise of posterity: but because he beleved. Wherefore he was not justified by any other meanes then by faith alone. If ye then will be justified by the law, much more ought Abraham your father to be justified by the law. But Abraham could not otherwise

By what meanes Abraham was justified.

Gen. 12. 11

Gen. 17. 14

Gen. 22. 1, 2

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

plaine, that they which are of Faith, are the children of *Abraham*.

This word
faith signifi-
eth in the
Hebrew
tongue
truth.
Gen. 15. 5.

But some will here object (as the Jews do, and certaine cavilling spirits at this day) saying that this word faith in the Hebrew signifieth *truth*, and therefore we do not rightly apply it: And moreover, that this place out of *Gen. 15.* speaketh of a corporall thing, namely of the promise of posterity, and therefore is not well applied of *Paul* to faith in Christ, but ought simply to be understood of the faith of *Abraham*, whereby he beleeveth according to the promise of God, that he should have seed: and hereby they would prove that the arguments and allegations of *Paul* do conclude nothing. In like manner they may cavill also, that the place which *Paul* a little after alledgeth out of *Habakuk*, speaketh of faith, as touching the full accomplishing of the whole vision, and not of faith onely in Christ, for the which *Paul* alledgeth it. Likewise they may wrest all the 11th Chap. to the *Hebrewes*, which speaketh of faith and the examples of faith. By these things such vain-glorious and arrogant spirits do hunt for praise, and seeke to be counted wise and learned; where they least of all deserve it. But because of the simple and ignorant, we will briefly answer to their cavillations.

Habac. 2. 4.

Faith.

To the first I answer thus, that faith is nothing else, but the truth of the heart: that is to say, a true and a right opinion of the heart as touching God. Now, faith onely thinketh and judgeth rightly of God, and not reason. And then doth a man think rightly of God, when he beleeveth his word. But when he will measure God without the word, and beleve him according to the wisdom of reason, he hath no right opinion of God in his heart: and therefore he cannot think or judge of him as he should doe. As for example: when a Monk imagineth that his coule, his shaven crown and his vowes doe please God, and that grace and everlasting life is given unto him for the same, he hath no true opinion of God, but false and full of impiety. Truth therefore is faith it selfe, which judgeth rightly of God, namely that God regardeth not our workes and righteousness, because we are uncleane: but that he will have mercy upon us, looke upon us, accept us, justifie us and save us; if we beleve in his Sonne, whom he hath sent to be a sacrifice for the finnes of the whole world. This is a true opinion of God, and in very deed nothing else but faith it selfe. I cannot comprehend nor be fully assured by reason, that I am received into Gods favour for

Faith thinketh rightly of God.

Truth and faith signifie both one thing.

Job. 22.

for Christs sake:but I heare this to be pronounced by the Gospill, and I lay hold upon it by faith.

To the second cavillation I answer, that *Paal* doth rightly alledge the place of the fifteenth of *Genesis*, applying it to faith in Christ. For with faith alwayes must be joynd a certaine assurance of Gods mercy. Now this assurance comprehendeth a faithfull trust of remission of sinnes for Christs sake. For it is impossible that thy conscience should looke for any thing at Gods hand, except first it be assured, that God is mercifull unto thee for Christs sake. Therefore all the promises are to be referred to that first promise concerning Christ: *The seed of the woman shall bruise the serpents head.* So did all the Prophets both understand it and teach it. By this we may see that the faith of our fathers in the old Testament, and ours now in the new is all one, although they differ as touching their outward objects. Which thing *Peter* witnesseth in the Acts when he saith: *Which neither we nor our fathers were able to beare.* But we beleeve through the grace of our Lord *Jesus Christ* to be saved even as they did. And *Paul* saith: *Our fathers did all drink of that spirituall rock that followed them, which rock was Christ.* And Christ himselfe saith: *Abraham rejoiced to see my day, and he saw it and was glad.* Notwithstanding, the faith of the fathers was grounded on Christ which was to come, as ours is on Christ which is now come. *Abraham* in his time was justified by faith in Christ to come, but if he lived at this day, he would be justified by faith in Christ now revealed and present: Like as I have said before of *Cornelius*, who at the first beleeved in Christ to come, but being instructed by *Peter*, he beleeved that Christ was already come. Therefore the diversitie of times never changeth faith, nor the holy Ghost, nor the gifts thereof. For there hath been, is, and ever shall be one mind, one judgement and understanding concerning Christ, as well in the antient fathers, as in the faithfull which are at this day, and shall come hereafter. So we have as well Christ to come and beleeve in him, as the Fathers in the old Testament had. For we looke for him to come againe in the last day with glory, to judge both the quick and the dead, whom now we beleeve to be come already for our salvation. Therefore this allegation of *Paul* offendeth none but those blind and ignorant cavillers.

That the place of *Gen. 15. 12* is rightly applied to faith in Christ

Gen. 3. 15. All the promises are to be referred to that first promise. *Gen. 3. Act. 15. 10, 12.*

1 Cor. 10. 4.

Ioh. 8. 56.

Act. 10. 1, 2, 3.

The faith of the Fathers and ours both one

Paul therefore (as I have said) rightly alledgeth that place out

of *Genesis*, of faith in Christ, when he speaketh of the faith of *Abraham*. For all the promises past, were contained in Christ to come. Therefore as well *Abraham* and the other fathers, as also we, are made righteous by faith in Christ: They by faith in him then to come, we by faith in him now present. For we entreate now of the nature and manner of justification, which is all one both in them and in us, whether it be in Christ to be revealed, or in Christ now revealed and present. It is enough therefore that *Paul* sheweth, that the law justifieth not, but onely faith, whether it be in Christ to come, or in Christ already come.

To some Christ is come, to some he is not yet come.

At this day also Christ to some is present, to other some he is to come. To all beleevers he is present: to the unbelievers he is not yet come, neither doth he profit them any thing at all: but if they heare the Gospell, and beleeve that he is present unto them, he justifieth and saveth them.

Verse 7. *Ye know therefore that they which are of Faith, the same are the children of Abraham.*

Who are the children of *Abraham*

Abraham a father both of the Jews and the Gentiles.

Gen. 17. 4.
Rom. 4. 17.

The children of *Abraham* are not of the flesh, but of faith.

Abraham begetting & beleeving.

As if he would say: Ye know by this example of *Abraham*; and by the plaine testimony of the Scripture, that they are the children of *Abraham*, which are of faith, whether they be Jewes or Gentiles, without any respect either unto the law, or unto works, or to the carnall generation of the fathers. For not by the law, but by the righteousness of faith, the promise was made unto *Abraham*, that he should be here of the world: that is to say, that in his seed all the nations of the earth should be blessed, and that he should be called the father of nations. And lest the Jews should falsly interpret this word *Nations*, applying it unto themselves alone, the Scripture preventeth this, and saith not only, *a father of nations*: but *a father of many nations have I made thee*. Therefore *Abraham* is not onely the father of the Jews, but also of the Gentiles.

Hereby we may plainly see that the children of *Abraham* are not the children of the flesh, but the children of faith, as *Paul*, *Rom.* 4. declareth: *Who is the father of us all (as it is written: I have made thee a father of many nations) even before God whom he did beleeve*: So that *Paul* maketh two *Abrahams*; a begetting and a beleeving *Abraham*. *Abraham* hath children and is a father of many nations. Where? Before God, where he beleeveth: not before the world, where he begetteth.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY
BIBLE**

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

doe ye brag then. O ye *Galathians*, that ye obtaine forgiveness of sins, and are become children, and do receive the inheritance through the law, which followed a long time, that is to say, 430 yeares after the promise.

The error
of the false
apostles.

Gen. 15. 6.

Gen. 17. 10.

Abraham
was justified
before cir-
cumcision:
and 430
yeares be-
fore the
law.

Thus the false Apostles did advance the law and the glory thereof. But the promise made unto *Abraham* 430. yeares before the law was given, they neglected and despised, and would in no wise know that *Abraham* (of whom they gloried notwithstanding as the father of their whole nation) being yet uncircumcised, and living so many ages before the law, was made righteous by no other meanes then by faith only, as the Scripture most plainly witnesseth: *Abraham* beleeveth God, and it was counted to him for righteousness. Afterwards, when he was now accounted righteous because of his faith, the Scripture maketh mention of circumcision in the seventeenth of *Genesis*, where it saith: *This is my covenant which ye shall keepe betweene me and you, &c.* With this argument *Paul* mightily convinceth the false Apostles, and sheweth plainly that *Abraham* was justified by faith onely, both without and before circumcision, and also 430. yeares before the law. This selfe same argument he handleth in the fourth Chapter to the *Romanes*: to wit, that righteousness was imputed to *Abraham* before circumcision, and that he was righteous being yet uncircumcised: much more then he was righteous before the law.

Therefore (saith *Paul*) the Scripture did well provide against this your glorious bragging of the righteousness of the law and works. When? Before circumcision and before the law. For the law was given 430. yeares after the promise, whereas *Abraham* was not onely justified without the law and before the law, but was also dead and buried: and his righteousness without the law did not only flourish untill the law, but also shall flourish even to the end of the world. If then the father of the whole Jewish nation was made righteous without the law and before the law, much more are the children made righteous by the same means that their father was. Therefore righteousness cometh by faith only and not by the law.

Verse 8. *Preached the Gospell before unto Abraham, saying: In thee shall all the Gentiles be blessed.*

The Jewes doe not onely lightly passe over, but also do deride
and

and with their wicked glosses do corrupt these excellent and notable sentences: *Abraham beleeveth God. &c. I have appointed thee a father, &c.* and such like, which highly commend faith and containe promises of spirituall things. For they are blinde and hard hearted, and therefore they see not that these places do intreate of faith towards God, and of righteousnesse before God. With like malice also they handle this notable place of the spirituall blessing: *In thee all the nations of the earth shall be blessed.* For (say they) to blesse signifieth nothing else but to praise, to pray for prosperity, and to be glorious in the sight of the world. After this manner the Jew (say they) which is borne of the seed of *Abraham*, is blessed: and the proselite or stranger which worshippeth the God of the Jewes and joyneth himselfe unto them, is also blessed. Therefore they thinke that blessing is nothing else but praise and glory in this world, in that a man may glory and vaunt that he is of the stock and family of *Abraham*. But this is to corrupt and pervert the sentences of the Scriptures, and not to expound them. By these words, *Abraham beleeveth*, *Paul* defineth and setteth before our eyes a spirituall *Abraham*, faithfull, righteous, and having the promise of God: an *Abraham* (I say) which is not in errour, and in the old flesh: which is not borne of *Adam*, but of the holy Ghost. And of this *Abraham* renewed by faith and regenerate by the holy Ghost, speaketh the Scripture, and pronounceth of him, that he should be a father of many nations. Also that all the Gentiles should be given unto him for an inheritance, when it saith: *In thee shall all the nations of the earth be blessed.* This, *Paul* vehemently urgeth by the authority of the Scripture, which saith, *Gen. 15. Abraham beleeveth God, &c.*

The Jewes corrupt the sentences of the Scripture.

Gen. 12. 3.
Act. 3. 25.

What the Jewes call the blessing.

The Scripture then attributeth no righteousnesse to *Abraham*, but in that he beleeveth, and it speaketh of such an *Abraham*, as he is accounted before God. Such sentences therefore of the Scripture do set forth unto us a new *Abraham*, which is separate from the carnall marriage and bed, and from the carnall generation, and make him such an one as he is before God, that is to say, beleeving and justified through faith, to whom now God maketh this promise because of his faith: *Thou shalt be a father of many nations.* Again: *In thee shall all the nations of the earth be blessed.* And this is the meaning of *Paul*, where he sheweth how the Scripture preventeth the vaine, presumption and proud brags of the Jewes as touching the law. For the inheritance of the Gen-

The new *Abraham*.

tiles

Chap.III. Upon the EPISTLE.

bles was given unto *Abraham*, not by the law and circumcision, but long before the same, by the onely righteousnesse of faith.

It is a great glory to be of *Abrahams* seed.

Therefore, whereas the Jews will be counted and called blessed, because they are the children and seed of *Abraham*, it is nothing else but a vaine-glorious brag. It is (no doubt) a great prerogative and glory before the world, to be borne of *Abrahams* seed, as *Paul* sheweth, *Rom.9.* but not so before God. Wherefore the Jewes doe wickedly pervert this place concerning the blessing, in applying it onely to a carnall blessing, and doe great injuries to the Scripture; which speaketh most manifestly of the spirituall blessing before God, and neither can nor ought otherwise to be understood. This is then the true meaning of this place: *In thee shall be blessed.* In which thee? In thee *Abraham* beleeving, or in thy faith, or in Christ (thy feede) to come, in whom thou beleevest: All the nations of the earth (I say) shall be blessed, that is, all the nations shall be thy blessed children, even like as thou art blessed, as it is written: *So shall thy seed be.*

Gen. 15.5.

Abrahams faith & ours all one.

We must marke diligently what is set out to us in the promises.

Hereof it followeth: that the blessing and faith of *Abraham* is the same that ours is: that *Abrahams* Christ is our Christ: that Christ died as well for the sins of *Abraham*, as for us. *Abraham* which saw my day and rejoyced, *Joh.8.* Therefore all found but one and the same thing. We may not suffer this word *Blessing* to be corrupted. The Jews looke but through a vaile into the Scripture, and therefore they understand not what, or whereof the promise is which was made to the Fathers: Which we notwithstanding ought to consider above all things. So shall we see that God speaketh to *Abraham* the Patriarke, not of the law nor of things to be done, but of things to be beleeved: that is to say, that God speaketh unto him of promises which are apprehended by faith. Now, what doth *Abraham*? He beleeveth those promises. And what doth God to that beleeving *Abraham*? He imputeth faith unto him for righteousnesse, and addeth further many more promises, as, *I am thy defender. In thee shall all nations be blessed. Thou shalt be a father of many nations. So shall thy seed be.* These are invincible arguments, against the which nothing can be said, if the places of the holy Scripture be thoroughly considered.

Gen. 15. 1.
Gen. 12. 3.
Gen. 15. 5.

Verse 9. *So then they which are of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham.*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



The blessing
is spirituall,
and not cor-
porall, as
the Jewes
dreamed.

The dili-
gence of the
Prophets.

Hos. 13. 14.

Gen. 3. 25.

Gen. 12. 9.

The blessing
is received
only by faith

blessing by preaching and by ministring of the Sacraments, by com-
forting the broken hearted, by distributing the word of grace, which
Abraham had, and which was also his blessing: which, when he be-
lieved, he received the blessing. So we also believing the same are blef-
sed, and this blessing is a great glory, not before the world; but before
God. For we have heard that our sins are forgiven us; and that we are
accepted of God, that God is our Father, and that we are his children,
with whom he will not be angry, but will deliver us from sin, from
death and all evils, and will give unto us righteousness; life and eter-
nall salvation. Of this blessing (as I have said) do the Prophets preach
in every place, who did not so coldly consider those promises made
unto the fathers, as the wicked *Jewes* did, and as the Popish Schoole-
men and Sectaries do at this day, but did reade them and weigh them
with great diligence, and also drew out of those promises whatsoever
they prophesied concerning Christ or his kingdome. So the pro-
phesy of *Hoseas* 13. Chapter: *I will redeme them from the power of the
grave: I will deliver them from death: O death I will be thy death: O grave
I will be thy destruction,* and such like places of the other Prophets,
did all spring out of these promises, in the which God promised to
the fathers the bruising of the Serpents head and the blessing of all na-
tions.

Moreover, If the nations be blessed, that is to say, if they be ac-
counted righteous before God, it followeth that they are free from
sinne and death, and are made partakers of righteousness; salvation
and everlasting life, not for their works, but for their faith in Christ.
Wherefore that place of *Genesis* the 12. Chapter: *In thee shall all the na-
tions be blessed;* speaketh not of the blessing of the mouth, but of such
a blessing as belongeth to the imputation of righteousness; which is
available before God, and redeemeth from the curse of sin, and from
all those evils that doe accompany sin. Now, this blessing is recei-
ved only by faith. For the text saith plainly: *Abraham, believing, and
it was accounted unto him for righteousness:* wherefore it is a meeke
spirituall blessing, and there is no blessing indeed; but this: which al-
though it be accursed in the world (as indeed it is) yet it is availa-
ble before God. This place therefore is of great force, that they
which are of faith, are become partakers of this promise of the blessing
made unto the believing *Abraham*. And by this meanes *Paul* pre-
senteth the cavillation of the Jewes, which brag of a begetting and
working

working *Abraham*, and just before men, and not of a beleeving *Abraham*.

Now, like as the *Jewes* doe glory only of a working *Abraham*, even so the Pope setteth out only a working Christ, or rather an example of Christ. He that will live godly (saith he) must walk as Christ hath walked, according to his owne saying in the 13. of *John*: *I have given you an example, that you should doe even as I have done to you.* We deny not but that the faithfull ought to follow the example of Christ, and to work well: but they say that we are not justified, thereby before God. And *Paul* doth not here reason what we ought to doe, but by what meanes we are made righteous. In this matter we must set nothing before our eyes, but Jesus Christ dying for our sins, and rising again for our righteousnesse, and him must we apprehend by faith as a gift, not as an example. This, reason understandeth not, and therefore as the *Jewes* follow a working, and not a beleeving *Abraham*, even so the *Papists* and all that seek righteousnesse by works, do behold and apprehend, not a justifying, but a working Christ, and by this means they swerve from Christ, from righteousnesse and salvation. And like as the *Jews* which were saved, ought to follow the beleeving *Abraham*: so we also, if we will be delivered from our sins and be saved, must take hold of the justifying and saving Christ, whom *Abraham* himself also by faith did apprehend, and through him was blessed.

It was indeed a great glory, that *Abraham* received circumcision at the Commandement of God, that he was endued with excellent vertues: that he obeyed God in all things: as it is also a great praise and felicity, to follow the example of Christ: working, to love thy neighbour, to doe good to them that hurt thee, to pray for thine enemies, patiently to beare the ingratitude of those which render evill for good: but all this availeth nothing to righteousnesse before God. The excellent deeds and vertues of *Abraham* were not the cause that he was counted righteous before God: So likewise the imagination and following of the example of Christ, doth not make us righteous before God. For, to make us righteous before God, there is a farre more excellent price required, which is neither the righteousnesse of man, nor yet of the law. Here we must have Christ, to blesse us and save us, like as *Abraham* also had him for his Blesser and Saviour.

How?

The Pope setteth Christ forth as an example and not as a gift. *Joh. 13. 12.*

In the matter of justification we must consider the benefit, and not the example of Christ.

It is good to follow the example of Christ: but justification cometh not thereby.

How? not by workes, but by faith. Wherefore as there is great difference betweene the beleeving and working *Abraham*: so is there great difference betweene Christ blessing and redeeming, and Christ working and giving example. Now, *Paul* speaketh here of Christ redeeming and *Abraham* believing, and not of Christ giving example, or of *Abraham* working. Therefore he addeth purposely, and that with great vehemency: *They which are of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham.*

The faithfull *Abraham* must be separate from the working *Abraham*.

Wherefore we must separate the believing and the working *Abraham* as farr asunder, as there is distance betwixt heaven and earth. A man believing in Christ is altogether a divine person, the child of God, the inheritour of the world, a conquerour of sin, death, the world and the devill: therefore he cannot be praised and magnified enough. Let us not suffer this faithfull *Abraham* to lie hid in his grave, as he is hid from the *Jewes*: but let us highly extoll and magnifie him: and let us fill both heaven and earth with his name: so that in respect of this faithfull *Abraham*, we see nothing at all in the working *Abraham*. For when we speak of this faithfull *Abraham*, we are in heaven. But afterwards, doing those things which the working *Abraham* did, which were carnall and earthly, and not divine and heavenly, (but in as much as they were given unto him of God) we are among men in earth. The believing *Abraham* therefore filleth both heaven and earth. So every Christian through his faith filleth heaven and earth, so that besides it, he ought to behold nothing.

One contrary proved by comparing it with his contrary: As all nations are blessed through faith: therefore without faith, all are accursed.

Now, by these words, *shall be blessed*, *Paul* gathereth an argument of the contrary: For the Scripture is full of oppositions, as when two contraries are compared together. And, it is a point of cunning to marke well these oppositions in the Scriptures, and by them to expound the sentences thereof. As here, this word (*blessing*) importeth also the contrary, that is to say, malediction. For when the Scripture saith, that all Nations which are of faith, are blessed with faithfull *Abraham*, it followeth necessarily, that all, as well *Jewes* as *Gentiles*, are accursed without faith, or without this faithfull *Abraham*. For the promise of blessing was given to *Abraham*, that in him all Nations should be blessed. There is no blessing then to be looked for, but only in the promise made unto *Abraham*, now published by the Gospell throughout the whole world. Therefore, whatsoever is without that blessing, is accursed.

And

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

no man from the curse of Gods law. The kingdome of *Babylon* ordained of God, and by him committed unto Kings, had excellent lawes, and all nations y^e were commanded to obey them: notwithstanding this obedience of the laws did not save it from the curse of the law of God. In like manner vve obey the lawes of Princes and Magistrates, but we are not therefore righteous before God: for here we are in another matter.

The righteousnesse of faith and civill righteousnesse are easily confounded.

It is not without cause that I doe so diligently teach and repeate this distinction: for the knowledge thereof is very necessary. Albeit there are few that mark it or understand it indeed. Again, the confounding and mingling together of the heavenly and civill righteousnes, is very easie. In the civill righteousnes we must have regard to law and workes: but in the spirituall, divine and heavenly righteousnes, we must utterly reject all lawes and workes, and set the only promise and blessing before our eyes, which layeth before us Christ the giver of this blessing and grace, and our only Saviour. So that this spirituall righteousnes, secluding the law and all vworks, looketh only unto the grace and blessing vvhich is given by Christ, as it vvas promised to *Abraham*, and of him believed.

The blessing must be received by faith, and not by the law.

Hereby we may plainly see, that this argument is invincible. For if we must hope to receive this blessing by Christ alone, then it must needs follow on the contrary, that it is not received by the law. For the blessing vvas given to faithfull *Abraham* before the law and without the law. Now, like as *Abraham* beleevved in Christ vvhich vvas to come, the giver of the blessing: so and by the same faith, vve beleevve in Christ vvhich is come and present, and so are we now justified by faith, as *Abraham* vvas then justified by faith. They therefore vvhich are under the law, are not blessed, but remain under the curse.

How the adversaries pervert and slander our words.

This the Pope and his proud Prelates doe not beleevve, nor can beleevve, neither can they abide this doctrine. Yet must vve not hold our peace: but must confesse the truth, and say, that the Papacy is accursed: yea all the lawes, and civill ordinances of the Emperour are accursed: vFor according to *Paul*, whatsoever is without the promise and faith of *Abraham*, is accursed. When our Adversaries heare this, by and by they pervert and slander our words, as though vve taught that the Magistrates should not be honoured, but that vve raise up seditions against the Emperour, that we condemne all laws, that vve overthrow and destroy Common-weales, &c.

But

But they doe us great wrong. For we put a difference between the corporall and the spirituall blessing, and we say that the Emperour is blessed with a corporall blessing. For, to have a kingdome, laws and civill ordinances, to have a wife, children, house and lands, is a blessing. For all these things are the good creatures and gifts of God. But we are not delivered from the everlasting curse by this corporall blessing, which is but temporall and must have an end. Therefore we condemne not laws, neither do we stir up sedition against the Emperour: but we teach that he must be obeyed, that he must be feared, revered and honoured, but yet civilly. But when we speake of the blessing after the manner of Divines, then we say boldly with *Paul*, that all things which are without the faith and promise of *Abraham*, are accursed and abide under that everlasting curse of God. For there we must looke for another life after this, and another blessing after this corporall blessing.

The corporall blessing delivereth us not from sinnes.

To conclude, we say that all corporall things are the good creatures of God. Therefore (as I have said) to have wife, children, goods, to have politicke lawes and ordinances, are the good blessings of God in their place: that is to say, they are temporall blessings belonging to this life. But these blessings the Justiciaries and Law-vvorkers of all ages, as the Jewes, Papists, Sectaries, and such like, doe confound and mingle together. For they put no difference betweene corporall and spirituall things. Therefore they say: We have a law, and this law is good, holy and righteous: therefore we are justified through it. Who denieth but that the law is good, holy and righteous? But yet it is also the law of malediction, of sinne, of wrath, and of death. Wherefore we make here a distinction betweene the corporall and spirituall blessing, and say, that God hath a double blessing: one corporall for this life, and another spirituall for the everlasting life. Therefore to have riches, children, and such like; we say it is a blessing, but in his degree, that is to say, in this life present. But as touching life everlasting, it is not enough to have corporall blessings: for the very wicked doe therein abound most of all. It is not sufficient that we have civill righteousness or the righteousness of the law: for therein also the wicked doe specially flourish. These things God distributeth in the world freely, and bestoweth them both upon the good and bad like as he suffereth the Sunne to rise both upon the good and

Corporall things are the good creatures of God.

The law of sinne, wrath and death.

Corporall blessings are to be separate from spirituall blessings.

God bestoweth his gifts both upon the good and evill.

the evill, and sendeth rain upon the righteous and unrighteous: for he is liberall unto all. And to him it is a small matter to put all creatures under the feet of the wicked. *The Creature is subject to vanity, not of his own Will, Rom. 8.* They therefore which have but only these corporall blessings, are not the children of God, blessed before God spiritually, as was *Abraham*: but they are under the curse, as *Paul* here saith: *Whosoever is under the works of the law, is under the curse.*

The effects of the law.

Paul might have said by a generall proposition: whatsoever is without faith, is under the curse. He saith not so, but he taketh that which besides faith is the best, the greatest and most excellent among all corporall blessings of the world: to wit, the law of God. The law (saith he) indeed is holy and given of God: notwithstanding it doth nothing else but make all men subject to the curse, and keepe them under the same. Now, if the law of God do bring men under the curse, much more may the same be said of inferiour laws and blessings. And that it may be plainly understood what *Paul* calleth it to be under the curse, he declareth by this testimony of the Scripture, saying:

Deut. 27. 26.

Verse 10. *For it is written: Cursed is every man that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law, to do them.*

1071 517

2 2 2

Paul proveth the affirmative sentence by the negative.

Paul goeth about to prove by this testimony taken out of the 27. of *Deuteronomie*, that all men which are under the law, or under the works of the law, are accursed, or under the curse: that is to say, under sinne, the wrath of God, and everlasting death: For hee speaketh not (as I have said before) of a corporall, but of a spirituall curse, vvhich must needs be the curse of everlasting death and hell. And this is a vvonderfull manner of proving. For *Paul* proveth this affirmative sentence, vvhich he borroweth out of *Moses*: *Whosoever are of the workes of the law, are under the curse*: by this negative: *Cursed is every one that abideth not in all things, &c.* Now, these two sentences of *Paul* and *Moses* seem clean contrary. *Paul* saith; whosoever shall doe the workes of the law, are accursed. *Moses* saith: whosoever shall not doe the workes of the law, are accursed. How shall these two sayings be reconciled together? or else (vvhich is more), how shall the one be proved by the other? Indeed no man can well understand this place, unlesse he also know and understand the article of justification.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Chap: III. . . . Upon the E P I S T L E

A doer of the law according to the Papists.

* These be the workes preparatory, as the Papists call them, going before justification, as the efficient cause thereof.

The error and impiety of the Iusticiaries.

to say, truly and perfectly. But where shall we find him that will so accomplish the law? Let us see him and we will praise him. Here our adversaries have their answer ready, saying: *The doers of the law shall be justified, Rom. 2.* Very well. But let us first define who be these doers of the law. They call him a doer of the law, which doth the works of the law, and so by those works * going before, is made righteous. This is not to do the law according to *Paul*: for (as I have said) to be of the works of the law, and to be of faith, are contrary things. Therefore to seek to be justified by the works of the law, is to deny the righteousness of faith. Wherefore these Justiciaries, and law-workers, when they do the law, even in so doing deny the righteousness of faith, and sinne against the first, the second, and third Commandements, yea even against the whole law. For God commandeth that we should worship him in faith, and in the feare of his Name. On the contrary, they make righteousness of works, without faith and against faith: therefore in that they do the law, they do cleane contrary to the law, and sinne most deadly. For they deny the righteousness of God, his mercy and his promises: they deny Christ with all his benefits, and in their hearts they stablish, not the righteousness of the law (which they understand not, and much lesse do it:) but a meere fantasie and an idoll of the law. Therefore we must needs say, that not only in doing of the law they do it not, but also they sin, and deny the divine Majesty in all his promises. And to this end the law was not given.

Rom. 10. 3.

Wherefore, they, not understanding the law, abuse the law, and as *Paul* saith: *They being ignorant of the righteousness of God, and seeking to stablish their owne righteousness, have not submitted themselves to the righteousness of God, Rom. 10.* For they are blind, and know not how they ought to judge of faith and of the promises, and therefore without all understanding they rush into the Scripture, taking hold but of one part thereof: to wit, the law, and this they imagine that they are able to fulfill by workes. But this is a very dreame, a bewitching and illusion of the heart: and that righteousness of the law, which they think they do fulfill, is nothing else in very deed, but idolatry and blasphemie against God. Therefore it cannot be but they must needs abide under the curse.

It is impossible therefore that we should do the law in such sort

as they imagine, and much less that we should be justified thereby. This thing first the law it selfe testifieth, which hath a cleane contrary effect: For it increaseth sin, it worketh wrath, it accuseth, it terrifieth and condemneth. How then should it justify? Moreover, the promise also sheweth the very same thing. For it was said unto *Abraham*: *In thee shall all the nations of the earth be blessed.* There is no blessing therefore but in the promise of *Abraham*: and if thou be without that promise, thou art under the curse. If thou be under the curse, thou fulfillest not the law: because thou art under sinne, the devill, and everlasting death: all which do assuredly follow the curse. To conclude. If righteousness should come by the law, then should the promise of God be in vaine, and in vaine should he powre out his blessing in so great abundance. Therefore when God saw that we could not fulfill the law, he provided for this long before the law, and promised the blessing to *Abraham*, saying: *In thee shall all the nations of the earth be blessed.* And so hath he testified that all the nations should be blessed, not by the law, but through the promise made unto *Abraham*. They therefore that lay hold on the law, and seek to be justified thereby, despising the promise, are accursed.

The effect of the law.

Gen. 22.

Wherefore [to do] is first of all to beleeve, and so through faith to performe the law. We must first receive the holy Ghost, wherewith we being lightened and made new creatures, begin to do the law, that is to say, to love God and our neighbour. But the holy Ghost is not received through the law (for they which are under the law, as *Paul* saith, are under the curse:) but by the hearing of faith, that is to say, through the promise. We must be blessed onely with *Abraham* in the promise made unto him, and in his faith. Therefore before all things, we must heare and receive the promise, which setteth out Christ, and offereth him to all beleevers: and when they have taken hold upon him by faith, the holy Ghost is given unto them for his sake. Then do they love God and their neighbour, then do they good works, then do they carry the crosse patiently. This is to do the law indeed: otherwise the law remaineth alwayes undone. Wherefore, if thou wilt define truly and plainly what it is to do the law, it is nothing else, but to beleeve in Jesus Christ, and when the holy Ghost is received through faith in Christ, to work those things which are commanded in the law: and otherwise we are not able to performe the law. For the Scrip-

To fulfill the law.

How the law is observed.

To do the law.

ture faith, that there is no blessing without the promise, no not in the law. It is impossible therefore to accomplish the law without the promise.

A doer of the law.

There is not one therefore to be found in all the world, unto whom this name and title, to be called a doer of the law, appertaineth without the promise of the Gospell. Wherefore this word [doer of the law] is a fained terme, which no man understandeth unlesse he be without and above the law in the blessing and faith of *Abraham*. So that the true doer of the law is he, who receiving the holy Ghost through faith in Christ, beginneth to love God and to do good unto his neighbour. So that this word [to do the law] must comprehend faith also which maketh the tree, and when the tree is made, then follow the fruits. The tree must be first, and then the fruit. For the apples make not the tree, but the tree maketh the apples. So faith first maketh the person, which afterward bringeth forth works. Therefore to do the law without faith, is to make the apples of wood and earth without the tree: which is not to make apples, but meere fantasies. Contrariwise, if the tree be made, that is to say, the person or doer which is made through faith in Christ, works will follow. For the doer must needs be before the things which are done, and not the things which are done, before the doer.

In divinity the doer is made and framed thorough faith before there be any deeds.

The godly are not made righteous by doing righteous things, &c.

The doer then is not so called of the things that are done, but of the things that are to be done. For Christians are not made righteous in doing righteous things, but being now made righteous by faith in Christ, they do righteous things. In politick matters it cometh so to passe that the doer or worker is made of the things which are wrought, as a man in playing the Carpenter becometh a Carpenter: but in divine matters the workers are not made of the works going before, but the persons made and framed already by faith which is in Christ, are now become doers and workers. Of such speaketh *Paul* when he saith: *The doers of the law shall be justified, that is, shall be counted righteous.*

Rom. 2.13.

The doctrine of the Sophisters and Schoolemen

Yea, the very Sophisters and Schoolemen are compelled to confesse, and so they teach also, that a morrall work outwardly done, if it be not done with a pure heart, a good will, and true intent, it is but hypocrisie. And hereof cometh the proverbe among the *Germanes*: Such a cowle covereth many a knave. For the vilest and the wickedest knave in the world may counterfeit the same works that

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

true doers of the law are they which through faith are the good tree before the fruit, doers and workers before the works. Of these speaketh *Moses* also: and except they be such, they are under the curse. But the hypocrites are not of this sort: for they thinke to obtaine righteousness by works, and by them to make the person just and acceptable. For thus they dreame: We that are sinners and unrighteous will be made righteous. How shall that be? By good works. Therefore they do even like as a foolish builder, which goeth about of the rooffe to make the foundation, of the fruits to make the tree. For when they seeke to be justified by works, of the works they would make the worker, which is directly against *Moses*, which maketh such a worker subject to the curse, as well as *Paul* doth. Therefore whiles they go about to do the law, they not only do it not, but also deny, (as I have said) the first commandement, the promises of God, the promised blessing of *Abraham*, they renounce Faith, and they go about to make themselves blessed by their own works: that is to say, to justify themselves, to deliver themselves from sinne and death, to overcome the devill, and violently to lay hold upon the kingdome of Heaven. And this is plainely to renounce God, and to set themselves in the place of God. For all these are the works of the divine majesty alone, and not of any creature either in heaven or in earth.

The error
and impiety
of hypo-
crites.

Hereupon *Paul* was able easily to foreshew out of the first Commandement, the abominations that were to come, which Antichrist should bring into the Church. For all they which teach that any other worship is necessary to salvation, then that which God requireth of us by the first Commandement, which is the feare of God, Faith and the love of God, are plaine Antichrists, and set themselves in the place of God. That such should come, Christ himselfe fore-told, when he saith, *Matth. 24. Many shall come in my name, saying: I am Christ.* So wee also at this day may boldly and easily pronouncé, that whosoever seeketh righteousness by works without faith, denieth God and maketh himselfe god. For thus he thinketh: If I do this worke, I shall be righteous, I shall be a conquerour of sinne, death, the devill, the wrath of God, and of hell, and shall obtaine life everlasting. And what is this else (I pray you) but to challenge that worke unto himselfe which doth belong to God alone, and to shew indeed that he him-
selfe

The worship
of the first
Commandement.

Mat. 24. 5.

felfe is God? Therefore it is an eafie matter for us to prophetic, and moft certainly to judge of all thofe, which are without faith, that they are not onely Idolaters, but very Infidels which deny God, and fet themfelves in the place of God. Upon the fame ground Peter alfo prophetieth when he faith: *There fhall be amongft you false teachers, which privily fhall bring in damnable heresies, and fhall deny the Lord, &c. and make merchandife of the people.* 2 Pet. 2.1, 2.

And in the old Testament all the prophecies againft Idolatry fprung out of the firft Commandement. For all the wicked Kings and Prophets, with all the unfaithfull people, did nothing elfe but that which the Pope and all hypocrites alwayes do. They, contemning the firft Commandement and worship appointed of God, and defpifing the promife of *Abrahams* feed, even that feed in whom all nations fhould be bleffed and fainted, ordained a wicked worship cleane contrary to the word of God, and faid: With this worship will we ferve God and fet our his praife, which hath brought us out of the land of *Egypt*. So *Jeroboam* made two golden calves and faid: * *Behold thy gods, O Israel, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt.* This he faid of the true God which had redeemed *Israel*, and yet both he and all his people were Idolaters: For they worshipped God contrary to the firft Commandement. They onely regarded the work: which being done, they counted themfelves righteous before God. And what was this elfe, but to deny God himfelfe, whom they confefled with their mouths, and faid that he had brought them out of the land of *Egypt*? *Paul* fpeaketh of fuch Idolaters when he faith: *They confefle that they know God, but in their deeds they deny him.* Ti. 1. 16.

The idolatry
of the Iews.

The two golden calves
of *Jeroboam*.
1 Kin. 12. 28.

Wherefore all hypocrites and Idolaters go about to do thofe workes, which properly pertaine to the divine Majesty, and belong to *Christ* onely and alone. Indeed they fay not in plaine words, I am God, I am *Christ*, and yet in very deed they proudly challenge unto themfelves the divinity and office of *Christ*, and therefore it is as much in effect as if they faid: I am *Christ*, I am a Saviour, not onely of my felfe, but alfo of others. This the Monkes have not onely taught, but alfo have made the whole world to beleve: to wit, that they are able, not onely to make themfelves righteous, through their hypocriticall holineffe, but alfo others unto whom they communicate the fame: whereas notwithstanding it is the proper and onely office of *Christ* to juftifie the finner,

Hypocrites
go about
to do that
thing which
belongeth
onely to
Christ.

The

The Pope challengeth a divinity or divine power as well as God himselfe.

The Pope in like manner, by publishing and spreading his divinity throughout the whole world, hath denied and utterly buried the office and Divinity of Christ.

The use of the doctrine of faith.

The Pope is Antichrist.

Mat. 24. 5.
2 Thes. 2. 4.
Mat. 24. 15.
Mar. 13. 14.
Dan. 9. 27.

It is expedient that these things should be well taught and well weighed, for thereby we may learne to judge of the whole Christian doctrine, and the life of man: also to confirme mens consciences: to understand all propheties and all the holy Scriptures, and rightly to judge of all other things. He that knoweth all these things rightly, may certainly judge that the Pope is Antichrist, because he teacheth a far other manner of worship, then the first table setteth out. He may perfectly know and understand, what it is to deny God, to deny Christ, and what Christ meaneth when he saith: *Many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ: What it is to be against God, and to be lifted up above all that is called God, or that is worshipped: What it signifieth, that Antichrist sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himselfe as God: What it is, to see the abomination of desolation standing in the holy place, &c.*

What a mischievous thing hypocrite is.

Every moritmonger is both the matter and the worker, or the work and the workman.

To seeke righteousness by the law.

Now hereof spring all these mischiefes, that this cursed hypocrite will not be made righteous by the divine blessing, nor created anew of God the Creatour. It will in no wise be a patient, or suffer any thing to be wrought in her: but will needs be altogether an agent, and work those things which she should suffer God to work in her and receive of him. Therefore she maketh her selfe a Creatour and a justifier through her own works, despising the blessing promised and given to *Abraham* and to his beleeving children: So that every hypocrite is both the matter and the worker (although this be against Philosophie, for one and the selfe same thing, cannot work upon it selfe:) The matter, because he is a sinner: the worker, because he putteth on a cowle, or chooseth some other work through the which he hopeth to deserve grace, and to save himselfe and others: therefore he is both the creature and the Creatour. No man therefore can expresse with words, how execrable and horrible it is, to seek righteousness in the law by works, without the blessing. For it is *the abomination standing in the holy place* which denieth God, and setteth up the creature in the place of the Creatour.

The true doers of the law.

The doers of the law therefore are not the hypocrites, observing the law outwardly: but the true beleevers, who receiving the holy Ghost, do accomplish the law, that is to say, they love God and their neighbour,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

and meaneth the self-same thing that he doth, when he saith: *Cursed is every one that abideth not, &c.* For he saith that they do not the law, because they would justify themselves by workes, and concludeth with *Paul*, that they are under the curse. Therefore *Moses* requireth true doers of the law, which are of faith, even as *Paul* condemneth those which are not true doers of the law, that is to say, which are not of faith. Herein is no repugnance, that *Moses* spake negatively and *Paul* affirmatively, so that you define rightly what is meant by this word *Doer*. So both sentences are true, to wit, that all are accursed which abide not in all that is written in this booke: And, that all they are accursed, which are of the workes of the law.

An Answer to those arguments which the Adversaries alleadge against the Doctrine and righteousnesse of Faith.

Places of
the law and
workes.

Seeing this place offereth unto us occasion, we must say something as touching the arguments which our adversaries doe object against the doctrine of Faith, which is: *That we are justified by Faith alone.* There are many places both in the old Testament and in the new, as concerning workes and rewards of workes, which our adversaries do alleadge, and thinke themselves able thereby utterly to overthrow the doctrine of Faith which we teach and maintaine. Therefore we must be well furnished and armed, that we may be able, not only to instruct our brethren, but also to answer the objections of our Adversaries.

The righte-
ousnesse of
the law was
also known
to the Hea-
then.

The Schoole-men and all such as understand not the article of justification, doe know no other righteousnesse then the civill righteousnesse and the righteousnesse of the law, which after a sort the *Gentiles* also doe know. Therefore they borrow certaine words out of the law and morall Philosophy, as [to doe, to worke] and such like, and they apply the same unto spirituall matters: Wherein they deale most perversly and wickedly. We must put a difference betweene Philosophy and Divinity. The Schoole-men themselves grant and teach, that in the order of nature, being goeth before working, for naturally the tree is before the fruit. Againe, in Philosophy they grant, that a worke morally wrought, is not good, except there be first a right judgement of reason, and a good will

or a good intent. So then they will have a right judgement of reason, and a good intent to go before the worke, that is to say, they make the person morally righteous before the vvorke. Contrariwise in Divinity, and in spirituall matters, where they ought most of all so to do, such senseless asses they are, that they pervert and turn all quite contrary, placing the worke before right judgement of reason and good intent.

Wherefore, Doing is one thing in nature, another in morall Philosophy, and another in Divinity. In nature the tree must be first, and then the fruit. In morall Philosophy, Doing requireth a good intent and a sound judgment of reason to vvorke vwell, going before. And here all the Philosophers are at a stay, and can go no further. Therefore the Divines say, that morall Philosophy taketh not God for the object and finall cause. For *Aristotle*, or a Sadducey, or a man of any civill honesty, calleth this right reason and a good intent, if he seeke the publike commodity of the Common-wealth, and the quietnesse and honesty thereof. A Philosopher or Law-worker ascendeth no higher. He thinketh not through a right judgement of reason, and a good intent to obtain remission of sins and everlasting life, as the Sophister or the Monke doth. Wherefore the Heathen Philosopher is much better then such an hypocrite. For he abideth vwithin his bounds, having only consideration of the honesty and tranquility of the Common-wealth, not mingling heavenly and earthly things together. Contrariwise, the blind Sophister imagineth that God regardeth his good intent and works. Therefore he mingleth earthly and heavenly things together, and polluteth the name of God. And this imagination he learneth out of morall Philosophy, saving that hee abuseth it much worse then the Heathen man doth.

To do naturally, morally, and spiritually.

A comparison between the Heathen Philosopher and the Monke, &c.

Wherefore we must ascend up higher in Divinity vwith this vword Doing, then in naturall things and in Philosophy, so that now it must have a new signification, and be made altogether new, joyned vwith a right judgement of reason, and a good will, not morally, but divinely; vvhich is, that I know and beleve by the word of the Gospell, that God hath sent his Son into the world to redeem us from sin and death. Here Doing is a new thing, unknowne to reason, to Philosophers, to Law-workers, and unto all men: for it is a wisdom hidden in a mystery. Therefore in Divinity the work necessarily requireth faith going before.

The Popish School men think a right judgement of reason, & a good intent without faith, to be sufficient to commend the work.

Therefore.

How we
must answer
our aduersa-
ries, urging
these terms,
Doing and
Working.

To do ac-
cording to
the Scrip-
ture, what
itis.

A rule to be
observed as
touching
those places
which speak
of works.

1 Sam. 17. 37.

45.

46.

47.

The work
of David is
a faithfull
work.

The sacrifice
of Abel and
Cain.
Gen. 4. 5.

Therefore when our aduersaries do alledge against us the sentences of the Scripture touching the law and works, when mention is made of working and doing, thou must answer them, that they are terms pertaining to Divinity, and not to naturall or morall things. If they be applied to naturall or morall things, they must be taken in their own signification. But if they be applied to matters of Divinity, they must include such a right judgement, reason and good-will, as is incomprehensible to mans reason. Wherefore Doing in Divinity must be alwaies understood of a faithfull Doing. So that this faithfull Doing is altogether as it were a new Kingdome separate from the naturall or morall Doing. Therefore, when we that are Divines speake of Doing, we must needs speake of that faithfull Doing: for in Divinity we have no other right judgement of reason, no good will or intent besides faith.

This rule is well observed in the 11. Chapter to the *Hebrewes*. There are recited many and sundry workes of the Saints, out of the holy Scripture: as of *David*, who killed a Lion and a Beare, and slew *Goliath*. There the Sophister or Schooleman, that foolish Ass, looketh upon nothing else, but the outward appearance of the worke. But this worke of *David* must be so looked upon, that first we must consider what manner of person *David* was, before he did this worke: Then shall we see that he was such a person, whose heart trusted in the Lord God of *Israel*, as the Text plainly witnesseth. *The Lord that delivered me out of the paw of the Lion, and out of the paw of the Beare, will deliver me out of the hand of the Philistine.* Moreover: *Thou comest to me with a sword, and with a speare, and with a shield: but I come to thee in the name of the Lord of hostes, the God of the host of Israel upon whom thou hast railed this day. This day shall the Lord close thee in my hand, and I shall smite thee, and take thine head from thee, &c. Because the Lord saveth not with sword nor speare, (for the battell is the Lords) and hee will give you into our hands.* You see then that he was a righteous man, beloved of God, strong and constant in faith, before he did this worke. This Doing of *David* therefore, is not a naturall or morall Doing, but a faithfull Doing.

So it is said of *Abel* in the same Epistle, that through faith hee offered up a better sacrifice unto God then *Cain*. If the Schoolemen happen upon this place, as it is read in *Genesis* (where it is simply

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

is presupposed or goeth before, for the which their vvorks doe please God, and are accepted of him. Therefore in Divinity there is a new doing clean contrary to the morall doing.

The Scripture sometime speaketh of faith without vvorks, and sometime of faith with vvorks.

Moreover, we are also wont to distinguish faith after this manner, that faith is sometime taken vvithout the vvorké, sometime with the vvorké. For like as an Artificer speaketh diversly of the matter whereupon he vvorketh, and likewise a Gardiner of the tree being barren or fruitfull: even so the holy Ghost speaketh diversly of faith in the Scripture: sometime of an absolute faith: sometime of a compound, or (as a man would say) an incarnate faith. Now, an absolute faith is this, vvhen the Scripture speaketh absolutely of justification or of the justified, as is to be seene in the Epistles to the Romans, and to the Galatians. But vvhen the Scripture speaketh of rewards and vvorks, then it speaketh of the compound or incarnate faith. We will rehearse some examples of this faith: As, *Faith which vvorketh by love. Doe this, and thou shalt live. If thou wilt enter into life, keepe the Commandements. He that doth these things shall live in them. Decline from evill, and doe that which is good.* In these and such like places (as there are many in the holy Scripture) where mention is made of doing, the Scripture alwaies speaketh of faithfull doing. As when it saith: *Doe this and thou shalt live*, it meaneth thus: See first that thou be faithfull, that thou have *a right judgement of reason and a good will, that is to say, faith in Christ. When thou hast this faith, worke on a Gods blessing.

Gal. 5.6.
Luke. 19.18.
Mat. 19.17
Rom. 10.5.
Psal. 37.27.

* These termes the Papists use, & set them in the place of faith.

The Scripture sometime speaketh of one nature in Christ, sometime of both

Arule of the communication of properties called *comunicatio idio-*

matum.
Luce 2. 13

What marvell is it then, if rewards be promised to this incarnate faith: that is to say, to the vvorking faith, as was the faith of *Abel*, or to faithfull vvorkes? And why should not the holy Scripture thus speake diversly of faith, vvhen it speaketh divers waies of Christ, as he is God and man: that is to say, sometime of his whole person, sometime of his two natures apart, either of his divine or of his humane nature? If it speake of the natures apart, it speaketh of Christ absolutely: but if it speake of the divine nature united in one person to the humane nature, then it speaketh of Christ compound and incarnate. There is a common rule among the Schoole-men of the communication of the properties, vvhen the properties belonging to the Divinitie of Christ, are attributed to the humane: vvwhich we may see every vvhere in the Scriptures. As in *Luke 2.* the Angell calleth the infant borne of the *Virgin Ma-*

rie, the Saviour of men, and the universall Lord both of the Angels and men. And in the 1. Chapter he calleth him the Son of God. Hereupon I may truly say, that that infant which lay in the manger, and in the lap of the Virgin, created heaven and earth, and is Lord of the Angels. Here I speake indeed of a man: but man in this proposition is a new word, and (as the School-men themselves do grant) hath relation to the Divinitie, that is to say: this God which was made man, hath created all things. Creation is attributed only to the Divinitie of Christ: for the humanity doth not create, and yet notwithstanding it is truly said, man created, because the Divinity, which only createth, is incarnate with the humanity, and therefore the humanity, together with the Divinity, is partaker of the same properties. Wherefore it is well and godly said: This man Jesus Christ brought *Israel* out of *Egypt*, strook *Pharaoh*, and wrought all the wonders from the beginning of the world.

Luke 1. 31

The man Christ created all things.

Therefore when the Scripture saith: *If thou wilt enter into life, keepe the Commandements of God: doe this and thou shalt live, &c.*

If thou wilt enter into life, &c.

First, we must see of what manner of keeping and doing he speaketh. For in these and such like places (as I have said) he speaketh of a compound faith, and not of a naked and simple faith. And the meaning of this place: *Doe this and thou shalt live*, is this: Thou shalt live because of this faithfull doing, or this doing shall give unto thee life; because of thy faith alone. After this manner justification is attributed to faith alone, as creation is to the Divinity: And yet notwithstanding, as it is truly said: Jesus the Son of *Mary* created all things, so also justification is attributed to the incarnate faith, or to the faithfull doing. Therefore we must in no wise thinke with the Sophisters and hypocrites, that works do absolutely justifie, or that rewards are promised to morall works, but to faithfull works only.

Let us therefore suffer the holy Ghost to speake as he doth in the Scriptures, either of naked, simple and absolute faith, or of compound and incarnate faith. All things which are attributed to workes, doe properly belong unto faith. For workes must not be looked upon morally, but faithfully, and with a spirituall eye. Faith is the divinity of workes, and is so spread throughout the workes of the faithfull, as is the Divinitie throughout the humanity of Christ. Faith therefore doth all alone in the workes

Faith simple & compound

of the faithfull; *Abraham* is called faithfull, because faith is spread throughout the whole person of *Abraham*: so that beholding him working, I see nothing of the carnall or of the working *Abraham*, but of the beleeving *Abraham*.

The places concerning works in the Scriptures, must be expounded as the Epistle to the Hebrewes expoundeth them.

* Heb. 11. 33, 34, 35.

Wherefore when thou readest in the Scriptures, of the Fathers, Prophets, and Kings, how they wrought righteousness, raised up the dead, overcame kingdoms, thou must remember that these and such like sayings are to be expounded, as the Epistle to the Hebrewes expoundeth them, that is: * *By faith they wrought righteousness, by faith they raised up the dead, by faith they subdued Kings and kingdoms, &c.* So that faith incorporateth the worke, and giveth it his perfection. And this the adversaries, if they be well in their wits, cannot deny, neither have they any thing to say or object against it. Indeed they can cry out that the Scripture speaketh oftentimes of doing and working. And we alwaies answer them again, that it speaketh also of faithfull doing. For first, reason must be lightened by faith, before it can work. Now, when it hath a true opinion and knowledge of God, then is the worke incarnate and incorporate into it: so that whatsoever is attributed to faith, is afterwards attributed to works also, but yet because of faith only and alone.

The difference betweene morall doing, and spirituall doing.

Wherefore in reading of the Scriptures we must learne to put a difference between the true and the hypocriticall, the morall and the spirituall doing of the law. So shall we be able to declare the true meaning of all those places, which seeme to maintaine the righteousness of works. Now, the true doing of the law is a faithfull and a spirituall doing, which he hath not, that seeketh righteousness by works. Therefore every doer of the law and every holy morall worker is accursed. For he walketh in the presumption of his owne righteousness against God; whiles he will be justified by mans free-will and reason, and so in doing of the law, he doth it not. And this according to *Paul*, is to be under the works of the law, that is to say, that hypocrites do the law, and yet in doing, they do it not: for they understand this word Doing, according to the literall sense of the law, which in true Christian Divinitie is nothing worth. Indeed they worke many things, but in the presumption of their owne righteousness, and without the knowledge of God and faith, as the *Pharisee* did; *Luk. 18.* and as *Paul* did before his conversion: therefore they are blind and miserably erre, and so remaine under the curse.

Hypocrites do many things but without faith

Where

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Gal. 3. 31

rally of all things whatsoever. And Paul his Apostle sheweth that he was made sin and became accursed for me. I heare then that I could by no other means be delivered from my sin, my death and my malediction, but by his death and bloud-shedding. Wherefore I conclude that it behoveth Christ himselfe to overcome my sinne, death and malediction in his own body, and not the works of the law or mine own works. And hereunto reason is constrained to yeeld and say, that Christ is not the work of the law, or my work: that his bloud and death is not circumcision, the observation of the ceremonies of the law, and much lesse a Monks cowle, a shaven crown, abstinence, vows and such like. Wherefore if he be the price of my redemption, if he be made sin and malediction that he might justifie me and blesse me: I care not if thou bring a thousand places of the Scripture for the righteousnesse of works against the righteousnesse of faith, and cry out never so much, that the Scripture is against me. I have the Authour and Lord of the Scripture with me, on whose side I will rather stand, then beleeve all the rablement of Law-workers and meritmongers. Albeit it is impossible that the Scripture should be against this doctrine, unlesse it be among the senselesse and obstinate hypocrites: but to the godly and such as have understanding, it giveth witness for Jesus Christ his Lord. See therefore how thou canst reconcile the Scripture, which thou sayest, is against my doctrine. As for me, I will stick to the Authour and Lord of the Scripture:

The scripture is not against it selfe

A plaine & simple answer to the places of Scripture concerning workes.

Therefore if any man thinketh himselfe not well able to reconcile such places of the Scripture, or answer unto the same sufficiently, and yet notwithstanding is constrained to heare the objections and cavillations of the adversaries, let him answer simply and plainely after this sort: Thou settest against me the servant, that is to say, the Scripture and that not wholly, neither yet the principall part thereof, but onely certaine places as touching the law and workes. But I come with the Lord himselfe, who is above the Scripture, and is made unto me the merit and price of righteousness and everlasting life. On him I lay hold, him I sticke to, and leave workes unto thee: which notwithstanding thou never diddest. This solution neither the devill nor any Justiciary can ever wrest from thee or overthrow. Moreover thou art in safety before God: For thy heart abideth fixed in the object, which is called Christ: who was nailed to the Crosse and accursed, not
for

for himselfe, but for us, as the text saith: *made a curse for us.* Hold fast this, and lay it against all the sentences of the law and works whatsoever, and say: doest thou heare this Satan? Here he must needs give place, for he knoweth that Christ is his Lord and master.

Verse 11. *And that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for the just shall live by Faith.* *Heb. 8. 4.
Rom 1. 17.*

This is another argument grounded upon the testimony of the Prophet *Habacuck*. And it is a sentence of great weight and authority. which *Paul* setteth against all the sentences touching the law and works. As if he should say: What need we any long disputation? Here I bring forth a most evident testimony of the Prophet, against the which no man can cavill: *The just man shall live by faith.* If he live by faith, then he liveth not by the law: For the law is not of faith. And here *Paul* excludeth works and the law, as things contrary to faith.

The Sophisters (as they are alwaies ready to corrupt the Scriptures) do wrest and pervert this place after this manner. *The iust man doth live by faith:* that is to say, by a working faith, or formed or made perfect with charity: but if it be not formed with charity, then doth it not iustifie. This glosse they themselvs have forged, and by the same they do injury to the words of the Prophet. If they did call this formed or furnished faith, the true faith which the Scripture teacheth, this their glosse should not offend me, for then faith should not be separated from charity, but from the vaine opinion of faith: As we also put a difference between a counterfeit faith and a true faith. The counterfeit faith is that which heareth of God, of Christ, and of all the mysteries of his incarnation and our redemption: which also apprehendeth and beareth away those things which it heareth, yea and can talke goodly thereof, and yet there remaineth nothing else in the heart, but a naked opinion and a sound of the Gospel: For it neither reneweth nor changeth the heart: it maketh not a new man, but leaveth him in the vanity of his former opinion and conversation: and this is a very pernicious faith. The morall Philosopher is much better, then the hypocrite having such a faith.

How the Sophisters corrupt this place: *The iust doth live by faith.*

The difference betweene a true and a false faith.

Wherefore, if they would make a distinction between faith formed,

Of this faith
infused, and
what it is,
reade more
before the 2.
chap, fol 72.
pag. 2, line 2.

med (and take it as the Scripture taketh it) and the false or counterfeit faith, their distinction should nothing offend me. But they speake of faith formed and made perfect with charity, and make a double faith, that is to say, formed and unformed. This pestilent and devillish glosse I utterly detest. Although (say they) we have faith infused, called (*Fides infusa*) which is the gift of the holy Ghost, and also faith gotten by our own industry, called (*Fides acquisita*;) yet both of them lacke their forme and perfection, which is charity, and are formed with charity. This is to prefer charity before faith, and to attribute righteousnesse, not to faith, but to charity. Wherefore when they do not attribute righteousnesse to faith, but only in respect of charity, they attribute to faith nothing at all.

Moreover, these perverters of the Gospell of Christ do teach that even that faith which they call faith infused, and not received by hearing, nor gotten by any working, but created in man by the holy Ghost, may stand with deadly sin, and that the worse men may have this faith. Therefore, say they, if it be alone, it is idle and utterly unprofitable. Thus they take from faith her office, and give it unto charity: so that faith is nothing, except charity which they call the forme and perfection thereof, be joynd withall. This is a devillish and a blasphemous kind of doctrine, which utterly defaceth and overthroweth the doctrine of faith, and carrieth a man cleane from Christ the mediatur, and from faith, which is the hand and onely meane whereby we apprehend him. For if charity be the forme and perfection of faith (as they dreame) then am I by and by constrained to say, that charity is the principall part of Christian Religion, and so I lose Christ, his bloud, and all his benefits, and now I rest altogether in a morall doing, even as the Pope, the heathen Philosopher, and the Turke doth.

The formed
faith of the
Schoolmen

True faith
before God.

But the holy Ghost which giveth to all men both mouth and tongue, knoweth how to speake. He could have said, (as the Sophisters do wickedly imagine:) The righteous man shall live by faith formed and beautified or made perfect by charity. But this he omitteth of purpose, and saith plainly: *The righteous man liveth by faith.* Let these doltish Sophisters go therefore, with this their wicked and pestilent glosse. We will still hold and extoll this faith, which God himselfe hath called faith, that is to say, a true and a certaine faith, which doubteth not of God, nor of his promises,

nor.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

God, and standeth only in receiving good things of God. Contrariwise the law and works consist in exacting, in doing, and in giving unto God. As *Abel* offering his sacrifice, giveth unto God: but he beleeving receiveth of God. *Paul* therefore concludeth mightily out of that place of *Habacuck*, that the righteous man liveth by faith alone. For the law in no wise belongeth unto faith, because the law is not the promise. But faith resteth only upon the promise. Wherefore as there is a difference between the law and the promise: so is there also between works and faith. That glosse therefore of the Schoolemen is false and wicked, which joyneth the law and faith together, yea rather it quencheth faith, and setteth the law in the place of faith. And here note, that *Paul* alwayes speaketh of such as would do the law morally, and not according to the Scripture. But whatsoever is said of such good works as the Scripture requireth, the same is attributed to faith alone.

The law.
Faith.

Verse 12. *But the man that shall do those things shall live in them.*

Paul here goeth about to shew what is the very true righteousness of the law and of the Gospell. The righteousness of the law is to fulfill the law, according to that saying: *He that shall do those things shall live in them.* The righteousness of faith is to beleeve, according to that saying: *The righteous man doth live by faith.* The law therefore requireth that we should yeeld somewhat unto God. But faith requireth no works of us, or that we should give any thing unto God, but that we beleeving the promise of God, should receive of him. Therefore the office of the law is to work, as the office of faith is to assent unto the promises. For faith is the faith of the promise, and the work is the work of the law. *Paul* therefore standeth upon this word *Doing*: and that he may plainly shew, what is the confidence of the law, and what is the confidence of works, he compareth the one with the other, the promise with the law, and faith with works. He saith, that of the law there cometh nothing else but only doing: but faith is a cleane contrary thing, namely, that which assenteth to the promise, and layeth hold upon it.

The righteousness of the law.
The righteousness of faith.

The office of the law and of faith.

The law and the promise, doing & beleeving must be distinguished.

These foure things therefore must be perfectly distinguished. For as the law hath his proper office, so hath the promise. To the law pertaineth doing, and to the promise, beleeving. Wherefore, as far as the law and the promise are separate asunder, so far also are doing and beleeving. By the which distinction *Paul* here goeth about

about to separate charity from faith, and to teach that charity justifieth not, because the law worketh or helpeth nothing to justification. Faith alone therefore justifieth and quickneth: and yet it standeth not alone, that is to say, it is not idle, albeit that in her degree and office it standeth alone. Ye see the cause then why *Paul* here alledgeth this place, namely that he may separate faith and charity far asunder.

Faith is not idle.

Fie upon the Sophisters therefore with their cursed glosse and their blind distinction of faith formed and unformed: For these new forged termes, faith formed, faith unformed, faith gotten by mans industry, and such like, are very monsters devised by the devill, to no other end but to deface and destroy the true Christian doctrine and faith, to blaspheme and tread Christ under-foot, and to stablish the righteousness of works. Indeed works must follow faith, but faith must not be works, or works faith; but the bounds and the kingdoms of the law or works, and of faith must be rightly distinguished the one from the other.

Fides formata, unformata, acquisita, are monstrous termes devised by the Papists.

When we beleve therefore, we live only by faith in Christ, who is without sin, who is also our mercy-seate and remission of sins. Contrariwise, when we observe the law, we work indeed, but we have no righteousness nor life. For the office of the law is not to justify and give life, but to shew forth sinne, and to destroy. Indeed the law saith: *He that shall do these things, shall live in them.* But where is he which doth the law: that is, which loveth God with all his heart, and his neighbour as himself? Therefore no man doth the law, and although he go about to do it never so much: yet in doing it he doth it not: therefore he abideth under the curse. But faith worketh not, but beleeveth in Christ the justifier. Therefore a man liveth not because of his doing, but because of his beleeving. But a faithfull man performeth the law, and that which he doth not, is forgiven him through the remission of sins for Christs sake, and that which is remaining is not imputed unto him.

The office of the law.

The office of faith.

Paul therefore in this place, and in the 10th Chap. to the *Romanes*, compareth the righteousness of the law and of faith together, where he saith: *He that shall do those things, shall live in them.* As though he would say: it were indeed a goodly matter if we could accomplish the law: but because no man doth it, we must flee unto Christ, *Who is the end of the law to righteousness to every one that beleeveth.* Hee was made under the law, that he might

* Christ the end of the law. Rom. 10 4. Gal. 4 50.

redeeme.

1 Cor. 13:12.

redeeme us that were under the law. Beleeving in him we receive the holy Ghost, and we begin to do the law: and that which we do not, is not imputed unto us because of our faith in Christ. But in the life to come we shall no more have need of faith. For then we shall not see darkely through a glasse (as we now do) but we shall see face to face: that is to say, there shall be a most glorious brightnes of the eternall Majesty, in which we shall see God even as he is. There shall be a true and a perfect knowledge and love of God, a perfect light of reason and a good will: not such a morall and philosphicall will as the Popish Schoolemen dreame of, but an heavenly, divine, and eternall will. Here in the meane time, in spirit by faith, we looke for the hope of righteousnesse. Contrariwise, they that seek for righteousnesse of sins by the law and not by Christ, do never performe the law, but abide under the curle.

Who they
are that
Paul calleth
righteous.

A double use
of the law.

Paul therefore calleth them onely righteous, which are justified through the promise, or through faith in the promise without the law. Wherefore, they that are of the works of the law, and will seeme to do the law, do it not. For the Apostle generally concludeth, that all they which are of the works of the law, are under the curse: under the which they should not be, if they fulfilled the law. Indeed it is true, that a man doing the works of the law, shall live in them, that is, shall be blessed: but such a one cannot be found. Now seeing there is a double use of the law, the one politick, and the other spirituall, he that will understand this sentence civilly, may do it after this sort: *He that shall do those things shall live in them*: that is, if a man obey the magistrate outwardly and in the politick government, he shall avoide punishment and death: For then the civill magistrate hath no power over him. This is the politick use of the law, which serveth to bridle those that are rude and untractable. But *Paul* here speaketh not of this use, but entreateth of this place like a Divine: therefore there is a condition necessarily included. As if he said: If men could keep the law, they should be happy. But where are they? They are not therefore doers of the law, except they be justified before and without the law, through faith.

Wherefore, when *Paul* curseth and condemneth those which are of the works of the law, he speaketh not of such as are justified through faith, but of such as go about to be justified by workes, without faith in Christ: This I say, lest any man should follow the

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

his word as they should do: much more, is this true in a man which is not yet justified by faith, but is an enemy unto God, and with all his heart despiseth and hateth the word and worke of God. Ye see then that *Paul* speaketh here of such as will fulfill the law, and be justified thereby, although they have not yet received faith, and not of the Fathers and Saints (as *Jerome* imagineth) which are justified by faith already.

Deut. 21. 23. Verse 13. *Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, when he was made a curse for us. (For it is written: Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree.)*

This sentence which *Paul* reciteth out of *Deuter.* is miserably wrested and racked of the Papists.

Here againe *Jerome*, and the Popish Sophisters which follow him, are much troubled, and miserably racke this most comfortable place, seeking, as they would seeme; with a godly zeal to turn away this reproach from Christ, that he should be called a curse or execration. They shift off this sentence after this manner: that *Paul* spake not here in good earnest: and therefore they most wickedly affirm, that the Scripture in *Paul* agreeth not with it self. And this they proove after this manner: The sentence (say they) of *Moses*, which *Paul* here alledgeth, speaketh not of Christ. Moreover this generall clause [*Whosoever*] which *Paul* alledgeth, is not added in *Moses*. Again, *Paul* omitteth this word [*of God*] which is in *Moses*. To conclude, it is evident enough, that *Moses* speaketh of a theefe or a malefactor, which by his evill deeds had deserved the gallows, as the Scripture plainly witnesseth in the 21. Chap. of *Deut.* Therefore they aske this question, how this sentence may be applied to Christ, that he is accursed of God and hanged upon a tree, seeing that he is no malefactor or theef, but righteous and holy? This may peradventure move the simple and ignorant, thinking that the Sophisters doe speake it, not only vvitily, but also very godly, and thereby do defend the honour and glory of Christ, and give warning to all Christians to beware that they thinke not so wickedly of Christ, that he should be made a curse, &c. Let us see therefore what the meaning and purpose of *Paul* is.

This clause for us, is essentiall and full of power.

But here againe vve must make a distinction, as the words of *Paul* doe plainly shew. For he saith not, that Christ vvas made a curse for himselfe, but for us. Therefore all the vveight of the matter standeth in this word, *For us*. For Christ is innocent as concerning his owne person, and therefore he ought not to have beene hanged

hanged on a tree : but because, according to the law of *Moses*, every thief and malefactor ought to be hanged, therefore Christ also, according to the law ought to be hanged, for he sustained the person of a sinner and of a thief, not of one, but of all sinners and theeves. For we are sinners and theeves, and therefore guilty of death and everlasting damnation. But Christ took all our sins upon him, and for them died upon the crosse : therefore it behoved that he should become a transgressour, and (as *Esay* the Prophet saith, *Ch. 53.*) *to be reckoned and accounted among transgressours and trespassors.*

Christ tooke upon him the person of a transgressour, and therefore, must be hanged.

And this (no doubt) all the Prophets did fore-see in spirit, that Christ should become the greatest transgressour, murtherer, adulterer, theefe, rebell and blasphemmer, that ever was or could be in all the world. For he being made a sacrifice for the finnes of the whole world, is not now an innocent person and without sins, is not now the Sonne of God, borne of the Virgin *Marie* : but a sinner, which hath and carrieth the finne of *Paul*, who was a blasphemmer, an oppressour and a persecutor : of *Peter*, which denied Christ : of *David*, which was an adulterer, a murtherer, and caused the Gentiles to blaspheme the name of the Lord : and briefly, which hath and beareth all the finnes of all men in his bodie : not that he himselfe committed them, but for that he received them being committed or done of us, and laid them upon his owne body, that he might make satisfaction for them with his owne blood. Therefore this generall sentence of *Moses* comprehendeth him also (albeit in his owne person he was innocent) because it found him amongst sinners and transgressours : Like as the Magistrate taketh him for a thief, and punisheth him whom he findeth among other theeves and transgressours, though hee never committed any thing worthy of death. Now, Christ was not only found amongst sinners, but of his own accord and by the will of his Father he would also be a companion of sinners, taking upon him the flesh and blood of those which were sinners, theeves and plunged in all kinds of sin. When the law therefore found him among theeves it condemned and killed him as a theefe.

Christ the greatest sinner of all others, because he bare the finnes of the whole world

Esay. 53. 5.
Mat. 8. 17. 1

The Popish Sophisters doe spoile us of this knowledge of Christ and most heavenly comfort, (namely that Christ was made a curse, that he might deliver us from the curse of the law) when they separate him from finnes and sinners, and onely set him

What incor-modities follow the doctrine of the Schoolemen.

Christ must
be wrapped
as well in
sinnes, as
in our flesh
and blood.

him out unto us as an example to be followed. By this meanes they make Christ, not only unprofitable unto us, but also a Judge and a tyrant, which is angry with our sins, and condemneth sinners. But we must as well wrap Christ, and know him to be wrapped in our sins, in our malediction, in our death, and in all our evils, as he is wrapped in our flesh and in our blood.

Christ is
made a
curse and
become sin
for us.

But some man will say: It is very absurd and slanderous, to call the son of God a cursed sinner. I answer: if thou wilt deny him to be a sinner and to be accursed. deny also that he was crucified and died. For it is no lesse absurd to say, that the Sonne of God (as our faith confesseth and beleeveth) was crucified and suffered the paines of sinne and death, then to say, that he is a sinner and accursed. But if it be not absurd to confesse and beleeve, that Christ was crucified between two theeves, then is it not absurd to say also that he was accursed and of all sinners the greatest. These words of *Paul* are not spoken in vaine: *Christ was made a curse for us. God made Christ which knew no sinne to become sinne for us, that we in him might be made the righteousness of God,* 2 Cor. 5.

1ob. 1. 26.

After the same manner *John* the Baptist calleth him, *The Lambe of God which taketh away the sinnes of the world.* He verily is innocent, because he is the unspotted and undefiled lambe of God. But because he beareth the sins of the world, his innocency is burdened with the sins and guilt of the whole world. Whatsoever sins, I, thou, and we all have done or shall do hereafter, they are Christs own sinnes as verily as if he himself had done them. To be brief, our sins must needs become Christs own sins, or els we shall perish for ever. This true knowledg of Christ, which *Paul* and the Prophets have most plainly delivered unto us, the wicked Sophisters have darkned and defaced.

Our sinne
must be
Christs own
sin, or else
we shall pe-
rish for ever.

Christ not
onely bea-
reth sinne:
but the
Psalme wit-
nesseth that
he himselve
also hath sin
indeede.

Esay in the 53. Chapter speaketh thus of Christ: *God* (saith he) *laid the iniquity of us all upon him.* Wee must not make these words lesse then they are: but leave them in their owne proper signification. For *God* dallieth not in the words of the Prophet, but speaketh earnestly, and of great love: to wit, that Christ this Lambe of God should beare the sins of us all. But what is it to beare? The Sophisters answer, to be punished. Very well. But wherefore is Christ punished? It is not because he hath sinne and beareth sinne? Now that Christ hath sinne, the holy Ghost witnesseth in the 40. *Psalme*: *My sinnes have taken such hold on me, that*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

same in the articles of the Christian beleefe, when we say: I beleefe in Jesus Christ the Sonne of God, which suffered, was crucified and died for us.

Hereby it appeareth that the doctrine of the Gospell (which of all other is most sweet and full of singular consolation,) speaketh nothing of our works or of the works of the law, but of the inestimable mercy and love of God towards us, most wretched and miserable sinners: to wit, that our most mercifull Father seeing us to be oppressed and overwhelmed with the curse of the law, and so to be holden under the same, that we could never be delivered from it by our own power, sent his onely Sonne into the world, and laid upon him all the sins of all men, saying: Be thou *Peter* that denier: *Paul* that persecuter, blasphemer, and cruell oppressour: *David* that adulterer: that sinner which did eat the apple in Paradise: that thee which hanged upon the crosse: and briefly, be thou the person which hath committed the sins of all men: See therefore that thou pay and satisfie for them. Here now commeth the law and saith: I find him a sinner, and that such an one, as hath taken upon him the sins of all men, and I see no sins else but in him: therefore let him die upon the crosse: and so he setteth upon him, and killeth him. By this meanes the whole world is purged and cleansed from all sins, and so delivered from death and all evils. Now, sin being vanquished and death abolished by this one man, God would see nothing else in the whole world, if it did beleefe, but a meere cleansing and righteousness. And if any remnants of sin should remaine, yet for the great glory that is in Christ, God would wincke at them and would not see them.

Thus we must magnifie the article of Christian righteousness against the righteousness of the law and works: albeit no eloquence is able sufficiently to set forth the inestimable greatness thereof. Wherefore the argument that *Paul* handleth in this place, of all other is most mighty against all the righteousness of the law. For it containeth this invincible * opposition: that is, if the sinnes of the whole world be in that one man Jesus Christ, then are they not in the world: But if they be not in him, then are they yet in the world. Also, if Christ be made guilty of all the sinnes which we all have committed, then are we delivered from all sinnes, but not by our selves, nor by our own works or merits, but by him. But if he be innocent and beare not our sinnes, then doe we beare them.

Of what points the doctrine of the Gospell treateth.

The law accused and killed Christ.

The article of justification and Christian righteousness,

* This opposition is a comparing of two contraries, Christ and the world together.

them, and in them we shall die and be damned. But thanks be to God who hath given us victory by our Lord Jesus Christ. Amen.

But now let us see by what meanes these two things so contrary and so repugnant, may be reconciled in this one person Christ. Not only my finnes and thine, but also the finnes of the whole world, either past, present or to come, take hold upon him, go about to condemne him, and doe indeed condemne him. But because in the selfe same person, which is the highest, the greatest and the onely sinner, there is also an everlasting and invincible righteousness: therefore these two do encounter together, the highest, the greatest and the onely sinner, and the highest, the greatest and the onely righteousness. Here one of them must needs be overcome and give place to the other, seeing they fight together with so great force and power. The sinne therefore of the whole world cometh upon righteousness with all might and maine. In this combat what is done? Righteousnesse is everlasting, immortall and invincible. Sinne also is a most mighty and cruell tyrant, ruling and reigning over the whole world, subduing and bringing all men into bondage. To conclude, sinne is a strong and a mighty god, which devoureth all mankinde, learned, unlearned, holy, mighty and wise men. This tyrant (I say) flieth upon Christ, and will needs swallow him up, as he doth all other. But he seeth not that he is a person of invincible and everlasting righteousness. Therefore in this combat sinne must needs be vanquished and killed, and righteousness must overcome, live and reigne. So in Christ all sin is vanquished, killed and buried, and righteousness remaineth a conquerour and reigneth for ever.

Car. 15. 57.
A marvelous combat between sin and righteousness in Christ.

Righteousnesse

sinne.

Righteousnes the conquerour of sinne.

The combat betweene life and death.

Life conquered, is the conquerour of death.

In like manner, death, which is an omnipotent Queene and Emperesse of the whole world, killing Kings, Princes, and generally all men, doth mightily encounter with life, thinking utterly to overcome it and to swallow it up: and that which it goeth about, it bringeth to passe indeed. But because life was immortall, therefore when it was overcome, yet did it overcome and get the victory, vanquishing and killing death. Death therefore through Christ is vanquished and abolished throughout the whole world, so that now it is but a painted death, which losing his sting, can no more hurt those that beleve in Christ, who is become the death of death, as Hosea the Prophet saith: O death I will be thy death.

Hos. 3. 14.

The conflict
of the curse,
with the ble-
ssing.

Christ is the
vanquisher
of the curse
and male-
diction.

Col. 1. 15.

In himselfe.

Sinne and
death aboli-
shed to all
beleevers.

1 Ioh. 5. 4.

They that
deny the ar-
ticle of the
Divinity of
Christ, deny
also the ar-
ticle of re-
demption.

So the curse, which is the wrath of God upon the whole world, hath the like conflict with the blessing: that is to say, with grace and the eternall mercy of God in Christ. The curse therefore fighteth against the blessing, and would condemn it and bring it to nought: but it cannot so do. For the blessing is divine and everlasting, and therefore the curse must needs give place. For if the blessing in Christ could be overcome, then should God himselfe also be overcome. But this is impossible: therefore Christ the power of God, righteousness, blessing, grace and life, overcommeth and destroyeth these monsters, sin, death and the curse, without waire or weapons in his own body, and in himselfe, as *Paul* delighteth to speake: *Spoiling* (saith he) *all principalities and powers, and triumphing over them in himselfe, so that they cannot any more hurt those that do beleeve.*

And this circumstance, *In himselfe*, maketh that combat much more wonderfull and glorious. For it sheweth that it was necessary, that these inestimable things should be accomplished in that one onely person Christ, (to wit, that the curse, sinne and death should be destroyed, and the blessing, righteousness and life should succeed in their place) and that so the whole creature through this one person should be renewed. Therefore if thou looke upon this person Christ, thou shalt see sin, death, the wrath of God, hell, the divell, and all evils vanquished and mortified in him. For as much then as Christ reigneth by his grace in the hearts of the faithfull, there is no sin, no death, no curse: but where Christ is not knowne, there all these things do still remaine. Therefore all they which beleeve not, do lacke this inestimable benefit and glorious victory. For this (as *S. Iohn* saith) *is our victory, that overcometh the world, even our faith.*

This is the principle article of all Christian doctrine, which the Popish Schoolemen have altogether darkened. And here ye see how necessary a thing it is to beleeve and to confesse the article of the Divinity of Christ: which when *Arius* denied, he must needs also deny the article of our redemption. For to overcome the sinne of the world, death, the curse and the wrath of God in himselfe, is not the worke of any creature, but of the divine power. Therefore he which *in himselfe* should overcome these, must needs be truly and naturally God. For against this mighty power of sinne, death and the curse (which of it selfe reigneth throughout the world and

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Chap. III. Upon the EPISTLE

2 Pet. 2. 22.

Luke. 11. 26.

Papists under the name of Christ, have shewed themselves to be sever- fold more wicked Idolaters, then ever were the Gentiles. For it hap- neth to them, as it doth to the sow, which after she is washed, wal- loweth her self again in the mire. And as Christ saith : After they are fallen away from faith, an evill spirit entreth again into the house, out of the which he was driven, and taketh unto him seven worse spirits then himself, and there dwelleth : and then the latter end of that man is worse then the beginning.

What do- Brine the Gospell set- teth forth,

Let us therefore receive this most sweet doctrine and full of com- fort, with thanksgiving, and with an assured faith, which teach- eth that Christ being made a curse for us (that is, a sinner subject to the wrath of God) did put upon him our person , and laid our finnes upon his owne shoulders, saying : I have committed the sins which all men have committed. Therefore he was made a curse in- deed according to the law , not for himselfe, but (as Paul saith) for us. For unlesse he had taken upon himselfe my finnes and thine, and the finnes of the whole world, the law had had no right over him, which condemneth none but sinners only, and holdeth them under the curse. Wherefore he could neither have been made a curse nor die, sith the onely cause of the curse and of death is sin, from the which he was free. But because he had taken upon him our sins, not by constraint, but of his own good will: it behoved him to beare the punishment and wrath of God: not for his own person (which was just and invincible, and therefore could be found in no wise guilty) but for our person.

Christ tooke our finnes upon him of his owne ac- cord, and therefore it behoved him to be made a curse for them.

So making a happy change with us, he tooke upon him our sin- full person, and gave unto us his innocent and victorious person : wherewith we being now cloathed, are freed from the curse of the law. For Christ was willingly made a curse for us , saying : As touching mine owne person, I am blessed, and need nothing. But I will abase my selfe, and will put upon me your person, that is to say, your humane nature , and will walke in the same among you, and will suffer death, to deliver you from death. Now, he thus bearing the sinne of the whole world in our person, was taken, suf- fered, was crucified and put to death , and became a curse for us. But because he was a person divine and everlasting , it was impos- sible that death should hold him. Wherefore he rose up againe the third day from death, and now liveth for ever e. and there is neither

Phil 2. 7.

Christ is our righteous- nes, and our sanc is his.

sinne

sin nor death found in him any more, but meeer righteousness, life and everlasting blessednes.

This image and this mirrour wee must have continually before us, and behold the same with a stedfast eye of faith. He that doth so, hath this innocencie and victorie of Christ, although he be never so great a sinner. By faith only therefore wee are made righteous, for faith layeth hold upon this innocencie and this victory of Christ. Looke then how much thou believest this, so much thou dost enjoy it. If thou beleeve sinne, death, and the curse to be abolished, they are abolished. For Christ hath overcome and taken away these in himselfe, and will have us to beleeve, that like as in his owne person, there is now no sinne nor death, even so there is none in ours, seeing hee hath performed and accomplished all things for us.

An ineffable comfort for all poore consciences beaten downe with sin

Wherefore, if sinne vex thee and death terrifie thee, thinke that it is (as it is indeed) but an imagination and a false illusion of the Devill. For in very deed there is now no sin, no curse, no death, no Devill to hurt us any more, for Christ hath vanquished and abolished all these things. Therefore the victorie of Christ is most certaine, and there is no defect in the thing it selfe, (since it is most true) but in our incredulitie: for to reason it is a hard matter to beleeve these inestimable good things and unspeakable riches. Moreover, Sathan with his fierie darts, and his Ministers with their wicked and false doctrine goe about to wrest from us and utterly to deface this doctrine. And specially for this Article, which wee so diligently teach, we sustaine the hatred and cruell persecution of Satan and of the world. For Satan feeleth the power and fruit of this Article.

A remedy & a comfort against the terrors of sinne, &c.

The divell and here-ticks lie in waite to deceive the godly.

The power of this article of Christian righteousness destroyeth Satans kingdom.

And that there is no more sinne, death, or malediction, since Christ now reigneth, we daily confesse also in the Creede of the Apostles, when we say: *I beleeve that there is an holy Church.* Which is indeed nothing else, but as if we should say: I beleeve that there is no sinne, no malediction, no death in the Church of God. For they which doe beleeve in Christ are no sinners, are not guilty of death, but are holy and righteous, Lords over sinne and death, and living for ever. But faith only seeth this: for we say, *I beleeve that there is an holy Church.* But if thou beleeve reason and thine owne eyes, thou wilt judge cleane contrary. For thou seest many things in the

The weak-
nesse of the
godly.

godly which offend thee. Thou seest them sometime to fall into sin, and to be weak in faith, to be subject unto wrath, envy and such other evil affections: therefore the Church is not holy. I deny the consequence. If I look upon mine own person, or the person of my brother, it shall never be holy. But if I behold Christ, who hath sanctified and cleansed his Church, then is it altogether holy: for he hath taken away the sin of the whole world.

A feeling
sinner bru-
sed and bro-
ken hearted
for his finnes
is counted
no sinner.

Therefore where sins are seen and felt, there are they indeed no sins. For according to *Pauls* divinity, there is no sin, no death, no malediction any more in the world but in Christ, who is the Lambe of God that hath taken away the sins of the world: who is made a curse that he might deliver us from the curse. Contrariwise, according to Philosophy and reason, sin, death and the curse are no where else but in the world, in the flesh, or in sinners. For a sophistical Divine can speak no otherwise of sinne, then doth the Heathen Philosopher. Like as the colour (saith he) cleaveth in the wall, even so doth sinne in the world, in the flesh, or in the conscience: therefore it is to be purged by contrary operations, to wit, by charity. But the true divinity teacheth that there is no sin in the world any more: for Christ, upon whom the Father hath cast the finnes of the whole world, hath vanquished and killed the same in his own body. He once dying for sinne and raised up again, dieth now no more. Therefore whosoever is a true faith in Christ, there sin is abolished, dead and buried. But where no faith in Christ is, there sin doth still remain. And albeit the remnants of sin be as yet in the Saints, because they beleeve not perfectly, yet are they dead in that they are not imputed unto them, because of their faith in Christ.

Esa. 53. 6.
To the be-
leevers sin
and death
are abo-
lished.

Christ hath
redeemed
us from the
curse: there-
fore the law
hath not
done it.

This is therefore a strong and a mighty argument, which *Paul* here prosecuteth against the righteousness of works. It is not the law nor works that doe deliver us from the everlasting curse, but Christ alone. See therefore good Christian Reader, I beseech thee, that thou distinguish Christ from the law, and diligently marke how *Paul* speaketh, and what he saith. All saith he which do not fulfill the law, are necessarily under the curse. But no man fulfilleth the law, therefore all men are under the curse. He addeth moreover another proposition: Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: therefore it followeth, that the law and workes doe not redeme us from the curse, but bring us rather

Two propo-
sitions of
Paul.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

rible thing to bear sin, the wrath of God, malediction and death: wherefore that man which hath a true feeling of these things (as Christ did truly and effectually feel them for all mankind) is made even sin, death, malediction, &c.

The true meaning of these words of Paul, Christ was made sin, a curse, &c.

All the curses of the law must be applied to Christ.

Paul therefore handleth this place with a true Apostolicall spirit. There is neither Sophister, nor lawyer, nor Jew, nor Anabaptist, nor any other that speaketh as he doth. For who durst alledge this place out of *Moses*: *Accursed is every one that hangeth on a tree*; and apply it unto Christ? Like as *Paul* then applied this sentence to Christ, even so may we apply unto Christ, not only that whole 27. Chap. of *Deuteronomy*, but also may gather all the curses of *Moses* law together, and expound the same of Christ. For as Christ is innocent in this generall law, touching his own person: so is he also in all the rest. And as he is guilty in this generall law, in that he is made a curse for us, and is hanged upon the crosse as a wicked man, a blasphemmer, a murtherer and a traitour: even so is he also guilty in all others. For all the curses of the law are heaped together and laid upon him, and therefore he did beare and suffer them in his own body for us. He was therefore not only accursed, but also was made a curse for us.

This is to interpret the Scriptures truly and like an Apostle. For a man is not able to speak after this manner without the holy Ghost: that is to say, to comprehend the whole law in this one saying, *Christ is made a curse for us*; and lay the same altogether upon Christ: and contrariwise to comprehend all the promises of the Scripture, and say that they are all at once fulfilled in Christ. Wherefore this is indeed an Apostolicke and invincible argument, not taken out of one place of the law, but out of the whole law: which *Paul* also useth as a sure ground.

This is a most sure argument, taken out of the whole law.

Paul diligently weigheth this sentence of *Genesis*: *In thy seed*, &c.

Here we may see with what diligence *Paul* read the holy Scriptures, and how exactly he weighed every word of this place: *In thy seed shall all the Nations of the earth be blessed*. First, out of this word blessing he gathereth this argument: if blessing shall be given unto all nations, then are all nations under the curse, yea the Jews also who have the law. And he alledgeth a testimony of the Scripture, whereby he proveth that all the Jews which are under the law, are under the curse: *Cursed is every one which abideth not in all the things that are written in this booke*.

Moreover, he diligently weigheth this clause: *All nations*. Out of the

the which he gathereth thus: that the blessing belongeth not only to the Jews, but also to all the nations of the whole world. Seeing then it belongeth to all nations, it is impossible that it should be obtained through the law of *Moses*, for as much as there was no nation that had the law, but only the Jews. And although they had the law, yet were they so farre off from obtaining the blessing through it, that the more they endeavoured to accomplish it, the more they were subject to the curse of the law. Wherefore there must needs be another righteousnesse, which must be farre more excellent then the righteousnesse of the law, through the which, not onely the Jewes, but also all nations throughout the whole world, must obtaine the blessing.

All nations

The Jewes obtained not righteousnes through the law.

Finally, these words: *In thy seed*, he expoundeth after this manner: that a certaine man should issue out of the seed of *Abraham*, that is to say, Christ, through whom the blessing should come afterwards upon all nations. Seeing therefore it was Christ that should blesse all nations, it was he also that should take away the curse from them. But he could not take it away by the law, for by the law it is more and more increased. What did he then? he joyned himself to the company of the accursed, taking unto him their flesh and their bloud, and so set himself for a Mediatour between God and men, saying: Although I be flesh and bloud, and now dwell among the accursed, yet notwithstanding I am that blessed one, through whom all men must be blessed. So in one person he joyneth God and man together, and being united unto us which were accursed, he was made a curse for us; and hid his blessing in our sin, in our death, and in our curse, which condemned him and put him to death. But because he was the Son of God, he could not be holden of them, but overcame them, led them captive and triumphed over them: and whatsoever did hang upon flesh, which for our sake he took upon him, he carried it with him. Wherefore all they that cleave unto this flesh, are blessed and delivered from the curse, that is, from sin, and everlasting death.

In thy seed

How the nations were delivered from the curse.

They that understand not this benefit of Christ (whereof the Gospell especially intreateth) and know not another righteousnes besides the righteousnesse of the law, when they heare that the workes of the law are not necessary to salvation, but that men doe obtaine the same by onely hearing and beleeving that Christ the Sonne of God hath taken upon him our flesh, and joyned himselfe to the accursed

John 11 A

accused, to the end that all nations might be blessed, they (I say) are offended: for all this they understand nothing, or else they understand it carnally. For their hearts are occupied with other cogitations and fantastical imaginations: therefore these things seeme unto them strange matters: Yea even unto us which have received the first fruits of the Spirit, it is impossible to understand these things perfectly: for they mightily fight against reason.

Christ took upo him the malediction and damnation which we should have suffered for ever.

To conclude, all evils should have overwhelmed us, as they shall overcome the wicked for ever. But Christ being made for us a transgressor of all laws, guilty of all our malediction, our sins, and all our evils, cometh between as a Mediatour, embracing us wicked and damnable sinners. He took upon him and bare all our evils, which should have oppressed and tormented us for ever, and these cast him downe for a little while, and ran over his head like water, as the Prophet in the person of Christ complaineth when he saith: *Thy indignation sore presseth me, and thou hast vexed me with all thy stormes.* Again, *Thine indignations have gone over me, and thy terrors have troubled me.* By this means we being delivered from these everlasting terrors and anguish through Christ, shall enjoy an everlasting and inestimable peace and felicity, so that we believe this.

The Fathers of the old Testament rejoiced more for the benefit of Christ, then we do.

These are the reverend mysteries of the Scripture, which Moses also somewhat darkly in some places did fore-shew: which also the Prophets and Apostles did know, and did deliver to their posteritie. For this knowledg and benefit of Christ to come, the Saints of the old Testament rejoiced more, then we now doo when he is so comfortably revealed and exhibited unto us. Indeed we do acknowledge that this knowledge of Christ and of the righteousness of faith, is an inestimable treasure: but we conceive not thereby such a full joy of spirit, as the Prophets and Apostles did. Hereof it cometh, that they (and especially Paul) so plentifully set forth and so diligently taught the article of justification. For this is the proper office of an Apostle, to set forth the glory and benefit of Christ, and thereby to raise up and comfort troubled and afflicted consciences.

The proper office of Apostles.

Verse 14. *That the blessing of Abraham might come upon the Gentiles through Christ Jesus.*

The blessing given.

Paul hath alwaies this place before his eyes: *In thy seed, &c.* For the blessing promised unto Abraham, could not come upon the

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

in us, sinne terrifieth, death killeth, and the curse condemneth us. But when these are translated and laid upon Christs backe, then are all these evils made his own, and his benefits are made ours. Let us therefore learne in all tentations to translate sinne, death, the curse and all evils which oppresse us, from our selves unto Christ: and againe, from him unto our selves, righteousness, mercy, life and blessing. For he beareth all our evils and our miseries. God the Father cast the iniquities of us all, as *Esaie* the Prophet saith, upon him: And he hath taken them upon him willingly, which was not guilty. But this he did, that he might fulfill the will of his Father, by the which we are sanctified for ever.

Our sins are cast upon Christ and his righteousness is given unto us.

The mercy of God towards us sinners, unspeakable.

This is that infinite and unmeasurable mercy of God, which *Paul* would gladly amplify with all eloquence and plenty of words, but the slender capacity of mans heart cannot comprehend, and much less utter that unsearchable depth and burning zeale of Gods love towards us. And verily the inestimable greatness of Gods mercy, not only ingendreth in us an hardnesse to beleeve, but also incredulity it selfe. For I do not only heare that this Almighty God the Creator and maker of all things is good and mercifull, but also that the same high soveraigne Majesty was so carefull for me a damnable sinner, a child of wrath and of everlasting death, that he spared not his own deare Son, but delivered him to a most shamefull death, that he hanging between two theeves, might be made a curse and sin for me a cursed sinner, that I might be made blessed, that is to say, the child and heire of God. Who can sufficiently praise and magnifie this exceeding great goodnes of God? Not all the Angels in heaven. Therefore the doctrine of the Gospell speaketh of farre other matters then any book of policy or philosophy, yea or the book of *Moses* himselfe: to wit, of the unspeakable and most divine gifts of God, which farre passe the capacity and understanding both of Men and Angels.

Of what things the Gospell increaseth.

Verse 14. That wee might receive the promise of the Spirit through Faith.

The promise of the spirit.

This is a phrase of the Hebrew: *The promise of the Spirit*: that is to say, the Spirit promised. Now, the Spirit is freedome from the law, sinne, death, the curse, hell, and from the wrath and judgement of God. Here is no merit or worthinesse of ours, but a free promise and a gift, given through the seede of *Abraham*, that

we may be free from all evils, and obtaine all good things. And this liberty and gift of the Spirit, we receive not by any other merits then by faith alone. For that only taketh hold of the promise of God, as Paul plainly saith in this place: *that we might receive the promise of the Spirit, not by works, but by Faith.*

The nature of faith.

This is indeed a sweet and a true Apostolick doctrine, which sheweth that those things are fulfilled for us, and now given to us, which many Prophets and Kings desired to see and heare. And such like places as this one is, were gathered together out of divers sayings of the Prophets which fore-saw long before in spirit, that all things should be changed, repaired, and governed by this man Christ. The Jews therefore although they had the law of God, notwithstanding besides that law, looked for Christ. None of the Prophets or governours of the people of God, did make any new law, but Elias, Samuel, David, and all the other Prophets did abide under the law of Moses: they did not appoint any new tables, or a new kingdom and priesthood: for that new change of the kingly priesthood of the law and the worship, was referred and kept to him only, of whom Moses had prophesied long before: *The Lord thy God shall raise up a Prophet unto thee, of thine own nation, and from among thy bretheren: Him shalt thou heare.* As if he should say: Thou shalt heare him only, and none besides him.

What manner of doctrine the Apostolick doctrine is.

The change of all things referred to Christ alone.

This the Father well understood, for none could teach greater and higher points then Moses himselfe, who made excellent laws of high and great matters, as are the ten commandements, especially the first commandement: *I am the Lord thy God: Thou shalt have no other gods but me: Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, &c.* This law concerning the love of God, comprehendeth the very Angels also. Therefore it is the head-spring of all divine wisdom. And yet was it necessary notwithstanding, that another teacher should come, that is to say, Christ which should bring and teach another thing farre passing these excellent lawes: to wit, grace and remission of finnes. This text therefore is full of power. For in this short sentence: *that we might receive the promise of the Spirit by Faith*: Paul poureth out at once whatsoever he was able to say. Therefore when he can go no further (for he could not utter any greater or more excellent thing,) he breaketh off, and here he stayeth.

Exod. 20.2.

The first commandement is the spring of all the wisdom of God.

Verse 15. Bretheren, I speake according to man: Though it be but a mans covenant, when it is confirmed, yet no man doth abrogate it, or addeth any thing thereto.

Humane things must be confirmed by divine things, & not divine things by humane things.

After this principle and invincible argument, *Paul* addeth an other, grounded upon the similitude of a mans Testament: which seemeth to be very weake, and such as the Apostle ought not to use for the confirmation of a matter of so great importance. For in high and weighty matters, we ought to confirme earthly things by divine things, and not divine and heavenly things by earthly and worldly things. And indeed it is true, that these arguments of all other are most weake, but when we go about to prove and confirme heavenly matters with earthly and corruptible things, as *Scotus* is wont to do. A man (saith he) is able to love God above all things, for he loveth himself above all things: therefore much more is he able to love God above all things. For a good thing, the greater it is, the more it is to be loved, and hereof he inferreth, that a man is able, *ex puris naturalibus*, that is to say, even of his own pure naturall strength, easily to fulfill that high commandement: *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, &c.* For (saith he) a man is able to love the least good thing above all things: yea he setteth at naught his life (of all other things most deare unto him) for a little vile money: therefore he can much more do it for Gods cause.

An argument taken from Gods creatures boldeth. The often use of similitudes in the holy Scriptures.

Ye have oftentimes heard of me, that civill ordinances are of God: for God hath ordained them & alloweth them, as he doth the Sunne, the Moone, and other creatures. Therefore an argument taken of the ordinance or of the creatures of God, is good, so that we use the same rightly. So the Prophets have very often used similitudes and comparisons taken of creatures, calling Christ the Sunne; the Church the Moone: the preachers and teachers of the word, the Starres. Also there are many similitudes in the Prophets, of trees, thornes, flowers, and fruites of the earth. The new Testament likewise is full of such similitudes. Therefore where Gods ordinance is in the creature, there may an argument be well borrowed and applied to divine and heavenly things.

So our Saviour Christ in *Math. 7.* argueth from earthly things to heavenly things, when he saith: *If ye then which are evill can give to your children good gifes, how much more shall your Father*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

A testament
or last Will
is confirmed
by the death
of him that
maketh it.

The Testa-
ment of God
ought to be
kept more
faithfully
then mans
Testament.

The Testa-
ment or last
Will of God.

Who are
the destroy-
ers of Gods
Testament.

The nature
of Hypocrites

his lands and goods to his heires, and thereupon dieth, this last will is confirmed and ratified by the death of the Testator, so that nothing now may be either added to it, or taken from it, according to all law and equity. Now, if a mans will be kept with so great fidelity, that nothing is added to it or taken from it after his death: how much more ought the last will of God to be faithfully kept, which he promised and gave unto *Abraham* and his seed after him. For when Christ died, then was it confirmed in him, and after his death the writing of his last Testament was opened: that is to say, the promised blessing of *Abraham* was preached among all nations dispersed throughout the whole world. This was the last will and Testament of God the great Testator, confirmed by the death of Christ, therefore no man ought to change it or to adde any thing to it, as they that teach the law and mans traditions do. For they say, unless thou be circumcised, keepe the law, do many workes, and suffer many things, thou canst not be saved. This is not the last Will and Testament of God, For he said not unto *Abraham*: if thou do this or that, thou shalt obtaine the blessing: or they that be circumcised and keep the law shall obtaine the same: but he saith, *In thy seed shall all the nations of the earth, be blessed.* As if he would say, I of meere mercy do promise unto thee, that Christ shall come of thy seed, who shall bring the blessing upon all nations oppressed with sin and death: that is to say, which shall deliver the nations from the everlasting curle: to wit, from sinne and death, receiving this promise by faith: *In thy seede, &c.* Wherefore, even as the false Apostles were in time past, so are all the Papists and Iusticiaries at this day, perverters and destroyers, not of mans Testament (because they are forbidden by the law:) but of Gods Testament, whom they feare nothing at all, although he be a consuming fire. For such is the nature of all hypocrites, that they will observe mans law exactly. But the laws of God they do despise, and most wickedly transgresse. But the time shall come when they shall beare an horrible judgement, and shall feele what it is to contemne and pervert the Testament of God. This argument then, grounded upon the ordinance of God, is strong enough.

Verse 16. *Now to Abraham and his seede were the promises made. He saith not: And to the seedes, as speaking of many: but, And to thy seede, as of one, which is Christ.*

Here.

Here by a new name he calleth the promises of God made unto *Abraham*, concerning Christ that should bring the blessing unto all nations, a Testament. And indeed the promise is nothing else but a Testament, not yet revealed but sealed up. Now, a testament is not a law, but a donation or free gift. For heires looke not for laws, exactions, or any burdens to be laid upon them by the Testament, but they looke for the inheritance confirmed thereby.

Paul calleth the promise a Testament.

First of all therefore he expoundeth the words. Afterwards he applieth the similitude, and standeth upon this word *Seed*. There were no laws given unto *Abraham* (saith he) but a Testament was made and delivered unto him: that is to say, the promises were pronounced unto him as touching the spirituall blessing: therefore somewhat was promised and given unto him. If then the Testament of a man be kept? why should not rather the Testament of God be kept? whereof the Testament of man is but a signe. Againe, if we will keep the signes, why do we not rather keep the things which they signifie?

The Testament of man is a signe of Gods Testament.

Now, the promises are made unto him, not in all the Jews or in many seeds, but in one *Seed*, which is Christ. The Jews will not receive this interpretation of *Paul*: For they say, that the singular number is here put for the plurall, one for many. But we gladly receive the meaning and interpretation of *Paul*, who oftentimes repeateth this word *Seed*, and expoundeth this *Seed* to be Christ: and this he doth with an Apostolike spirit. Let the Jewes deny it as much as they will: we notwithstanding have arguments strong enough, which *Paul* hath before rehearsed; which also confirme this thing, and they cannot deny them. Hitherto, as touching the similitude of Gods ordinance, that is to say of mans Testament. Now he expoundeth and applieth the same.

Christ is the Seed promised to Abraham.

Verse 17. And this I say, that the law which was 430 yeares after, cannot disannull the covenant that was confirmed before of God in respect of Christ, that it should make the promise of none effect.

Here the Jews might object, that God was not onely content to give promises to *Abraham*, but also after 430 yeares he made the law. God therefore mistrusting his own promises, as insufficient to justify, added thereto a better thing: that is to say, the law,

An objection of the Jewes.

law, to the end that when the same, as a better successor, was come, not the idle, but the doors of the law might be made righteous thereby. The law therefore which followed the promise, did abrogate the promise. Such evasions and starting holes the Jews seek out.

Paul confuteth the objection of the Jewes.

To this cavillation Paul answereth very well and to the purpose, and strongly confuteth the same. The law (saith he) was given 430 yeares after this promise was made: *In thy seed, &c.* and it could not make the promise void and unprofitable. For the promise is the testament of God, confirmed by God himselfe in Christ so many yeares before the law. Now, that which God once hath promised and confirmed, he calleth not back againe, but it remaineth ratified and sure for ever.

Why the law is added to the promise.

Why then was the law added? Indeed it was delivered so many ages after, to the posterity of *Abraham*, not to the end he might through it obtaine the blessing (for it is the office of the law to bring men under the curse, and not to blesse:) but that there might be in the world a certaine people which might have the word and testimony of Christ, out of the which, Christ also according to the flesh, might be borne: and that men being kept and shut up under the law, might sigh and grone for their deliverance through the seed of *Abraham*, which is Christ: which only should and could blesse, that is to say, deliver all nations from sin and everlasting death. Moreover the ceremonies commanded in the law, did foreshadow Christ. Wherefore the promise was not abolished either by the law, or by the ceremonies of the law: but rather by the same, as by certaine scales, it was for a time confirmed, untill the letters themselves or the writing of the Testament (to wit, the promise) might be opened, and by the preaching of the Gospell might be spread abroad among all nations.

The promise is confirmed, and therefore not abolished by the law.

But let us suffer the law and the promise to encounter together, and then shall we see which of them is the stronger: that is to say, whether the promise be able to abolish the law, or the law the promise. If the law abolish the promise, then it followeth, that we by our works make God a liar, and his promise of none effect. For if the law do justifie us and deliver us from sinne and death, and consequently our works and our own strength accomplishing the law, then the promise made unto *Abraham* is utterly void and unprofitable, and so consequently God is a liar and a dissembler. For when he which promiseth, will not performe his promise, but maketh it

What inconvenience should follow, if the law should abolish the promise.

of

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

commandeth ceremonies; requireth workes; and promiseth life to those that observe them, saying: *The man that shall do these things, shall live in them.* And although it promise such things, yet it followeth not therefore that we obtaine these promises: For it saith plainly: *The man that shall do these things, &c.* Now, it is certaine that no man can do them. Moreover, *Paul* saith that the law cannot abolish the promise: therefore that promise made unto *Abraham* 430 yeares before the law, remaineth firme and constant. And that the matter may be better understood; I will declare the same by a similitude. If a rich man, not constrained, but of his owne good will, should adopt one to be his son, whom he knoweth not, and to vvhom he oweth nothing, and should appoint him to be the heire of all his lands and goods, and certain yeares after that he hath bestowed this benefit upon him, he should lay upon him a law to do this or that: he cannot now say that he hath deserved this benefit by his own workes, seeing that many yeares before, he asking nothing, had received the same freely and of meeer favour: So God could not respect our vvorkes and deserts going before righteousness: for the promise and the gift of the holy Ghost vvvas 430 yeares before the law.

Hereby it appeareth that *Abraham* obtained not righteousness before God through the law. For there vvvas yet no law. If there vvvere yet no law, then vvvas there neither vvvorke nor merit. What then? Nothing else but the meeer promise. This promise *Abraham* beleeveth; and it was counted to him for righteousness. By the selfe same meanes then that the father obtained this promise, the children do also obtain it and retain it. So say vve also at this day: Our sins vvvere purged by the death of Christ above a thousand five hundred yeares agoe, vvhen there vvvere yet no religious orders, no canon or rule of penance, no merits of congruence and vvworthinesse. We cannot now therefore begin to abolish the same by our own workes and merits.

A similitude

what shall
the law
doe so
the law
shall not
be able
to do
that
the law
doeth
not

Abraham
was not
made right-
eous by the
law, for whe
he lived
there was
no law.

What man-
ner of argu-
ments *Paul*
useth.

Thus *Paul* gathereth arguments of similitudes, of a certaine time, and of persons, so sure and strong on every side, that no man can deny them. Let us therefore arme and fortifie our consciences vvith such like arguments: For it helpeth us exceedingly to have them alwaies ready in tentations. For they leade us from the law and vvworkes; to the promise and to faith: from vvvrath to grace: from sin to righteousness, and from death to life. Therefore these two things

things (as I do often repeate :) to vvit, the law and the promise, must be diligently distinguished. For in time; in place and in person, and generally in all other circumstances they are separate as farre a sunder as heaven and earth, the beginning of the world and the latter end. Indeed they are neare neighbours, for they are joyned together in one man or in one soule: but in the outward affection and as touching their office, they ought to be separate farre a sunder: so that the law may have dominion over the flesh and the promise may sweetly and comfortably reigne in the conscience. When thou hast thus appointed unto them both their owne proper place, then thou walkest safely betweene them both in the Heaven of the promise, and in the earth of the law. In spirit thou walkest in the Paradise of grace and peace: In the flesh thou walkest in the earth of workes and of the crosse. And now the troubles which the flesh is compelled to beare, shall not be hard unto thee, because of the sweetness of the promise, which comforteth and rejoyceth the heart exceedingly. But now, if thou confound and mingle these two together, and place the law in the conscience, and the promise of libertie in the flesh, then thou makest a confusion (such as was in Popery;) so that thou shalt not know what the law, what the promise, what sin, or what righteousnesse is.

Wherefore if thou wilt rightly divide the word of truth, thou must put a great difference betweene the promise and the law, as touching the inward affections and whole practise of life. It is not for naught that *Paul* prosecuteth this argument so diligently. For he foresaw in spirit that this mischief should creepe into the Church, that the word of God should be confounded: that is to say, that the promise should be mingled with the law, and so the promise should be utterly lost. For when the promise is mingled with the law, it is now made nothing else but the very law. Therefore accustome thy selfe to separate the promise and the law asunder, even in respect of time, that when the law commeth and accuseth thy conscience, thou mayest say: Lady law, thou comest not in season, for thou comest to soone: Tarry yet untill 430 yeares be expired, and when they are past, then come and spare not. But if thou come then, yet shalt thou come too late. For then hath the promise prevented the 430. yeares: to the which I assent, and sweetly repose my selfe in the same. Therefore I have nothing to do

The law and the promise must be distinguished.

Wee must give to the law and the promise their owne proper places.

What incommodities follow of the mingling of the law and the promise together.

The promise must not be confounded with the law

with thee? I heare thee not. For now I live with the believing *Abraham*, or rather since *Christ* is now revealed and given unto me, I live in him: who is my righteousness, who also hath abolished thee ô law. And thus let *Christ* be alwaies before thine eyes, as a certain summary of all arguments for the defence of faith, against the righteousness of the flesh, against the law and against all works and merits whatsoever.

Hitherto I have rehearsed almost all, but specially the principall arguments which the Apostle *Paul* handleth in this Epistle, for the confirmation of this doctrine of Justification. Among which, the argument as touching the promise made unto *Abraham* and to the other Fathers, is the weightiest and of greatest efficacy: which *Paul* doth chiefly prosecute both here and in the Epistle to the *Romanes*, the words whereof he diligently weigheth and moreover intreateth both of the times and persons. Also he standeth upon this word *Seede*, applying the same unto *Christ*. Finally, he declareth by the contrary, what the law vvorketh: namely, that it holdeth men under the curse. And thus he fortifieth the Article of Christian righteousness with strong and mighty arguments. On the other side, he overthroweth the arguments of the false Apostles, vvhich they used in defence of the righteousness of the law, and turneth them upon their own heads: that is to say, vvhereas they contended that righteousness and life is obtained by the law. *Paul* sheweth that it vvorketh nothing but malediction and death in us. Ye contend (saith he) that the law is necessary to salvation. Have ye not read that it saith: *He that shall do these things shall live in them?* Now, vvhich is he that performeth and accomplisheth them? No man living. Therefore, *as many as are of the workes of the law, are under the curse.* And again, in another place: *The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law.* Now followeth the conclusion of all these arguments.

Verse 18. *For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more by the promise, &c.*

So he saith in the 4. to the *Romanes*: *For if they which be of the law be heires, then is faith but vaine, and the promise of none effect.* And it cannot otherwise be: for this distinction is plaine, that the law is a thing farre differing from the promise. Yea naturall reason, although it be never so blind, is compelled to confesse, that

First
The argu-
ment tou-
ching the
promise.

The office
of the law

Levit. 17. 5.

Gal. 3. 10.

1 Cor. 15. 56

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

910 : Verse 19. Wherefore then serveth the law? *Mat 22. 3.*

Mat 22. 3.
The murmuring of the
Iewes against the
doctrine of Paul, for the
abolishing of the law.

When we teach that a man is justified without the law and works, then doth this question necessarily follow: If the law do not justify, why then was it given? Also why doth God charge us and burden us with the law, if it do not justify? what is the cause that we are so hardly exercised and vexed with it, if they which worke but one houre, are made equall with us which have borne the heat and burthen of the day? when as that grace is once published unto us which the Gospell letteth out, by and by ariseth this great murmuring: without the which the Gospell cannot be preached. The *Jews* had this opinion, that if they kept the law, they should be justified thereby. Therefore when they heard that the Gospell was preached concerning Christ, who came into the world to save, not the righteous, but sinners; and that they should go before them into the kingdome of God, they were wonderfully offended, complaining that they had borne the heavic yoake of the law so many years with great labour and toyle, and that they were miserably vexed and oppressed with the tyranny of the law, without any profit, yea rather to their great hurt. Again, that the *Gentiles* who were Idolaters, obtained grace without any labour or travel. So do our *Papists* murmur at this day, saying: What hath it profited us that we have lived in a cloister 20, 30, or 40. yeares: that we have vowed chastity, poverty, obedience: that we have said so many Psalters and so many Canonick hours, and so many Masses: that we have so punished our bodies with fasting, prayers, chastisements, &c. if a husband, a wife, a Prince, a Governor, a master, a schollar; if an hireling or a drudg bearing sacks, if a wench sweeping the house shall not only be made equall with us; but also be accepted as better and more worthy before God then we?

Mat 22. 3.
The murmuring of the
Iewes against the
doctrine of Paul, for the
abolishing of the law.

The murmuring of
the *Papists*
against the
Gospell.

The judgement of reason concerning the doctrine of the Gospell, which teacheth that the law was given for transgressions.

This is therefore an hard question, whereunto reason cannot answer, but is greatly offended with it. Reason after a sort understandeth the righteousnesse of the law, which also it teacheth and urgeth, and imagineth that the doers of it are righteous: but it understandeth not the office and end of the law. Therefore when it heareth this sentence of *Paul*, (which is strange and unknowne to the world:) that the law was given for transgressions, Thus it judgeth; *Paul* abolisheth the law, for he saith, that we are not justified through it: Yea, he is a blasphemour against God which gave the

the law, vwhen he saith, *that the law was given for transgressions.* Let us live therefore as *Gentiles* which have no law. Yea, let us sin and abide in sin, that grace may abound: Also, let us do evill that good may come thereof. This hapned to the Apostle *Paul*, and the self-same hapneth at this day unto us. For when the common people heare out of the Gospell, that righteousnesse cometh by the meere grace of God through faith only, vwithout the law and vwithout vworks, they gather by and by of it, as did the Jews in times past: If the law do not justifie, then let us vvorke nothing: and this do they truly performe.

What should vve then do? This impiety doth indeed very much vex us, but vve cannot remedy it. For vwhen Christ preached, he must needs heare, that he vvas a blasphemmer and a seditious person: that is to say, that through his doctrine he deceived men, and made them rebels against *Cesar*. The selfe-same thing hapned to *Paul* and all the rest of the Apostles. And vwhat marvell is it if the vworld in like manner accuse us at this day? Let it accuse us, let it slander us, let it persecute us and spare not: yet must not we therefore hold our peace, but speake freely, that afflicted consciences may be delivered out of the snares of the devill. And we must not regard the foolish and ungodly people in that they do abuse our doctrine: for vwhether they have a law or no law, they cannot be reformed. But vve must consider how afflicted consciences maybe comforted, that they perish not with the multitude. If we should dissemble and hold our peace, miserable and afflicted consciences should have no comfort, vwhich are so entangled and snared vwith mens laws and traditions, that they can wind themselves out by no means.

As *Paul* therefore, vwhen he saw that some resisted his doctrine, and other some sought the liberty of the flesh, and thereby became worse, comforted himselfe after this sort, that he vvas an Apostle of Jesus Christ sent to preach the Faith of Gods elect, and that he must suffer all things for the elects sake, that they also might obtaine salvation: for we at this day do all things for the elects sake, vvhom vve know to be edified and comforted through our doctrine. But as for the dogs and swine (of vvhom the one sort persecuteth our doctrine, and the other sort treadeth under foot the liberty, vvhich vve have in Christ Jesus). I am so offended vwith them, that in all my life for their sakes I vwould not utter

Christ is iudged to be a blasphemmer and a seditious person.

All things are to be done for the elects sake.

Dogs and swine.

so much as one word : but I would rather wish that these swine, together with our adversaries the dogs, were yet still subject to the Popes tyranny, rather then that the holy Name of God should be so blasphemed and evill spoken of through them.

The law iustificieth not, therefore it is unprofitable; is a naughty consequence.

Therefore, albeit not only the foolish and ignorant people, but they also which seem in their owne conceits to be very wise, do argue after this sort: if the law do not iustifie, then is it in vain and of none effect: yet is it not therefore true. For like as this consequence is nothing worth: Many doth not iustifie or make a man righteous, therefore it is unprofitable; the eyes do not iustifie, therefore they must be plucked out; the hands make not a man righteous, therefore they must be cut off: so is this naught also: the law doth not iustifie, therefore it is unprofitable: for we must attribute unto every thing his proper effect and use. We doe not therefore destroy and condemne the law, because we say, that it doth not iustifie: but we answer otherwise to this question: *To what end then serveth the law?* then our adversaries do, who do wickedly and perversly counterfeit an office and use of the law which belongeth not unto it.

The proper office and use of the law.

When the law is good.

Against this abuse and forged office of the law, we dispute and answer with *Paul*, that the law doth not iustifie. But in so saying we affirme not that the law is unprofitable, as they doe by and by gather. If the law do not iustifie (say they) then is it given in vain. No not so. For it hath his proper office and use, but not that which the adversaries do imagine, namely, to make men righteous: but it accuseth, terrifieth, and condemneth them. We say with *Paul*, that the law is good, if a man do rightly use it: that is to say, if he use the law as the law. If I give unto the law his proper definition, and keepe it within the compasse of his office and use, it is an excellent thing. But if I translate it to another use, and attribute that unto it which I should not, then do I not only pervert the law, but also the whole Scripture.

All men naturally iudge that the law doth iustifie.

Therefore *Paul* fighteth here against those pestilent hypocrites, who could not abide this sentence: *The law was added for transgressions*. For they thinke that the office of the law is to iustifie. And this is the generall opinion of mans reason among the Sophisters, and throughout the whole world, that righteousness is gotten through the works of the law. And reason will by no means suffer this pernicious opinion to be wrested from it, because it understandeth

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Rom. 5. 20.
The office
of the law.

then the office of the law? Transgressions, or else (as he saith in another place:) The law entered in, that sin should abound. A goodly office forsooth. *The law (saith he) was added for transgressions:* that is to say, it was added besides and after the promise, untill Christ the seed should come, unto whom it was promised.

Of the double use of the law.

The use of
politicke
lawes.
All lawes
are given to
bridle trans-
gressions.

Here ye must understand that there is a double use of the law: One is civill: For God hath ordained civill laws, yea all laws to punish transgressions. Every law then is given to restraine sin. If it restraine sin, then it maketh men righteous. No, nothing lesse. For in that I do not kill, I do not commit adultery, I do not steale, or in that I abstaine from other sins, I do it not willingly or for the love of vertue, but I feare the prison, the sword and the hangman. These do bridle and restraine me that I sinne not, as bonds and chaines restraine a Lion or a Beare, that he teare and devoure not every thing that he meeteth: therefore the restraining from sinne is not righteousnesse, but rather a signification of unrighteousnesse. For as a mad or wild beast is bound lest he should destroy every thing that he meeteth, even so the law doth bridle a mad and a furious man, that he sinne not after his own lust. This restraint sheweth plainly enough that they which have need of the law (as all they have which are without Christ) are not righteous, but rather wicked and mad men, whom it is necessary by the bonds and prison of the law, so to bridle that they sinne not. Therefore the law justifieth not.

The power
of the devill.

God hath
ordained
Magistrates,
parents,
lawes, &c.
that signes
might be
bridled.

The first use then of the law is, to bridle the wicked. For the devill reigneth throughout the whole world, and enforceth men to all kinds of horrible wickedness. Therefore God hath ordained Magistrates, Parents, Ministers, lawes, bonds, and all civill ordinances, that if they can do no more, yet at the least they may binde the devils hands, that he rage not in his bondslaves after his owne lust. Like as therefore they that are possessed, in whom the devill mightily reigneth, are kept in bonds and chaines lest they should hurt others: even so in the world, which is possessed of the devill, and carried headlong into all kindes of wickednesse, the Magistrate is present with his bonds and chaines: that is to say, with his lawes, binding his hands and feet that he run not headlong into all mischief.

chiefe. And if he suffer not himselfe to be brideled after this sort, then he loseth his head. This civill restraint is very necessary and appointed of God, as well for publike peace, as also for the preservation of all things, but especially lest the course of the Gospell should be hindered by the tumults and seditions of wicked, outragious, and proud men. But *Paul* intreateth not here of this civill use and office of the law. It is indeed very necessary, but it justifieth not. For as a possessed or mad man is not therefore free from the snares of the devill: or well in his mind, because he hath his hands and his feet bound, and can do no hurt: even so the world, although it be brideled by the law from outward wickednesse and mischief, yet it is not therefore righteous, but still continueth wicked: yea this restraint sheweth plainly that the world is wicked and outragious, stirred up and enforced to all wickednesse by his prince the devill: for otherwise it need not to be brideled by laws that it should not sinne.

The civill restraint of the law is necessary.

Another use of the law is divine and spirituall, which is (as *Paul* saith) to *increase transgressions*: that is to say, to reveale unto a man his sinne, his blindnesse, his misery, his impiety, ignorance, hatred and contempt of God, death, hell, the judgement and deserved wrath of God. Of this use the Apostle intreateth notably in the 7th to the *Romanes*. This is altogether unknown to hypocrites, to the popish Sophisters and Schoole-divines, and to all that walke in the opinion of the righteousness of the law, or of their own righteousness. But to the end that God might bridle and beate downe this monster and this mad beast (I meane the presumption of mans righteousness and religion) which naturally maketh men proud, and puffeth them up in such sort, that they think themselves thereby to please God highly: it behoved him to send some * *Hercules* which might set upon this monster with all force and courage to overthrow him, and utterly to destroy him: that is to say, he was constrained to give a law in Mount *Sina*, with so great Majesty and with so terrible a shew, that the whole multitude was astonished, *Exod. 19. & 20.*

the spirituall use of the law.

The spirituall use of the law unknowne to reason.

* *Hercules* was a mighty champion which slue the great monster *Hydra* (as the Poets saine) which had a hundred necks with serpents heads.

This, as it is the proper and the principall use of the law: so is it very profitable and also most necessary. For if any be not a murterer, an adulterer, a theefe, and outwardly refrain from sinne, as the Pharisee did which is mentioned in the Gospell, he would sweare (because he is possessed with the devill) that he is righteous, and therefore

fore

Hypocrites
are feared
and hum-
bled by the
law.

Jer 23 29.
Mans opini-
on touching
the righte-
ousnes of the
law, or his
own righte-
ousnes, how
dangerous
and damna-
ble it is.

The opinion
of righteou-
nes, an horri-
ble monster.

The proper
use of the
law.

The law is a
hammer
breaking the
rockes

1 Kin. 19. 21,
22, 23.

fore he continueth an opinion of righteousness, and presumeth of his good works and merits. Such a one God cannot otherwise mollifie and humble, that he may acknowledge his misery and damnation but by the law. For that is the hammer of death, the thundering of hell, and lightening of Gods wrath, that beateth to powder the obstinate and senselesse hypocrites. Wherefore this is the proper and true use of the law, by lightening, by tempest, and by the sound of the trumpet (as in the mount *Sina*) to terrifie, and by thundering to beate down and rent in pieces that beast which is called the opinion of righteousness. Therefore saith God by *Jeremie* the Prophet: *My word is a hammer breaking rock*. For, as long as the opinion of righteousness abideth in man, so long there abideth also in him incomprehensible pride, presumption, security, hatred of God, contempt of his grace and mercy, ignorance of the promises and of Christ. The preaching of free remission of sins through Christ cannot enter into the heart of such a one, neither can he feele any tast or savour thereof. For that mighty rock and adamant wall, to wit, the opinion of righteousness, wherewith the heart is environed, doth resist it.

As therefore the opinion of righteousness is a great and an horrible monster, a rebellious, obstinate and stiffe-necked beast: so for the destroying and overthrowing thereof, God hath neede of a mighty hammer, that is to say, the law: which then is in his proper use and office, when it accuseth and revealeth sinne after this sort: Behold thou hast transgressed all the Commandements of God, &c. and so it striketh a terrour into the conscience, so that it feeleth God to be offended and angry indeed, and it selfe to be guilty of eternall death. Here the poore afflicted sinner feeleth the intolerable burden of the law, and is beaten down even to desperation, so that now being oppressed with great anguish and terrour, he desireth death, or else seeketh to destroy himselfe. Wherefore the law is that hammer; that fire, that mighty strong winde, and that terrible earthquake renting the mountaines, and breaking the rockes, that is to say, the proud and obstinate hypocrites. *Elias*, not being able to abide these terrours of the law, which by these things are signified, covered his face with his mantle. Notwithstanding when the tempest ceased, of which he was a beholder, there came a soft and a gracious winde, in the which the Lord was. But it behoved that the tempest of fire, of winde, and the earthquake should passe, before

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY
BIBLE**

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

The same
happeth to
hypocrites
and such as
put righte-
ousnes in
workes that
happened to
the Jewes

standing at
Mount *Sina*.

when they said: We are the holy people of God, whom the Lord hath chosen for his own peculiar people. before all nations upon the earth: We will do all things which the Lord hath spoken. So it happeneth at length to all Iudiciaries, who being drunken with the opinion of their own righteousness, do think when they are out of temptation, that they are beloved of God, and that God regardeth their vows, their fastings, their prayers, and their will-workes, and that for the same he must give unto them a singular crown in Heaven. But when that thundering, lightening, fire, and that hammer which breaketh in pieces the rocks, that is to say, the law of God commeth suddenly upon them, revealing unto them their sin, the wrath and judgement of God: then the selfe same thing hapneth unto them which hapned to the Jewes standing at the foot of mount *Sina*.

Here I admonish all such as feare God, and especially such as shall become teachers of others hereafter, that they diligently learne out of *Paul* to understand the true and proper use of the law: which (I feare) after our time will be trodden under foot, and utterly abolished by the enemies of the truth. For even now, whiles we are yet living, and employ all our diligence to set forth the office and use both of the law and the Gospell, there be very few, yea even among those which will be counted Christians, and make a profession of the Gospell with us, that understand these things rightly, and as they should do. What think ye then shall come to passe when we are dead and gone? I speake nothing of the Anabaptists, of the new Arrians, and such other vaine spirits, who are no lesse ignorant of these matters, then are the Papists, although they talke never so much to the contrary. For they are revolted from the pure doctrine of the Gospell, to laws and traditions, and therefore they teach not Christ. They bragge and they sweare that they seek nothing else but the glory of Christ, and the salvation of their brethren, and that they teach the word of God purely: but in very deed they corrupt it and wrest it to another sence, so that they make it to sound according to their own imagination. Therefore, under the name of Christ, they teach nothing else but their own dreames, and under the name of the Gospell, ceremonies and laws. They are like therefore unto themselves, and so they still continue: that is to say, Monkes, workers of the law, and teachers of ceremonies, saving that they devise new names and new workes.

Very few
understand
the proper
use of the
law.

It is no small matter then to understand rightly what the law is, and what is the true use and office thereof. And forasmuch as we teach these things both diligently and faithfully, we do thereby plainly testify that we reject not the law and workes, as our adversaries do falsely accuse us: but we do altogether stablish the law, and require the works thereof, and we say that the law is good and profitable: but in his own proper use: which is, first to bridle civill transgressions, and then, to reveale and to increase spirituall transgressions. Wherefore the law is also a light, which sheweth and revealeth, not the grace of God, not righteousness and life: but sinne and death, the wrath and judgement of God. For, as in the mount *Sina* the thundering, lightning, the thick and dark cloud, the hill smoaking and flaming, and all that terrible shew did not rejoyce nor quicken the children of Israel, but terrified and astonished them, and shewed how unable they were, with all their purity and holines, to abide the Majesty of God speaking to them out of the cloud: even so the law, when it is in his true use, doth nothing else but reveale sinne, ingender wrath, accuse and terrifie men, so that it bringeth them to the very brink of desperation. This is the proper use of the law, and here it hath an end, and it ought to go no further.

It is no small matter to understand the proper use of the law.

The light of the law.

The law in his true use terrifieth.

Contrariwise, the Gospell is a light which lightneth, quickneth, comforteth and raiseth up fearfull consciences. For it sheweth that God for Christs sake is mercifull unto sinners, yea and to such as are most unworthy, if they beleeve that by his death they are delivered from the curse, that is to say, from sinne and everlasting death; and that through his victory the blessing is freely given unto them, that is to say, grace, forgiveness of sinnes, righteousness and everlasting life. Thus, putting a difference between the law and the Gospell, we give to them both their own proper use and office. Of this difference between the law and the Gospell, there is nothing to be found in the books of the Monkes, Canonists, Schoolemen, no nor in the books of the antient Fathers. *Augustine* did somewhat understand this difference and shewed it. *Jerome* and others knew it not. Briefly, there was wonderfull silence many yeares as touching this difference in all Schooles and Churches: And this brought mens consciences into great danger. For unlesse the Gospell be plainly discerned from the law, the true Christian doctrine cannot be kept sound and uncorrupt. Contrariwise, if this difference

The light of the Gospell.

The proper use and office of the Gospell.

The doctrine of faith cannot remaine.

found, unless
the law be
rightly dis-
cerned from
the Gospell.

be well known, then is also the true manner of Justification known, and then it is an easie matter to discern faith from works, Christ from *Moses* and all politick works. For all things without Christ are the ministers of death for the punishing of the wicked. Therefore *Paul* answereth to this question after this manner :

Verse 19. *The law was added because of transgressions.*

That is to say, that transgressions might increase and be more known and seen. And indeed so it cometh to pass. For when sinne, death, the wrath and judgement of God and hell, are revealed to a man through the law: it is impossible but that he should become impatient, murmure against God, and despise his will. For he cannot beare the judgement of God, his own death and damnation: and yet notwithstanding he cannot escape them. Here he must needs fall into the hatred of God, and blasphemy against God. Before, when he was out of temptation, he was a very holy man, he worshipped and praised God, he bowed his knee before God and gave him thanks, as the Pharisee did, *Luk. 18*. But now, when sin and death is revealed unto him, he wisheth that there were no God. The law therefore of it selfe bringeth a speciall hatred of God. And thus sin is not only revealed and known by the law, but also is increased and stirred up by the law. Therefore *Paul* saith, *Rom. 7*. *Sinne that it might appeare to be sin, wrought death in me by that which was good, that sinne might be out of measure sinfull by the commandement.* There he intreateth of this effect of the law very largely.

The double
use of the
law.

Paul answereth therefore to this question: If the law do not justify, to what end then serveth it? Although (saith he) it justifie not, yet is it very profitable and necessary. For first it civilly restraineth such as are carnall, rebellious and obstinate. Moreover it is a glasse that sheweth unto a man himselfe, that he is a sinner, guilty of death, and worthy of Gods everlasting wrath and indignation. To what end serveth this humbling, this bruising and beating down by this hammer, the law I meane? To this end, that wee may have an entrance unto grace. So then the law is a minister that prepareth the way unto grace. For God is the God of the humble, the miserable, the afflicted, the oppressed and the despectate, and of those that are brought even to nothing: and his nature is to exalt the humble, to feed the hungry, to give sight to the blind,

The law a
minister for
the obtain-
ing of grace.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



crucified and died for thy finnes, looke for no salvation.

So the law with his office helpeth by occasion to justification, in that it driveth a man to the promise of grace, and maketh the same sweet and comfortable unto him. Wherefore we do not abrogate the law, but we shew the true office and use of the law: to wit, that it is a true and a profitable minister, which driveth a man to Christ. Therefore, after that the law hath humbled thee, terrified thee, and utterly beaten thee down, so that now thou art at the very brinke of desperation, see that thou learne how to use the law rightly. For the office and use of it is, not only to reveale sin and the wrath of God, but also to drive men unto Christ. This use of the law the holy Ghost onely setteth forth in the Gospell, where he witnesseth that God is present unto the afflicted and broken hearted. Wherefore if thou be bruised with this hammer, use not this bruising perversly, so that thou load thy selfe with moe laws, but heare Christ, saying: *Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavy loaden, and I will refresh you.* When the law so oppresseth thee that all things seeme to be utterly desperate, and thereby driveth thee unto Christ to seeke helpe and succour at his hands, then is the law in his true use: and through the Gospell it helpeth to justification. And this is the best and most perfect use of the law.

The law not onely sheweth unto a man his sin, but also driveth him to Christ.

Mat. 11, 28.

The most perfect use of the law.

Wherefore *Paul* here beginneth afresh to intreate of the law, and defineth what it is, taking occasion of that which he said before: to wit, that the law justifieth not. For reason hearing this, by and by doth thus inferre: Then God gave the law in vaine. It was necessary therefore to seeke how to define the law truly, and to shew what the law is, and how it ought to be understood, that it be not taken more largely or more straitly then it should be. There is no law (saith he) that is of it selfe necessary to justification. Therefore when we reason as touching righteousnesse, life, and everlasting salvation, the law must be utterly removed out of our sight, as if it had never been, or never should be, but as though it were nothing at all. For in the matter of justification no man can remove the law farre enough out of his sight, or behold the only promise of God sufficiently and as he should do. Therefore I said before that the law and the promise must be separate farre asunder as touching the inward affections and the inward man, albeit indeed they are neerely joyned together.

Verse 19. *Untill the Seede came unto the which the promise was made.*

Paul maketh not the law perpetuall, but he saith that it was given and added to the promises for transgressions: that is to say, to restrain them civilly, but specially to reveale and to increase them spiritually, and that not continually, but for a time. Here it is necessary to know how long the power and the tyranny of the law ought to endure, which discovereth sin, sheweth unto us what we are, and revealeth the wrath of God. They whose hearts are touched with an inward feeling of these matters, should suddenly perish if they should not receive comfort. Therefore if the dayes of the law should not be shortned, no man should be saved. A time therefore must be set, and bounds limited to the law, beyond the which it may not reigne. How long then ought the dominion of the law to endure? Untill the Seed come: to wit, that Seed of which it is written: *In thy Seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed.* The tyranny of the law then must so long continue untill the fulnesse of the time, and untill that Seede of the blessing come: not to the end that the law should bring this Seede or give righteousnesse, but that it should civilly restrain the rebellious and obstinate, and shut them up, as it were in a prison: and then spiritually should reprove them of sinne, humble them and terrifie them, and when they are thus humbled and beaten downe, it should constrain them to looke up to that blessed Seed.

How long the dominion of the law endureth.

We may understand the continuance of the law both according to the letter, and also spiritually. According to the letter thus: that the law continued untill the time of grace. *The law and the Prophets (saith Christ) prophesied untill John. From the time of John untill this day, the kingdome of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.* In this time Christ was baptized and began to preach. At what time also, after the letter, the law and all the ceremonies of *Moses* ceased.

The law according to the letter ceased at the coming of Christ. *Mat. 11. 12. 13.*

Spiritually the law may be thus understood, that it ought not to reigne in the conscience any longer then to the appointed time of this blessed Seed. When the law sheweth unto me my sinne, terrifieth me, and revealeth the wrath and judgement of God, so that I begin to tremble and to despaire: there hath the law his bounds, his time and his end limited, so that he now ceaseth to exercise his

How long the law must reigne in the conscience.

tyranny any more. For when he hath done his office sufficiently, he hath revealed the wrath of God, and terrified enough. Here we must say: now leave off law: thou hast done enough: thou hast terrified and tormented me enough. *All thy floods have runne over me, and thy terrors have troubled me. Lord turne not away thy face in thy wrath from thy servant: Rebuke me not, I beseech thee, in thine anger, &c.* When these terrors and troubles come, then is the time and the houre of the blessed Seed come. Let the law then give place, which indeed is added to reveale and to increase transgressions, and yet no longer, but untill that blessed Seed be come. When it is come, then let the law leave off to reveale sin and to terrifie any more: and let him deliver up his kingdome to another: that is to say, to the blessed Seed, which is Christ: who hath gracious lips, wherewith he accuseth and terrifieth not, but speaketh of far better things then doth the law, namely of grace, peace, forgiveness of sins, victory over sin, death, the devill and damnation, gotten by his death and passion unto all believers.

Psal. 42. 7.
Psal. 69. 2.
Psal. 6. 9.
Psal. 62.

The continuance of the law, literally and spiritually.

Paul therefore sheweth by these words, *Untill the Seede should come*, unto whom the blessing was promised, how long the law should endure literally and spiritually. According to the letter, it ceased after the blessed Seede came into the world, taking upon him our flesh, giving the holy Ghost, and writing a new law in our hearts. But the spirituall time of the law doth not end at once, but continueth fast rooted in the conscience. Therefore it is a hard matter for a man which is exercised with the spirituall use of the law, to see the end of the law. For in these terrors and feeling of sinne the mind cannot conceive this hope, that God is mercifull and that he will forgive sinnes for Christs sake: but it judgeth onely that God is angry with sinners, and that he accuseth and condemneth them. If faith come not here to raise up againe the troubled and afflicted conscience, or else (according to that saying of Christ: *Where two or three be gathered together in my name, &c.*) there be some faithfull brother at hand that may comfort him by the word of God, which is so oppressed and beaten down by the law, desperation and death must needs follow. There it is a perillous thing for a man to be alone. *Woe be to him that is alone* (saith the Preacher) *for when he falleth he hath none to raise him up.* Wherefore they that ordained that cursed monkish and solitary life, gave

The terrors of the law are driven away by faith.
Math. 18. 20.

Ecles. 4. 10.

The solitary or mon.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Chap. III. Upon the EPISTLE

to the law as
Moses was.

God and man according to the law, as *Moses* was: but he is a Mediatour of a better Testament. The law therefore was ordained by Angels as servants. For *Moses* and the people heard God speaking in the Mount *Sina*: that is to say, they heard the Angels speaking in the person of God. Therefore *Stephen* in the seventh chapter of the *Acts* saith: *Ye have received the law by the ministry of the Angels, and ye have not regarded it.* Also the text in the third of *Exodus*, sheweth plainly, that the Angell appeared unto *Moses* in a flame of fire, and spake unto him from the midst of the bush.

Moses a Mediatour.

Paul therewith signifieth that Christ is a Mediatour of a farre better Testament then *Moses*. And here he alludeth to that history in *Moses* concerning the giving of the law, which saith, that *Moses* led the people out of their tents to meet with God, and that he placed them at the foot of the Mount *Sina*. There was an hea-
vie and an horrible sight. The whole Mount was on a flaming fire. When the people saw this they began to tremble: for they thought that they should have been suddenly destroyed in this fearfull tempest. Because therefore they could not abide the law sounding so horribly out of Mount *Sina*, (for that terrifying voice of the law would have killed the people) they said unto *Moses* their Mediatour: *Come thou hither and beare what the Lord saith, and speake thou unto us.* And he answered: *I my selfe* (saith he) *was a Mediatour, and one that stood between God and you, &c.* By these places it is plaine enough that *Moses* was appointed a Mediatour between the people, and the law speaking.

The law testified, therefore it justifieth not.

Wherefore *Paul* by this history goeth about to declare, that it is impossible that righteousness should come by the law. As if he should say, how can the law justifie, seeing the whole people of *Israel*, being purified and sanctified, yea and *Moses* himselfe the Mediatour between God and the people, were afraid and trembled at the voice of the law, as it is said in the Epistle to the *Hebrewes*: Here was nothing but feare and trembling. But what righteousness and holinesse is this, not to be able to beare, yea not to be able or willing to heare the law, but to flie from it, and so to hate it, that it is impossible to hate and abhorre any thing more in the whole world? as the history most plainly testifieth, that the people when they heard the law, did hate nothing more then the law, and rather wished death then to heare the law.

So,

So, when sin is discovered, as it were, by certaine bright beames which the law striketh into the heart, there is nothing more odious and more intollerable to man then the law is. Here he would rather choose death, then be constrained to beare these terrours of the law never so little a time: which is a molt certaine token that the law justifieth not. For if the law did justifie, then (no doubt) men would love it, they would delight and take pleasure in it, and would embrace it with hearty good will. But where is this good will? No where: neither in *Moses* nor in the whole people, for they were all astonished and fled back. And how doth a man love that which he flieth? Or how delighteth he in that which he deadly hateth.

Nothing is more intollerable to man then the law.

All the people fled away at the voice of the law, therefore the law justifieth not.

Wherefore this flight sheweth a deadly hatred of mans heart against the law, and so consequently against God himself the authour of the law. And if there were no other argument to prove that righteousness cometh not by the law, this one history were enough, which *Paul* setteth out in these words: *In the hand of a Mediatour*. As though he would say: Do ye not remember that your fathers were so far unable to heare the law, that they had need of *Moses* to be their Mediatour? and when he was now appointed to that office, they were so farre off from loving of the law, that they by a fearfull flight, together with their Mediatour, shewed themselves to hate the same, as the Epistle to the *Hebrews* witnesseth, and if they could, they would have gone even through an yron mountaine back againe into *Egypt*. But they were inclosed round about, so that they had no way to escape. Therefore they cry unto *Moses*: *Speake thou unto us: for if we heare the voice of the Lord our God any more, we shall die*. Now therefore, if they be not able to heare the law, how should they be able to accomplish it.

The whole history of giving the law witnesseth that righteousness cometh not by the law.

Exod. 20. 19.
Deut. 5. 24.

Wherefore, if the people that were under the law, were constrained of necessity to have a Mediatour, it followeth by an infallible consequence, that the law justified them not. What did it then? Even the same thing that *Paul* saith: The law is added that sinne might abound. The law therefore was a light and a Sunne which strooke his beames into the hearts of the children of Israel, whereby it terrified them, and strooke into them such a feare of God, that they hated both the law and the authour thereof: which is an horrible impiety. Would ye now say that these men were righteous? They are righteous which heare the law, and with a good will embrace

Rom. 5. 20.

All men naturally hate the law.

brace

brace the same and delight therein. But the history of giving the law witnesseth that all men in the whole world, be they never so holy (especially seeing they which were purified and sanctified could not heare the law) do hate and abhorre the law, and wish that the law were not. Therefore it is impossible that men should be justified by the law: nay it hath a cleane contrary effect.

Moses and
Christ both
Mediatours.

Although *Paul* (as I have said) doth but only touch this place by the way, and doth not thoroughly weigh it, nor fully finish the same, yet he that shall diligently and attentively reade it, may easily understand that he speaketh very well of both Mediatours: that is to say, of *Moses* and of *Christ*, and compareth the one with the other, as hereafter we will declare. If he should have prosecuted this matter more largely, this only place would have ministred unto him an argument and occasion plentiful enough to write a new Epistle: and that history also in the 19. and 20. of *Exodus*, concerning the giving of the law, would minister matter enough to write a great volume, although it were read but sleightly and without affection: albeit it may seeme to be very barren to those which know not the true office and use of the law, if it be compared with other holy histories.

The whole
world hateth
the law
of God.

The flesh
hateth the
law of God.

Hereby we may see that if all the world had stood at the Mount as the people of *Israel* did; they would have hated the law and would have fled from it, as they did. The whole world therefore is an enemy to the law and hateth it most deadly. But the law is holy, righteous and good, and is the perfect rule of the will of God. How then can he be righteous which doth not onely abhorre and detest the law and flie from it, but moreover is an enemy of God, who is the authour of the law? And true it is that the flesh can do no otherwise, as *Paul* witnesseth, *Rom. 8.* *The wisdom of the flesh is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can it be.* Therefore it is an extreame madnesse so to hate God and his law, that thou canst not abide to heare it; and yet notwithstanding to affirme that we are made righteous thereby.

Wherefore the Sophisters and Schoole-divines are starke blinde, and understand nothing at all of this doctrine. They looke onely upon the outward visour of the law, thinking that it is accomplished by civill workes, and that they are righteous before God, which do the same externally, not considering the true and spirituall

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



ring of Mo-
ses face,

Faith in
Christ dri-
veth away
the terrors
of the law.

The power
of free will

veile: without the which they could not heare his talke, that is, they could not heare *Moses* himselfe their mediatur, unlesse he had set another mediatur between, that is to say, the veile. How then should they heare the voice of God, or of an Angell, when they could not heare the voice of *Moses* being but a man, yea and also their mediatur, except his face had been covered? Therefore, except the blessed Seed come to raise up and comfort him which hath heard the law, he perisheth through desperation, in detesting of the law, in hating and blaspheming of God, and daily more and more offending against God. For this feare and conclusion of conscience which the law bringeth, the deeper it pierceth and the longer it continueth, the more it increaseth hatred and blasphemie against God.

This history therefore teacheth what is the power of free will. The people are stricken with feare, they tremble and they flie back. Where is now free will? where is now that good will, that good intent, that right judgement of reason which the Papists do so much brag of? What availeth free will here in these sanctified and holy men? It can say nothing: it blindeth their reason: it perverteth their will: it receiveth not, it saluteth not, it embraceth not with joy the Lord coming with thundering, lightening, and fire into the Mount *Sina*: It cannot heare the voice of the Lord: but contrariwise it saith: *Let not the Lord speake unto us lest we die.* We see then what the strength and power of free will is in the children of Israel, who though they were cleansed and sanctified, could not abide the hearing of one sillable or letter of the law. Therefore these high commendations which the Papists give to their free will, are nothing else but meere toyes and doting dreames.

Verse 20. *Now, a Mediatour is not a Mediatour of one.*

This word
Mediatour
includeth
two, namely
the partie
offended &
the offender

Here he compareth these two Mediatours together, and that with a marvellous brevity: yet so notwithstanding, that he satisfieth the attentive reader, who, because this word Mediatour is generall, by and by understandeth that *Paul* speaketh also of the Mediatour generally, and not of *Moses* onely. *A Mediatour* (saith he) *is not a mediatour of one onely*: but this word necessarily comprehendeth two, that is to say, him that is offended, and him that is the offender: of whom the one hath neede of intercession, and the

the other needeth none. Wherefore a Mediatour is not of one, but of two, and of such two, as be at variance between themselves. So *Moses* by a generall definition is a Mediatour, because he doth the office of a Mediatour between the law and the people, which cannot abide the true and spirituall use of the law. The law therefore must have a new face, and his voice must be changed: that is to say, the voice of the law must be made spirituall or the law must be made lively in the inward affection, and must put on a visour or a veile, that it may now become more tollerable, so that the people may be able to heare it by the voice of *Moses*.

Now the law being thus covered, speaketh no more in his majesty, but by the mouth of *Moses*. After this manner it doth not his office any more: that is, it terrifieth not the conscience. And this is the cause that they do neither understand, nor regard it: by meanes whereof they become secure, negligent and presumptuous hypocrites. And yet notwithstanding the one of these two must needs be done: to wit, that either the law must be without his use, and covered with a veile, (but then, as I have said, it maketh hypocrites:) or else it must be in his use without the veile; and then it killeth. For mans heart cannot abide the law in his true use, without the veile. It behoveth thee therefore, if thou looke to the end of the law without the veile, either to lay hold on that blessed Seed by faith, that is to say, thou must looke beyond the end of the law unto Christ, which is the accomplishment of the law, which may say unto thee: The law hath terrified thee enough: *Be of good comfort my sonne, thy sinnes are forgiven thee,* (whereof I will speake more anon:) or else surely thou must have *Moses* for thy Mediatour with his veile.

For this cause *Paul* saith: *A Mediatour is not a Mediatour of one.* For it could not be that *Moses* should be a Mediatour of God alone, for God needeth no Mediatour. And againe, he is not a Mediatour of the people onely, but he doth the office of a Mediatour between God and the people, which were at variance with God. For it is the office of a Mediatour to pacifie the party that is offended, and to reconcile unto him the party which is the offender. Notwithstanding *Moses* is such a Mediatour (as I have said) as doth nothing else but change the voice of the law, and maketh it tollerable, so that the people may abide the hearing thereof; but he giveth no power to accomplish the same. To conclude, he

Because God speaketh not now in his Majesty as he did in the Mount, but by the voice of men, therefore men feare him not, nor regard his law.

The office of a Mediatour

Chap. III. Upon the EPISTLE.

Moses a Mediator of the veile,

is a Mediatour of the veile, and therefore he giveth no power to performe the law, but onely in the veile. Therefore his Disciples, in that hee is a Mediatour of the veile, must alwayes be hypocrites.

When we are terrified by the law, we have need of another manner of Mediator then Moses.

But what should have come to passe (thinke ye) if the law had been given without *Moses*; either else before or after *Moses*, and that there had been no Mediatour, and moreover, that the people should neither have been suffered to flie, nor to have a Mediatour? Here the people being beaten down with intollerable feare, should either have perished forthwith, or if they should have escaped, there must needs have come some other Mediatour, which should have set himselfe between the law and the people, to the end that both the people might be preserved, and the law remaine in his force, and also an atonement might be made between the law and the people. Indeed *Moses* commeth in the meane time, and is made a Mediatour: he putteth on a veile, and covereth his face: but he cannot deliver mens consciences from the anguish and terrour which the law bringeth. Therefore when the poore sinner, at the houre of death or in the conflict of conscience, feeleth the wrath and judgement of God for sinne, which the law revealeth and increaseth: here, to keep him from desperation, setting *Moses* aside with his law, he must have a Mediatour which may say unto him: Although thou be a sinner, yet shalt thou remaine, that is, thou shalt not die, although the law, with his wrath and malediction do still remaine.

Christ covereth not the law with a veile, but taketh it away, and therefore he is a better Mediator then Moses.

This Mediatour is *Jesus Christ*, which changeth not the voice of the law, nor hideth the same with a veile as *Moses* did, nor leadeth me out of the sight of the law: but he setteth himselfe against the wrath of the law and taketh it away, and satisfieth the law in his owne body by himselfe, and by the Gospell he saith unto me: Indeed the law threatneth unto thee the wrath of God and eternall death: but be not afraid: flie not away, but stand fast. I supply and performe all things for thee: I satisfie the law for thee. This is a Mediatour which far excelleth *Moses*, who setteth himselfe between God being offended, and the offender. The intercession of *Moses* here profiteth nothing: he hath done his office, and he with his veile is now vanished away. Here the miserable sinner being utterly desperate, or a man now approaching unto death, and God being offended, do encounter together. Therefore there must come

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

pinion naturally rooted in them, that the law justifieth. Therefore I feare lest this doctrine will be defaced and darkned again, when we are dead. For the world must be replenished with horrible darknesse and errors before the latter day come.

The proper
office of the
law.

Who so therefore is able to understand this, let him understand it, that the law in true Christian divinity, and in his true and proper definition, doth not justifie, but hath a quite contrary effect. For it sheweth and revealeth unto us our selves: it setteth God before us in his anger, it revealeth Gods wrath, it terrifieth us, and it doth not only reveale sinne, but also mightily increaseth sin, so that where sin was before but little, now by the law which bringeth the same to light, it becometh exceeding sinfull: so that a man now beginneth to hate the law and to flie from it, and with a perfect hatred to abhorre God the maker of the law. This is not to be justified by the law (and that reason it selfe is compelled to grant) but to commit a double sin against the law: First, not only to have a will so disagreeing from the law that thou canst not heare it: but also to do contrary to that which it commandeth: And secondly, so to hate it that thou would wish it were abolished, together with God himself, who is the author thereof and absolutely good.

The law is
good and
holy, and
yea in all
things
commendable
to man
nature.
Exod 10.2.
Deut. 5.5.

Now, what greater blasphemy, what sin more horrible can be imagined then to hate God? to abhorre his law, and not to suffer the hearing thereof? which notwithstanding is good and holy. For the history doth plainly witness that the people of *Israel* refused to heare that excellent law, those holy and most gracious words (namely, *I am the Lord thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, and out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt have no other gods, &c. Shewing mercy to thousands, &c. Honour thy Father and thy Mother, that it may goe well with thee, and that thy dayes may be prolonged upon the earth, &c.*) and that they had need of a Mediatour. They could not abide this most excellent, perfect and divine wisdom: This most gracious, sweet and comfortable doctrine. *Let not the Lord speake unto us (say they) lest we die. Speake thou unto us, &c.* Doubtlesse it is a marvellous thing that a man cannot heare that which is his whole felicity, namely that he hath a God, yea and a mercifull God which will shew mercy unto him in many thousands of generations, &c. And moreover that he cannot abide that which is his chiefe safety and defence, namely: *Thou shalt not kill: Thou shalt*

The law con-
taineth pro-
fitable do-
ctrine and
yea men can-
not heare it.

not commit adultery: thou shalt not steale: For by these words the Lord hath defended and fortified the life of man, his wife, his children, and his goods, as it were with a wall against the force and violence of the wicked.

The law then can do nothing, saving that by his light it lighteneth the conscience that it may know sin, death, the judgement and the wrath of God. Before the law come, I am secure: I feel no sin, but when the law cometh, sin, death and hell are revealed unto me. This is not to be made righteous, but guilty, and the enemy of God, to be condemned to death and hell fire. The principall point therefore of the law in true Christian Divinity is, to make men, not better, but worse: That is to say, it sheweth unto them their sin, that by the knowledge thereof they may be humbled, terrified, bruised and broken, and by this meanes may be driven to seeke comfort, and so to come to that blessed Seed.

The law ma-
keth not us
better but
worse.

Verse 20. *But God is one.*

God offendeth no man, and therefore needeth no Mediatour. But we offend God, and therefore we have need of a Mediatour, not *Moses*, but *Christ*, which speaketh far better things for us, &c. Hitherto he hath continued in his digression: Now he returneth to his purpose.

Verse 21. *Is the law then against the promise of God.*

Paul said before that the law justifieth not. Shall we then take away the law? no, not so. For it bringeth with it a certain commodity. What is that? It bringeth men unto the knowledg of themselves: it discovereth and increaseth sin, &c. Here now riseth another objection. If the law do nothing else but make men worse in shewing unto them their sin, then is it contrary to the promises of God. For it seemeth that God is but only provoked to anger and offended through the law, and therefore he regardeth not, nor performeth his promises. We *Jews* have thought the contrary: to wit, that we are restrained and bridled by this externall discipline, to the end that God being provoked thereby, might hasten the performing of his promise, and that by his discipline we might deserve the promise.

The judge-
ment of the
Jews and
of all others
as touching
the law.

Paul answereth: It is nothing so. But contrariwise, if ye

Reason cannot abide to hear the good law of God.

have regard to the law, the promise is rather hindred. For naturall reason offendeth God, which so faithfully promiseth, whiles it will not heare his good and holy law. For it saith: *Let not the Lord speak unto us, &c.* How can it be then that God should performe his promise unto those, which, not only receive not his law and his discipline, but also with a mortall hatred do shun it and fly from it? Here therefore (as I said) riseth this objection: *Is the law against the promise of God?* This objection *Paul* toucheth by the way and briefly answereth, saying

Verse 21. *God forbid:*

Why so? First, for that God maketh no promise unto us, because of our worthines; our merits, our good works: but for his own goodnes and mercies sake in Christ. He saith not to *Abraham*: All nations shall be blessed in thee, because thou hast kept the law; but when he was uncircumcised, had no law, and was yet an idolater, he said unto him: *Go out of thine own land, &c. I will be thy protector, &c.* Also: *In thy seed shall all nations be blessed.* These are absolute and meer promises: which God freely giveth unto *Abraham*, without any condition or respect of works, either going before or coming after.

Gent. 12.1, 5, 1.12.3.

The promises of God are not hindered because of our finnes.

This maketh specially against the *Jews*; which thinke that the promises of God are hindred, because of their sins, God (saith *Paul*) doth not slacke his promises, because of our sins, or hasten the same for our righteousnes and merits: he regardeth neither the one nor the other. Wherefore, although we become more sinfull, and are brought into greater contempt and hatred of God by means of the law, yet notwithstanding God is not moved thereby to defer his promise. For his promise doth not stand upon our worthines, but upon his only goodnes and mercy. Therefore, where the *Jews* say: The *Messias* is not yet come, because our sins do hinder his coming, it is a detestable dreame. As though God should become unrighteous, because of our sins, or made a liar, because we are liars. He abideth alwaies just and true: his truth therefore is the only cause that he accomplisheth and performeth his promise.

1Pet 3.9.

A devillish dreame of the Iewes.

The law is not against the promi-

Moreover although the law doe reveale and increase sinne, yet is it not against the promises of God, yea rather it confirmeth the promises. For as concerning his proper worke and end, it ham-

bleth

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Chap. III.

Vpon the EPISTLE

Vpon whom
Christ be-
floweth his
benefits.
Esa 61.1.
Luke. 4. 18.

John. 7. 7.
Psal. 147. 3.

Will refresh you. He delighteth therefore to water these dry grounds. He poureth not his waters upon fat and ranke grounds, or such as are not dry and covet no water. His benefits are inestimable, and therefore he giveth them to none but unto such as have need of them, and earnestly desire them. He preacheth glad tidings to the poore: he giveth drinke to the thirsty. *If any thirst (saith S^t John) let him come unto me. &c.* He healeth the broken hearted, &c. that is, he comforteth those that are bruised and afflicted by the law. Therefore the law is not against the promises of God.

Verse 21. *For if there had been a law given which bringeth life, surely righteousnesse should have been by the law.*

The law
quickeneth
not, but kil-
leth.

By these words *Paul* signifieth that no law of it selfe is able to quicken or give life, but only killeth. Therefore such works as are done, not only according to the laws and traditions of the Pope, but also according to the very law of God, do not justifie a man before God, but make him a sinner: they do not pacifie the wrath of God, but they kindle it: they obtaine not righteousnes, but they hinder it: they quicken not, but they kill and destroy. Therefore when he saith: *If a law had been given which could have brought life, &c.* he teacheth plainly that the law of it selfe justifieth not, but that it hath a cleane contrary effect.

*The Papists
bragge that
they keepe,
not only the
commande-
ments but
also the coun-
sels, which
they call the
exhorta-
ons of the
Gospell and
other workes
not coman-
ded in the
Scripture,
which they
call workes
of superero-
gation,

Although these words of *Paul* be plaine enough, yet are they obscure and utterly unknown to the Papists. For if they did understand them indeed, they would not so magnifie their free will, their natural strength, the keeping of the * counsels, the works of supererogation, &c. But least they should seeme to be manifestly wicked and plaine Infidels in denying the words of the Apostle of Christ so impudently, they have this pestilent glosse alwayes ready; (whereby they pervert the places of *Paul* concerning the law, which revealeth sinne and engendreth wrath, that is to say, the ten Commandements) that *Paul* speaketh only of the ceremoniall and not of the morall law. But *Paul* speaketh plainly when he saith: *If a law had beene given, &c.* and he excepteth no law. Wherefore this glosse of the Papists is not worth a rush. For the laws of the ceremonies were as well commanded of God, and as straitly kept as the morall laws. The Jews also kept circumcision as precisely as they did the Sabbath day. It is evident enough therefore that *Paul* speaketh of the whole law.

These

These words of the Apostle are sung and said in the Papacy and in all their Churches, and yet notwithstanding they both teach and live quite contrary. *Paul* saith simply that no law was given to quicken and to bring life: but the Papists teach the contrary, and affirme that many and infinite lawes are given to quicken and to bring life. Although they say not this in plaine words, yet in very deed such is their opinion, as their monkish religion doth plainly witness, besides many other laws and traditions of men, their works and merits before grace and after, and innumerable wicked ceremonies and false worshippings, which they have devised of their owne heads, and those only have they preached, treading the Gospell under their feet, and assuredly promising grace, remission of sinnes, and life everlasting to all such as should keep and accomplish the same. This that I say cannot be denied: for their books which are yet extant, give certaine testimony thereof.

Paul teacheth that no law was given to bring life, but the pope teacheth quite contrary.

But contrariwise, we affirme with *Paul*, that there is no law, whether it be mans law or Gods, that giveth life. Therefore we put as great difference between the law and righteousnesse, as is between life and death, between Heaven and hell. And the cause that moveth us so to affirme, is that plaine and evident place of *Paul*, where he saith, that the law is not given to justifie, to give life, and to save, but only to kill and to destroy, contrary to the opinion of all men: for naturally they can judge no other wise of the law, but that it is given to work righteousnesse, and to give life and salvation.

The judgement of men as touching the law.

This difference of the offices of the law and the Gospell, keepeth all Christian doctrine in his true and proper use. Also it maketh a faithfull man judge over all kinds of life, over the laws and decrees of all men, and over all doctrine whatsoever, and it giveth them power to try all manner of spirits. On the other side the Papists, because they confound and mingle the law and the Gospell together, can teach no certainty touching faith, works, the states and conditions of life, nor of the difference of spirits.

What profit cometh by knowing the difference between the law and the Gospell.

Now therefore, after that *Paul* hath prosecuted his confutations and arguments sufficiently and in good order, he teacheth that the law (if ye consider his true and perfect use) is nothing else but as a certaine schoolemaster to leade us unto righteousnesse. For it humbleth men, it prepareth and maketh them apt to receive the righteousness of Christ, when it doth his own proper worke and office,

The true and perfect use of the law.

that is, when it maketh them guilty, terrifieth and bringeth them to the knowledge of sin, wrath, death and hell. For when it hath done this, the opinion of mans own righteoulnes and holines vanisheth away, and Christ with his benefits beginneth to wax sweet unto him. Wherefore the law is not against the promises of God; but rather confirmeth them. True it is, that it doth not accomplish the promise, nor bring righteoulnes: notwithstanding it humbleth us with his exercise and office, and so maketh us more thirsty and more apt to receive the benefit of Christ. Therefore (saith he) if any law had been given which might have brought righteoulnes, and through righteoulnesse life (for no man can obtaine life except first he be righteous,) then indeed righteoulnes should come by the law. Moreover, if there were any state of life, any work, any religion, whereby a man might obtaine remission of sinnes, righteoulnesse and life, then should these things indeed justifie and give life. But this is impossible: for,

Verse 22. *The Scripture hath concluded all men under sinne.*

The Scripture shutteth all under the curse. First by the promise.

Where? First in the promises themselves as touching Christ, as Gen. 3. *The Seed of the woman shall breake the head of the Serpent.* And Gen. 22. *In thy Seed, &c.* Wheresoever then is any promise in the Scriptures made unto the fathers concerning Christ, there the blessing is promised, that is; righteoulnesse, salvation and eternall life. Therefore by the contrary it is evident, that they which must receive the blessing are subject to the curse, that is to say, sinne and eternall death: for else to what end was the blessing promised?

Secondly by the law.

Gal. 3. 10.

Secondly, the Scripture shutteth men under sinne and under the curse, especially by the law, because it is his peculiar office to reveale sinne and ingender wrath, as wee have declared throughout this Epistle, but chiefly by this sentence of Paul: *Whosoever are of the workes of the law, are under the curse.* Also by that place which the Apostle alleadgeth out of the 27. chapter of Deut. *Cursed is every one that abideth not in all the words of this law to doe them, &c.* For these sentences in plaine words do shut under sin and under the curse, not onely those which sinne manifestly against the law, or do not outwardly accomplish the law: but also those which are under the law, and with all indeavour go about to performe the same, and such were the Jewes, as before I have said. Much more then doth the same place of Paul shut up under sinne and under the curse,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

for this addition, Faith joynd with works justifieth: but he proceedeth simply by the negative, *Rom. 3.* as he doth also before in the second chapter: *Therefore by the Workes of the Law (saith he) shall no flesh be justified.* And againe in this place: *The law is not given to bring life.*

Verse 22. *That the promise by the Faith of Jesus Christ should be given to them that beleeve.*

The promise
given to A-
braham
what it is.

He said before that the Scripture hath shut all under sin. What, for ever? No, but until the promise should be given. Now, the promise is the inheritance it selfe, or the blessing promised to *Abraham*: to wit, the deliverance from the law, sinne, death and the devill; and a free giving of grace, righteousness, salvation and eternall life. This promise (saith he) is not obtained by any merit, by any law, or by any work, but it is given. To whom? To those that beleeve. In whom? In Jesus Christ, who is the blessed Seed, which hath redeemed all beleevers from the curse that they might receive the blessing. These words be not obscure, but plaine enough: notwithstanding we must marke them diligently and weigh well the force & weight therof. For if all be shut under sinne, it followeth that all nations are accursed and are destitute of the grace of God: Also that they are under the wrath of God and the power of the devill, and that no man can be delivered from them by any other meanes, then by faith in Jesus Christ. With these words therefore *Paul* enveigheth mightily against the fantasticall opinions of the Papists and all Justiciaries touching the law and works: when he saith, *that the promise by faith in Jesus Christ might be given to all beleevers.*

The promise
given to
them that
beleeve.

The senten-
ces concer-
ning works.

Now, how we would answer to those sentences which speake of workes and rewards, I have sufficiently declared before. And the matter requireth not now, that we should speake any thing of workes. For we have not here taken in hand to intreate of workes, but of Justification: to wit, that it is not obtained by the law and workes, since all things are shut under sinne, and under the curse: but by faith in Christ. When we are out of the matter of Justification, we cannot sufficiently praise and magnifie those workes which are commanded of God. For who can sufficiently commend and set forth the profit and fruit of one holy worke, which a Christian doth through Faith and in Faith? Indeed it is more precious

The comen-
dation of
good workes,
out of the
cause of lu-
cification.

then

then Heaven or earth. The whole world therefore is not able to give a worthy recompence to such a good work. Yea the world have not the grace to magnifie the holy workes of the faithfull as they are worthy, and much lesse to reward them: For it seeth them not, or if it do; it esteemeth them not as good works, but as most wicked and detestable crimes and riddeth the world of those which are the doers thereof; as most pestilent plagues to mankind.

So Christ the Saviour of the world, for a recompence of his incomprehensible and inestimable benefits, was put to the most opprobrious death of the crosse. The Apostles also bringing the word of grace and eternall life into the world, were counted the offscouring, and the outcasts of the whole world. This is the goodly reward which the world giveth for so great and unspeakable benefits. But works done without faith, although they have never so goodly a shew of holiness, are under the curse. Wherefore so far off it is, that the doers thereof should deserve grace, righteousness and eternall life, that rather they heape sin upon sin. After this manner the Pope, that child of perdition, and all that follow him, do worke. So worke all merit mongers, and hereticks which are fallen from the faith.

How Christ was rewarded of the world for his benefits.

Works without faith.

Verse 23. *But before faith came.*

He proceedeth in declaring the profit and necessity of the law. He said before that the law was added for transgressions: Not that it was the principall purpose of God, to make a law that should bring death and damnation, as he saith, *Rom. 7. Was that which was good (saith he) made death unto me? God forbid.* For the law is a word that sheweth life, and driveth men unto it. Therefore it is not only given as a minister of death, but the principall use and end thereof is to reveale death, that so it might be seen and known how horrible sin is. Notwithstanding it doth not so reveale death as though it tended to no other end but to kill and to destroy: but to this end it revealeth death, that when men are terrified, cast down, and humbled, they should feare God. And this doth the 20. chap. of *Exod.* declare. *Fear not (saith Moses) for God is come to prove you, and that his feare may be before you, that ye sin not.* The office therefore of the law is to kill, and yet so, that God may revive and quicken againe. The law then is not given only to kill: but because man is proud and dreameth that he is wise, righteous and holy: therefore it is necessary, he should be humbled by the law, that so this

The use of the law.

Why the law revealeth sin.

Exod. 20. 20.

beast.

Chap. III. Upon the E P I S T L E

beast the opinion of righteousness I say, might be slaine: for otherwise no man can obtaine life.

God useth
the effect of
the law, that
is to say,
death, to
bring life.

Albeit then that the law killeth, yet God useth this effect of the law, this death I meane, to a good end, that is to bring life. For God seeing that this universall plague of the whole world, to wit, mans opinion of his own righteousness, his hypocrisie, and confidence in his own holinesse could not be beaten downe by any other means, he would that it should be slaine by the law: not for ever, but that when it is once slaine, man might be raised up againe above and beyond the law, and there might heare this voice, Feare not: I have not given the law, and killed thee by the law, that thou shouldst abide in this death: but that thou shouldst feare me and live. For the presuming of good works, and righteousness standeth not with the feare of God: And where the feare of God is not, there can be no thirsting for grace or life. God must therefore have a strong hammer, or a mighty maule to breake the rocks, and a hot burning fire in the midst of Heaven to overthrow the mountaines: that is to say, to destroy this furious and obstinate beast (this presumption I say) that when a man by this bruising and breaking is brought to nothing, he should despaire of his own strength, righteousness and holinesse, and being thus thoroughly terrified, should thirst after mercy and remission of sinnes.

Verse 23. *But before faith came, we were under the law, shut up unto the*
Faith which should afterwards be revealed.

This similitude of the prison sheweth what the law worketh.

This is to say, before the time of the Gospell and grace came, the office of the law was, that we should be shut up and kept under the same, as it were in prison. This is a goodly and a fit similitude, shewing the effect of the law, and how righteous it maketh men: therefore it is diligently to be weighed. No theefe, no murderer, no adulterer or other malefactor loveth the chaines and fetters, the darke and loathsome prison wherein he lieth fast bound: but rather, if he could, he would breake and beate into powder the prison with his yrons and fetters. Indeed whiles he is in prison he refraineth from doing of evill: but not of a good will or for righteousness sake: but because the prison restraineth him that he cannot doe it: And now being fast fettered he hateth not his theft and his murder: (yea he is sorry with all his heart that he cannot rob and
steale,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



The lamentable complaints of the Saints. *Psal 6.5.*

is not in the power of man to shake off these horrible terrours, which the law stirreth up in the conscience, or any other anguish or bitterness of spirit. Hereof come these lamentable complaints of the Saints, which are every where in the *Psalmes*: *In hell who shall confesse thee?* &c. For then is a man shut up in prison: out of the which he cannot escape, nor seeth how he may be delivered out of these bonds, that is to say, these horrible terrours.

The law is a prison both civilly and spirituall.

Thus the law is a prison both civilly and spirituall. For first it restraineth and shutteth up the wicked that they runne not headlong according to their owne lust, into all kinds of mischief. Again it sheweth unto us spirituallly our sin, terrifieth and humbleth us, that when we are so terrified and humbled, we may learne to know our owne misery and condemnation. And this is the true and proper use of the law, so that it be not perpetuall. For this shutting and holding under the law, must endure no longer, but untill faith come: and when faith commeth, then must this spirituall prison have an end.

The law, & the Gospell as touching the inward affections needly joyned together.

Here againe wee see, that, although the law and the Gospell be separate farre asunder, yet as touching the inward affections, they are very nearely joyned the one with the other. This *Paul* sheweth when he saith: *Wee were kept under the law; and shut up unto the Faith, which should be revealed unto us.* Wherefore it is not enough that wee are shut under the law: for if nothing else should follow, wee should be driven to desperation and die in our sins. But *Paul* addeth moreover, that vve are shut up and kept under a Schoole-master (which is the law:) not for ever; but to bring us unto Christ, vwho is the end of the law. Therefore this terrifying, this humbling and this shutting up must not alwaies continue: but only untill faith be revealed: That is, it shall so long continue, as shall be for our profit and our salvation: So that vwhen vve are cast downe and humbled by the law, then grace, remission of sinnes, deliverance from the law, sinne and death may become sweet unto us: vvhich are not obtained by vverkes, but are received by faith alone.

The shutting up under the law must not be continuall.

Who useth the law rightly?

He vvhich in time of tentation can joyne these two things together so repugnant and contrary: That is to say, which vwhen hee is throughly terrified and cast downe by the law, doth know that the end of the law; and the beginning of grace or of faith to be revealed,

vealed, is now come, useth the law rightly. All the wicked are utterly ignorant of this knowledge and this cunning: *Caine* knew it not when he was shut up in the prison of the law: That is, he felt no terror, although he had now killed his brother: but dissembled the matter craftily, and thought that God was ignorant thereof. *Am I my brothers keeper* (saith he) But when he heard this word: *What hast thou done? Behold the voyce of the bloud of thy brother cryeth unto me from the earth,* he began to feele this prison indeed. What did he then? He remained still shut up in prison. He joyned not the Gospell with the law, but said: *My punishment is greater then I can beare.* He only respected the prison, not considering that the sin was revealed unto him to this end, that he should fly unto God for mercy and pardon. Therefore he despaired and denied God. Hee beleevved not that hee was shut up to this end, that grace and faith might be revealed unto him; but only that he should still remaine in the prison of the law.

Caine being shut up in the prison of the law, and abiding there despaired. Gen. 4. 9.

Verse. 17.

These words, *to be kept under, and to be shut up,* are not vaine and unprofitable, but most true, and of great importance. This keeping under and this prison signifieth the true and spirituall terrours, whereby the conscience is so shut up, that in the wide world it can finde no place where it may be in safety. Yea as long as these terrours endure, the conscience feeleth such anguish and sorrow, that it thinketh heaven and earth, yea if they were ten times more wide and large then they are, to be straiter and narrower then a Mouse-hole. Here is a man utterly destitute of all wisdom, strength, righteousness, counsell and succour. For the conscience is a marvellous tender thing, and therefore when it is so shut up under the prison of the law, it seeth no way how to get out: and this straitness seemeth daily so to increase, as though it would never have an end. For then doth it feele the wrath of God, which is infinite and inestimable, whose hand it cannot escape, as the Psalme 139. witnesseth: *Whither shall I flee from thy presence? &c.*

What it is to be kept under the law.

Conscience.

Psal. 139. 7.

Like as therefore this worldly prison or shutting up is a bodily affliction, and he that is so shut up can have no use of his body: Even so the trouble and anguish of minde is a spirituall prison, and hee that is shut up in this prison cannot enjoy the quietness of heart and peace of conscience. And yet it is not so

what the prison is, civilly and spirituallly.

for.

Chap. III. . . . Upon the EPISTLE

How the
poore con-
science is to
be comfort-
ed, that is
shut up un-
der the law.

The law kil-
leth that
wee may
againe be
quickned
and restored
to life.

The shut-
ting up un-
der the law
must be
rightly used.

Ezek 33 11.

Psal. 147. 18.
The afflicted
and such as
are in prison
under the
law, waiting
for mercy to
be revealed
are deare
unto God.

for ever (as reason judgeth when it seeleth this prison:) but untill
faith be revealed. The silly consciences therefore must be raised up
and comforted after this sort: Brother, thou art indeed shut up: but
perswade thy selfe that this is not done, to the end that thou shoul-
dest remaine in this prison for ever. For it is written, *that we are shut
up, unto the Faith which shall be revealed.* Thou art then afflicted in this
prison, not to thy destruction, but that thou maiest be refreshed by the
blessed Seed. Thou art killed by the law, that through Christ thou
maiest be quickned again, and restored to life. Despaire not therefore
as *Cain, Saul* and *Judas* did, who being thus shut up, looked no further
but to their dark prison, and there still remained: therefore they de-
spaired. But thou must take another way in these terrours of consci-
ence then they did: That is, thou must know that it is well done,
and good for thee to be so shut up, confounded, and brought to no-
thing. Use therefore this shutting up rightly and as thou shouldest
doe: That is, to the end that when the law hath done his office, faith
may be revealed. For God doth not therefore afflict thee that thou
shouldest still remaine in this affliction. He will not kill thee that
thou shouldest abide in death. *I will not the death* (saith he by the
Prophet) *of a sinner, &c.* But he will afflict thee, that so thou maist
be humbled, and know that thou hast need of mercy, and the benefit
of Christ.

This holding in prison then under the law, must not alwaies
endure, but must only continue to the comming or revealing of
Faith: which this sweet verse of the Psalme 147. doth teach us:
The Lord delighteth in those that feare him: that is to say, which
are in prison under the law. But by and by after he addeth: *And
in those that attend upon his mercie.* Therefore wee must joyne
these two things together; which are indeed as contrary the one
to the other as may be. For what can be more contrary then to
hate and abhorre the wrath of God: and againe to trust in his good-
nesse and mercie? The one is hell, the other is heaven, and yet they
must be neerely joyned together in the heart. By speculation and
naked knowledge a man may easily joyne them together: but by
experience and inward practise so to doe, of all things it is the har-
dest: which I my selfe have often proved by mine owne experi-
ence. Of this matter the Papists and Sectaries know nothing
at all. Therefore these words of *Paul* are to them obscure and al-
together

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Paul describeth the spirituall warfare of the godly, with very vehement and apt words.

in a man of full age the desire and love of glory, and in an old man covetousnesse: even so in a holy and a faithfull man impatiency, murmuring, hatred and blasphemy against God do mightily prevaile. Examples hereof there are many in the *Psalmes*, in *Job*, in *Jeremie*, and throughout the whole Scripture. *Paul* therefore describing and setting forth this spirituall warfare, useth very vehement words and fit for the purpose, as of fighting, rebelling, holding and leading captive, &c.

2. Cor. 12. 7.

This is the spirituall laughter which David speaketh of. *Psalme* 126. saying: *Then shall our mouth be filled with laughter,* &c.

Both these times then (of the law and the Gospell I meane) are in a Christian, as touching the affections and inward man. The time of the law is when the law exerciseth me, tormenteth me with heaviness of heart, oppresseth me, bringeth me to the knowledge of sinne, and increaseth the same. Here the law is in his true use and perfect work: which a Christian oftentimes feeleth as long as he liveth. So there was given unto *Paul* a prick in the flesh, that is, the Angell of Satan to buffet him. He would gladly have felt every moment the joy of conscience, the laughter of the heart, and the sweet taste of eternall life. Againe, he would gladly have beene delivered from all trouble and anguish of spirit, and therefore he desired that this tentation might be taken from him. Notwithstanding this was not done, but the Lord said unto him: *My grace is sufficient for thee: For my power is made perfect through weakenesse.* This battaile doth every Christian feele. To speake of my selfe, there are many howres in the which I chide and contend with God, and impatiently resist him. The wrath and judgement of God displeaseth me: and againe, my impatiency, my murmuring, and such like sins do displease him. And this is the time of the law, under the which a Christian man continually liveth as touching the flesh. *For the flesh lusteth continually against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh:* but in some more, and in some lesse.

Gal. 5. 17.

The time of grace

Psal. 42. 5. 11.

The time of grace is, when the heart is raised up againe by the promise of the free mercy of God, and saith: *Why art thou heauie O my soule, and why dost thou trouble me?* Dost thou see nothing, but the law, sinne, terrour, heaviness, desperation, death, heil and the diuell? Is there not also grace, remission of sinnes, righteousness, consolation, joy, peace, life, heaven, Christ and God? Trouble me no more O my soule. What is the law, what is sinne, what are all evils in comparison of these things? Trust in God, who

who hath not spared his own deare Son, but hath given him to the death of the crosse for thy sins. This is then to be shut up under the law after the flesh, not for ever, but till Christ be revealed. Therefore when thou art beaten downe, tormented and afflicted by the law, then say; Lady law, thou art not alone, neither art thou all things: but besides thee there are yet other things much greater and better then thou art, namely grace, faith and blessing. This grace, this faith, and this blessing do not accuse me, terrifie me, condemne me: but they comfort me, they bid me trust in the Lord, and promise unto me victory and salvation in Christ. There is no cause therefore why I should despaire.

The true use of the law is to shut us up, till Christ be revealed.

He that is skillfull in this art and this cunning, may indeed be called a right Divine. The fantasticall spirits and their disciples at this day, which continually bragge of the Spirit, do perswade themselves that they are very expert and cunning herein. But I and such as I am have scarcely learned the first principles thereof. It is learned indeed, but so long as the flesh and sin do endure, it can never be perfectly learned and as it should be. So then a Christian is divided into two times. In that he is flesh, he is under the law: in that he is spirit, he is under grace. Concupiscence, covetousnesse, ambition and pride do alwayes cleave to the flesh, also ignorance, contempt of God, impatience, murmuring and grudging against God, because he hindreth and breaketh off our counsels, our devices and enterprises, and because he speedily punisheth not such as are wicked, rebellious and contemptuous persons, &c. Such manner of sins are rooted in the flesh of the faithfull. Wherefore, if thou behold nothing but the flesh, thou shalt abide alwayes under the time of the law. But these dayes must be shortned, or else no flesh should be saved. The law must have his time appointed, wherein it must have his end. The time of the law therefore is not perpetuall, but hath his end, which end is Jesus Christ. But the time of grace is eternall. For Christ being once dead, dieth no more. He is eternall: therefore the time of grace is also eternall.

Who is a right divine.

A sodly man is partly under the law, and partly under grace.

The time of grace is eternall. Rom. 6 9.

Such notable sentences in *Paul*, we may not lightly passe over, as the Papists and Sectaries are wont to do. For they containe words of life, which do wonderfully comfort and confirme afflicted consciences: and they which know and understand them well, can judge of faith, they can discern a true feare from a false

Feare may not alwayes continue, but feare ioyned with faith must be alwayes in a Christian.

* How feare must be vanquished.

Feare and faith are separated far a sunder, and yet are ioyned together in one heart.

A rehearsal of those things whereof he had spoken before.

Touching this sedition of the rustical people, and the cause thereof, reade Sleidan.

feare: they can judge of all inward affections of the heart, and discern all spirits. The feare of God is an holy and a precious thing, but it must not alwayes continue. Indeed it ought to be alwayes in a Christian, because sinne is alwayes in him: but it must not be alone: for then it is the feare of *Cain*, *Saul* and *Judas*, that is to say, a servile and a desperate feare. * A Christian therefore must vanquish feare by faith in the word of grace. He must turne away his eyes from the time of the law, and looke unto Christ and unto faith which is to be revealed. Here beginneth feare to be sweet unto us, and maketh us to delight in God. For if a man do onely behold the law and sin, setting faith aside, he shall never be able to put away feare, but shall at length fall to desperation.

Thus doth *Paul* very well distinguish the time of the law and grace. Let us also learne rightly to distinguish the time of them both, not in words, but in the inward affection: which is a very hard matter. For albeit these two things are separate far asunder, yet are they most neerely joyned together in one heart. Nothing is more neerely joyned together then feare and trust, then the law and the Gospell, then sin and grace. For they are so united together, that the one is swallowed up of the other. Wherefore there is no conjunction like unto this.

At this place, *Wherefore then serveth the law?* *Paul* began to dispute of the law: also of the use and the abuse thereof; taking occasion of that which before he had affirmed, that the faithful do obtaine righteousness by grace onely, and by the promise, and not by the law. Upon that disputation rose this question: *Wherefore then serveth the law?* For reason hearing that righteousness or the blessing is obtained by grace and by the promise, by and by inferreth: then the law profiteth nothing. Wherefore the doctrine of the law must be diligently considered, that we may know what and how we ought to judge thereof, lest that either we reject the same altogether, as the fantastical spirits do (which in the yeare, a thousand five hundred twenty and five, stirring up the rustical people to sedition, said, that the liberty of the Gospell giveth freedom to all men from all manner of lawes:) or else lest we should attribute the force of justification to the law. For both sorts do offend against the law: the one on the right hand, which will be justified by the law; and the other on the left hand, which will be cleane delivered from the law. We must there-

fore

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Chap. III. [Upon the E P I S T L E]

1 Pet. 2.16. the doctrine of the Gospell, do dreame that the Christian liberty is a dissolute and a carnall liberty, to do whatsoever they list. These (as Peter saith) have the liberty of the spirit, as a cloake of malicioufnes, through which the name of God and the Gospell of Christ is slandered every where, and therefore they shall once suffer worthy punishment for this their ungodlines. Thirdly, such do also abate the law, who feeling the terrours therof, do not understand that such terrours ought no longer to continue, but unto Christ. This abuse in them is the cause that they fall to desperation; as in the hypocrites it is the cause of arrogancy and presumption.

The true use of the law cannot be esteemed as it is worthy.

The true office of the law.

Contrariwise, the true use of the law can never be esteemed and magnified as it is worthy, namely, that when the conscience shut up under the law, despaireth not, but being instructed by the wisdom of the holy Ghost, concludeth with it selfe after this sort: I am indeed shut up as a prisoner under the law, but not for ever: yea this shutting up shall turne to my great profit. How so? Because that I being thus shut up, shall be driven to sigh and seeke the hand of an helper, &c. After this manner the law is as an inforcer, which by compulsion bringeth the hungry unto Christ, that he may satisfie them with his good things. Wherefore the true office of the law is to shew unto us our sins, to make us guilty, to humble us, to kill us and to bring us downe to hell, and finally to take from us all helpe, all succour, all comfort: but yet altogether to this end, that we may be justified, exalted, quickned to life, carried up into heaven, and obtaine all good things. Therefore it doth not only kill, but it killeth that we may live.

Verse 2.4. Wherefore the law was our Schoole-master to bring us to Christ.

The similitude of the Schoolemaster, worthy to be noted.

Here againe hee joyneth the law and the Gospell together, (which are separate so farre asunder) as touching the affections and inward man, when he saith: the law is a Schoole-master to Christ. This similitude also of the Schoole-master is worthy to be noted. Although a Schoole-master be very profitable and necessary to instruct and to bring up children, yet shew me one childe or schollar which loveth his master. What love and obedience the Jewes shewed unto their Moses, it appeareth in that every houre (as

(as the history witnesseth) they would with all their hearts have stoned him to death. It is not possible therefore that the Schollar should love his master. For how can he love him which keepeth him in prison, that is to say, which suffereth him not to do that which gladly he would? And if he do any thing against his commandement, by and by he is rebuked and chastised, yea and is constrained moreover to kisse the rod when he is beaten. Is not this (I pray you) a goodly righteousness and obedience of the Schollar; that he obeyeth his master so severely threatning and so sharply correcting him, and kisseth the rod? But doth he this with a good will? As soon as his master hath turned his back, he breaketh the rod, or casteth it into the fire. And if he had any power over his master, he would not suffer himself to be beaten of him, but rather he would beat him. And yet notwithstanding the school-master is very necessary for the child, to instruct and to chastise him: otherwise the child without his discipline, instruction and good education, should be utterly lost.

The schollar cannot love his master.

The School-master therefore is appointed for the child, to teach him, to bring him up, and to keep him, as it were in prison. But to what end or how long? Is it to the end that this strait and sharp dealing of the School-master should alwaies continue? or that the child should remaine in continuall bondage? Not so, but only for a time, that this obedience, this prison and correction might turne to the profit of the child, that when the time cometh, he might be his fathers heire. For it is not the fathers will, that his son should be alwaies subject to the School-master, and alwaies beaten with rods: but that by his instruction and discipline he might be made able and meet to be his fathers successour.

Why a Schoolemaster is appointed for a childe.

Even so the law (saith Paul) is nothing else but a Schoole-master: Not for ever, but untill it have brought us to Christ: as in other words he said also before: *The law was given for transgressions, untill the blessed Seede should come. Also, The Scripture hath shut all under sinne, &c. Againe: Wee were kept under and shut up unto Faith which should after be revealed.* Wherefore the law is not only a School-master, but it is a Schoole-master to bring us unto Christ. For what a Schoole-master were he which would alwaies torment and beat the childe, and teach him nothing at all? And yet such School-masters there were in time past, when Schooles were nothing else but a prison and a very hell, the Schoole-

The law is a schoolemaster to Chast

What Schoolemasters there

were in
times past.

masters cruell tyrants and very butchers. The children vvere alwaies beaten, they learned vwith continuall paine and travell, and yet few of them came to any prooffe. The law is not such a School-master. For it doth not only terrifie and torment (as the foolish Schoole-master beateth his Schollers and teacheth them nothing:) but with his rods he driveth us unto Christ: like as a good Schoole-master instructeth and exerciseth his Schollars in reading and writing; to the end they may come to the knowledge of good letters and other profitable things, that afterwards they may have a delight in doing that, which before when they were constrained thereunto, they did against their vvils.

The true use
of the law
set out in
the allegorie
of the
Schoolema-
ster.

By this goodly similitude, *Paul* sheweth what is the true use of the law, namely, that it justifieth not hypocrites, for they remaine vwith- out Christ in their presumption and security: and contrariwise, that it leaveth not in death and damnation those that are of a contrite heart (so that they use it as *Paul* teacheth) but driveth them unto Christ. But they which in these terrours continue still in their weaknes, and do not apprehend Christ by faith, do fall at length into desperation. *Paul* therefore in this allegory of the School-master, most lively expres- seth the true use of the law. For like as the Schoole-master reproveth his Schollers, grieveth them and maketh them heavy, and yet not to the end that this bondage should alwaies continue, but that it should cease when the children are well brought up and instructed accordingly, and that afterwards without any constraint of the Schoole-master, they should chearfully enjoy their liberty and their fathers goods: even so they which are vexed and oppressed with the law, do know that these terrours and vexations shall not alwaies continue, but that thereby they are prepared to come unto Christ which is to be revealed, and so to receive the liberty of the spirit, &c.

Verse 24. *That we might be made righteous by Faith.*

The law is
not a school-
master to
bring us to
another
law giver,
but to
Christ.

The law is not a School-master to bring us unto another law- giver which requireth good workes, but unto Christ our justifier and Saviour, that by faith in him we might be justified, and not by workes. But when a man feelth the force and strength of the law, he doth not understand nor beleve this. Therefore he saith: I have lived wickedly; for I have transgressed all the commande-
ments

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

the office
thereof.

that by this accusing and bruising, it may drive him unto Christ the Saviour and comforter. When this is done, he is no longer under the School-master. And this use is very necessary. For seeing the whole world is over-whelmed with sin, it hath need of this ministry of the law, that sin may be revealed: otherwise no man should ever attaine to righteousness, as before we have largely declared. But what worketh the law in them that are already justified by Christ? *Paul* answereth by these words: which are as it were an addition to that which goeth before.

Verse 25. *But after that Faith is come, We are no longer under the School-master.*

When faith
is come, we
are not any
longer un-
der the law.

That is to say: we are free from the law, from the prison, and from our School-master: for when faith is revealed, the law terrifieth and tormenteth us no more. *Paul* here speaketh of faith as it was preached and published unto the world by Christ in the time before appointed: For Christ taking upon him our flesh, came once into the world: he abolished the law with all his effects, and delivered from eternall death all those which receive his benefit by faith. If therefore ye look unto Christ and that which he hath done, there is now no law. For he coming in the time appointed, tooke away the law. Now, since the law is gone, we are not kept under the tyranny thereof any more: but we live in joy and safety under Christ, who now sweetly reigneth in us by his Spirit. Now, where the Lord reigneth, there is liberty. Wherefore, if we could perfectly apprehend Christ which hath abolished the law by his death, and hath reconciled us unto his Father, that School-master should have no power over us at all. But the law of the members rebelling against the law of the mind, letteth us that we cannot perfectly lay hold upon Christ. The lacke therefore is not in Christ, but in us, which have not yet put off this flesh, to the which sin continually cleaveth as long as we live. Wherefore, as touching our selves, we are partly free from the law, and partly under the law. According to the spirit, we serve with *Paul* the law of God: but according to the flesh, the law of sin, *Rom. 7.*

Hereof it followeth, that as touching the conscience we are fully delivered from the law, and therefore that Schoole-master must not rule in it, that is, he must not afflicte it with his terrours, threatenings

nings and captivity. And albeit it goe about so to doe never so much, yet is not the conscience moved therewith. For it hath Christ crucified before her eyes, who hath removed all the offices of the law out of the conscience: putting out the hand-writing of ordinances that was against us, &c. *Coloss. 2.* Therefore, even as a Virgin knoweth no man: so the conscience must not only be ignorant of the law, but also it must be utterly dead unto the law, and the law likewise unto the conscience. This is not done by any workes, or by the righteousnesse of the law, but by faith which apprehendeth and layeth hold upon Christ. Notwithstanding sinne cleaveth still in the flesh as touching the effect thereof, which oftentimes accuseth and troubleth the conscience. So long then as the flesh doth remaine, so long this Schoole-master the law, doth also remaine, which many times terrifieth the conscience, and maketh it heavy by revealing of sinne and threatning of death. Yet is it raised up againe by the daily comming of Christ: who as he came once into the world in the time before appointed, to redeeme us from the hard and sharpe servitude of our School-master: even so he commeth daily unto us spiritually, to the end that we may increase in faith and in the knowledge of him, that the conscience may apprehend him more fully and perfectly from day to day; and that the law of the flesh and of sinne with the terrour of death and all evils that the law bringeth with it, may daily be diminished in us more and more. As long then as we live in the flesh, which is not without sin, the law oftentimes returneth and doth his office, in one more and in another lesse, as their faith is strong or weak, and yet not to their destruction, but to their salvation. For this is the exercise of the law in the Saints, namely the continuall mortification of the flesh, of reason and of our own strength, and the daily renewing of our inward man, as it is said in the *2. Cor. 4.*

By faith in Christ wee are dead to the law.

Christ cometh daily unto us spiritually.

A similitude of the leaven.

The faithful are holy and yet sinners.

We receive then the first fruits of the Spirit: the leaven is hid in the masse of the dough: but all the dough is not yet leavened: no it is yet but only begun to be leavened. If I behold the leaven, I see nothing else but pure leaven. But if I behold the whole masse, I see that it is not all pure leaven: That is to say, If I behold Christ, I am altogether pure and holy, knowing nothing at all of the law: for Christ is my leaven. But if I behold mine owne flesh, I feele in my selfe covetousnesse, lust, anger, pride and arrogancy:

gancie: also the feare of death, heavines, hatred, murmuring and impatience against God. The more these sins are in me, the more is Christ absent from me, or if he be present, he is felt but a little. Here have we need of a School-master to exercise and vex this strong Ass the flesh, that by this exercise sins may be diminished and a way prepared unto Christ. For as Christ came once corporally at the time appointed, abolished the whole law, vanquished sin, destroyed death and hell: even so he cometh spiritually without ceasing, and daily quencheth and killeth these sins in us.

The Spirit
all coming
of Christ.

How far
forth the
law is abo-
lished.

This I say, that thou mayest be able to answer, if any shall thus object: Christ came into the world, and at once tooke away all our finnes, and cleansed us by his blood: what need wee then to heare the Gospell, or to receive the Sacraments? True it is, that in as much as thou beholdest Christ, the law and sinne are quite abolished. But Christ is not yet come unto thee: or if he be come, yet notwithstanding there are remnants of sinne in thee: thou art not yet thoroughly leavened. For where concupiscence, heavinesse of spirit, and feare of death is, there is yet also the law and sinne. Christ is not yet thoroughly come: but when he cometh indeed, he driveth away feare and heavinesse, and bringeth peace and quietnesse of conscience. So farre forth then as I do apprehend Christ by faith, so much is the law abolished unto me. But my flesh; the world, and the devill doe hinder faith in me, that it cannot be perfect. Right gladly I would that that little light of faith which is in my heart, were spread throughout all my body, and all the members thereof: but it is not done: it is not by and by spread, but onely beginneth to be spread. In the meane season this is our consolation, that we having the first fruits of the Spirit, doe now begin to be leavened. But we shall be thoroughly leavened when this body of sin is dissolved, and we shall rise new creatures wholly, together with Christ.

The consolati-
on of the
godly.

Heb 13.8.

Heb 13.8.

Albeit then that Christ be one and the same yesterday, to day, and shall be for ever, and albeit that all the faithfull which were before Christ, had the Gospell and faith: yet notwithstanding Christ came once in the time before determined. Faith also came once when the Apostles preached and published the Gospell throughout the world. Moreover, Christ cometh also spiritually, every day. Faith likewise cometh daily by the word of the Gospell.

Now,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

follow Christ: that is, follow the example and vertues of Christ. Do that which he did, and suffer that which he suffered. And in the 1 Pet. 2. *Christ hath suffered for us, leaving us an example that we should follow his steps.* Now we see in Christ a wonderfull patience, an inestimable mildnesse and love, and a wonderfull modestie in all things. This goodly apparell we must put on, that is to say, follow these vertues.

To put on
Christ ac-
cording to
the Gospell.

The lether
coate of A-
dam,

How the old
man must
be put off.

In baptisme
we put on
Christ,

But the putting on of Christ according to the Gospell, consisteth not in imitation, but in a new birth and a new creation: that is to say, in putting on Christs innocencie, his righteousness, his wisdom, his power, his saving health, his life and his Spirit. We are cloathed with the lether coate of *Adam*, which is a mortall garment, and a garment of sinne: that is to say, we are all subject unto sin, all sold under sin: There is in us horrible blindnesse, ignorance, contempt and hatred of God: moreover, evill concupiscence, uncleannes, covetousnesse, &c. This garment, that is to say, this corrupt and sinfull nature we received from *Adam*, which *Paul* is wont to call the old man. This old man must be put off with all his workes, *Ephes. 4. Colos. 1.* that of the children of *Adam* we may be made the children of God. This is not done by changing of a garment, or by any laws or workes, but by a new birth, and by the renewing of the inward man, which is done in baptisme, as *Paul* saith: *All ye that are baptized, have put on Christ.* Also: *According to his mercy hath he saved us, by the washing of the new birth, and the renewing of the holy Ghost, Tit. 3.* For besides that they which are baptized, are regenerate and renewed by the holy Ghost to a heavenly righteousness and to eternal life, there riseth in them also a new light and a new flame: there rise in them new and holy affections, as the feare of God, true faith and assured hope, &c. There beginneth in them also a new will. And this is to put on Christ truly and according to the Gospell.

Therefore the righteousness of the law or of our owne workes is not given unto us in baptisme: but Christ himselfe is our garment. Now Christ is no law, no law-giver, no worke: but a divine and an inestimable gift, whom God hath given unto us, that he might be our justifier, our Saviour and our redeemer. Wherefore to be apparelled with Christ according to the Gospell, is not to be apparelled with the law or with workes, but with an incomparable gift: that is to say, with remission of sinnes, righteousness,

peace,

peace, consolation, joy of spirit, salvation, life, and Christ himself.

This is diligently to be noted, because of the fond and fantastical spirits, which go about to deface the majesty of Baptisme, and speake wickedly of it. *Paul* contrariwise commendeth and setteth it forth with honourable titles, calling it, *the washing of the new birth, the renewing of the Holy Ghost, Tit. 3.* And here also he saith, that all they which are baptized, have put on Christ. As if he said: Ye are carried out of the law into a new birth, which is wrought in baptisme. Therefore ye are not now any longer under the law, but ye are clothed with a new garment: to wit, with the righteousness of Christ. Wherefore baptisme is a thing of great force and efficacy. Now, when we are apparelled with Christ, as with the robe of our righteousness and salvation, then we must put on Christ also as the apparel of imitation and example. These things I have handled more largely in another place, therefore I here briefly passe them over.

The Anabaptists deface the majesty of baptisme.

Verse 28. *There is neither Jew nor Grecian, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for yee are all one in Christ Jesus.*

Here might be added moreover many more names of persons and offices which are ordained of God, as these: there is neither Magistrate nor subject, neither teacher nor hearer, neither school-master nor scholar, neither master nor servant, neither mistress nor maid, &c. for in Christ Jesus all states, yea even such as are ordained of God, are nothing. Indeed the male, the female, the bond, the free, the Jew, the Gentile, the Prince, the subject, are the good creatures of God: but in Christ, that is, in the matter of salvation, they are nothing, with all their wisdom, righteousness, religion and power.

Wherefore, with these words, *There is neither Jew, &c.* *Paul* mightily abolisheth the law. For here, that is, when a man is renewed by baptisme, and hath put on Christ, there is neither *Jew* nor *Grecian*, &c. The Apostle speaketh not here of the *Jew* according to his nature and substance: but hee calleth him a *Jew* which is the disciple of *Moses*, is subject to the law, is circumcised and with all his endeavour keepeth the Ceremonies commanded in the law. Where Christ is put on (saith he) there is neither *Jew*, nor circumcision, nor ceremonie of the law any more: for
Christ:

There is neither Jew nor Grecian &c.

Christ hath
taken away
the law.
*The belie-
ving consci-
ence know-
eth no law.

John. 1. 17.

The wise-
dome and
righteous-
nes of the
Gentiles
reieced.

The Gentiles
in all ages
had their
lawes, religi-
ons and ce-
remonies.

Christ hath abolished all the laws of *Moses* that ever were. Wherefore the * conscience believing in Christ, must be so surely perswaded that the law is abolished, with all his terrours and threatnings, that it should be utterly ignorant whether there were ever any *Moses*, any law, or any Jew. For Christ and *Moses* can in no wise agree. *Moses* came with the law, with many works, and with many ceremonies: but Christ came without any law, without any exacting of works, giving grace and righteousness, &c. *For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.*

Moreover when he saith: *Nor Grecian*, he also rejecteth and condemneth the wisdom and righteousness of the Gentiles. For among the Gentiles there were many notable men, as *Xenophon*, *Themistocles*, *Marcus Fabius*, *Attilius Regulus*, *Cicero*, *Pomponius Atticus*, and many others, which being endued with singular virtues, governed common-weales excellently, and did many worthy acts for the preservation thereof: and yet all these were nothing before God, with their wisdom, their power, their notable acts, their excellent virtues, lawes, religions and ceremonies: For we must not thinke that the Gentiles did contemne all honesty and religion. Yea all nations of all ages dispersed throughout the world had their lawes, religions and ceremonies, without the which it is not possible that mankind should be governed. All righteousness therefore concerning either the government of families, or common weales, or divine matters (as was the righteousness of the law) with all the obedience, execution and holiness thereof, be it never so perfect, is nothing worth before God. What then? The garment of Christ which we put on in baptisme.

So, if the servant do his duty, obey his master, serve in his vocation never so diligently and faithfully: if he that is at liberty be in authority and governe the common wealth, or guide his own family honestly and with praise: if the man doe that pertaineth to the man in marrying a wife, in governing his family, in obeying the Magistrate, in behaving himselfe decently towards all men: if the woman live chastely, obey her husband, see well to her household, bring up her children godly (which are indeed excellent gifts and holy works:) yet are all these nothing in comparison of that righteousness which is before God. To be brieve all the lawes, ceremonies, religions, righteousness and workes in the whole

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

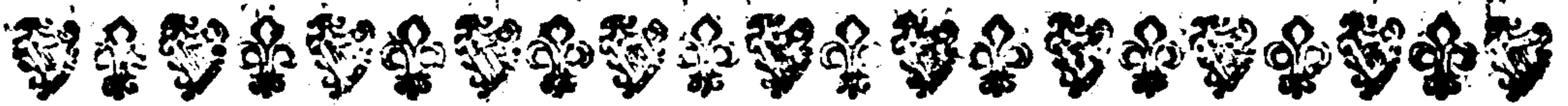
Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

ny Nations; and that he should be the heire, not of one kingdom, but of all the world, *Rom. 4.* So the glory of the whole kingdome of Christ is translated unto us. Wherefore all laws are utterly abolished in the heart and conscience of a Christian: notwithstanding they remaine without still in the flesh. And hereof we have spoken largely before.



The fourth Chapter.

Verse 1. This I say, that the heire - as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be Lord of all.

Verse 2. But is under tutors and governours untill the time appointed of the Father.

The argument where with Paul fortifieth his matter.



WE see with what vehement affection *Paul* goeth about to call back the *Galathians*, and what strong arguments he useth in debating the matter, gathering similitudes of experience, of the example of *Abraham*, of the testimonies of the Scripture, and of the time, so that oftentimes he seemeth to renew the whole matter againe. For before, he had in a manner finished the disputation concerning justification, concluding, that a man is justified before God by faith, onely and alone; but because he calleth also to remembrance this politicall example of the little heire, he bringeth the same also for the confirmation of his matter. Thus trying every way, he lieth in waite with a certaine holy subtilty to take the *Galathians* unawares. For the ignorant people are sooner perswaded with similitudes and examples, then with deep and subtill disputations. They will rather behold an image well painted, then a book well written. *Paul* therefore now, after that he hath brought the similitude of a mans testament, of the prison, of the Schoole-master, useth also this similitude of an heire (which is familiar and well known to all men) to move and to perswade them. And surely it is a very profitable thing to be furnished with similitudes and examples, which not only *Paul*, but also the Prophets, and Christ himselfe also did often use.

Christ and the Apostles used examples and similitudes.

Ye see (saith he) that it is ordained by the civill lawes, that an heire, albeit he be the Lord of all his fathers goods, differeth not from a servant. Indeed he hath an assured hope of the inheritanee: but before he come to his yeares, his tutors hold him in subjection, like as the Schoolemaster doth his scholler. They commit not unto him the ordering of his own goods, but constraine him to serve, so that he is kept and maintained with his own goods like a servant. Therefore as long as this bondage endureth, that is, so long as he is under tutors and governours, he differeth nothing from a servant. And this subjection and servitude is very profitable for him: for otherwise through folly he would soon walte all his goods. This captivity endureth not alwaies, but hath a certain time limited and appointed by the Father, wherein it must end.

A young heire differeth nothing from a servant.

Verse 3. So also we as long as we were children, were in bondage under the rudiments of the world.

In like manner when we were little children we were heires, having the promise of the inheritance to come, which should be given unto us by the seed of *Abraham*, that is to say, by *Christ*, in whom all nations should be blessed. But because the fulnesse of time was not yet come, *Moses* our tutour, governour and schoolemaster came, holding us in captivity with our hands bound, so that we could beare no rule, nor possesse our inheritance. In the mean time notwithstanding, like as an heire is nourished and maintained in hope of liberty to come: even so *Moses* did nourish us with the hope of the promise to be revealed in the time appointed: to wit, when *Christ* should come, who by his coming should put an end to the time of the law, and begin the time of grace.

In the time of the law we were under *Moses* as under a tutour.

Now the time of the law endeth two manner of wayes: First (as I said) by the coming of *CHRIST* in the flesh at the time appointed of his Father. But when the fulnesse of time was come, *GOD* sent forth his Sonne, made of a woman, and made under the law, that he might redeeme them which were under the law, &c. He entred into the holy Sanctuary once through his blood, and obtained eternall redemption for us. Moreover, the same *Christ* who came once in the time appointed, cometh also unto us daily and hourly in spirit. Indeed once with his own blood he redeemed and sanctified all: But because we are not yet perfectly pure

The time of the law is finished. Gal. 4. 4. 5.

Heb. 9. 21. The coming of *Christ* unto us in spirit. Heb. 10. 14.

Gal. 5. 17.

(for the remnants of sinne do yet cleave in our flesh, which striveth against the spirit) therefore daily he cometh unto us spiritually, and continually more and more accomplisheth the appointed time of his Father, abrogating and abolishing the law.

The fathers of the old Testament were saved by faith in Christ even as we are.

So he came also in spirit to the fathers of the old Testament before he appeared in the flesh. They had Christ in spirit. They beleeved in Christ which should be revealed, as we beleeve in Christ which is now revealed, and were saved by him, as we are, according to that saying: *Jesus Christ is one, yesterday, and to day, and shall be the same for ever.* Yesterday, before the time of his coming in the flesh. To day, when he was revealed in the time before appointed. Now and for ever he is one and the same Christ: for even by him only and alone all the faithfull which either have beene, be, or shall be, are delivered from the law, justified and saved.

The politick use of the law.

The spirituall use of the law.

In like manner wee also (saith he) when wee were children, served under the rudiments of the world, that is to say, the law had dominion over us, oppressed us and kept us in a streit bondage, as servants and captives. For first, it restrained carnall and rebellious persons that they should not runne headlong into all kinds of vice. For the law threatneth punishment to transgressors, which if they feared not, there is no mischief which they would not commit: and over those whom the law so bridleth, it ruleth and reigneth. Againe, it did accuse us, terrifie us, kill us, and condemne us spiritually and before God: and this was the principall dominion that the law had over us. Therefore like as an heire is subject unto his tutors, is beaten, and is compelled to obey their laws, and diligently to execute their commandements: even so mens consciences, before Christ comes, are oppressed with the sharpe servitude of the law: that is to say, they are accused, terrified, and condemned of the law. But this dominion, or rather this tyranny of the law, is not continuall, but must only endure untill the time of grace. Wherefore the office of the law is to reprove and to increase sinnes, not to bring righteousness: to kill, not to bring life. For the law is a Schoolemaster unto Christ. Like as therefore the tutors doe handle the heire being yet a child, streitly and hardly, rule him and command him as a servant, and he againe is constrained to be subject unto them: even so the law accuseth us, humbleth us, and bringeth us into bondage, that we may be the servants

Gal. 3. 20.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Chap. III. . . Upon the E P I S T L E . . .

Pauls māner
of speaking
1 Cor 3 6, 7, 9
1 Cor. 15. 56.

Wherefore
Paul abateh
the law.

The elemēts
of the world

The righte-
ousnesse of
the flesh and
of the world.

Where sinne
death, and
the wrath of
God is felt,
there is no
righteousnes
as touching
the law:
but as

And his words seeme to be very hereticall. So is he wont in other places also to diminish and to abase the authority of the law very much, when he calleth it the letter that killeth, the ministry of death and damnation, and the power of sin. And these most odious names, which shew plainly the power & use of the law, he chooseth of purpose, to admonish us that in the terrours of sin, wrath and the judgement of God, we trust not to our own righteousness, or to the righteousness of the law, seeing that the law in his principall use, can do nothing else but accuse our consciences, increase sin, threaten death and eternall damnation. Wherefore this diminishing and abasing of the law must be applied to the conflict of conscience, and not to the civill life, nor to secure and careless minds.

He calleth therefore the law, the elements of the world, that is to say, the outward lawes and traditions written in a certaine booke. For although the law do civilly bridle a man from evill, & constrain him to do well, yet notwithstanding being kept after this sort, it doth not deliver him from sin, it justifieth him not, it prepareth not a way for him to heaven, but leaveth him in the world. I do not obtaine righteousness and everlasting life because I kill not, I commit not adultery, I do not steale, &c. These outward vertues and honest conversation be not the kingdome of Christ, nor the heavenly righteousness, but the righteousness of the flesh and of the world: which also the Gentiles had, and not only the meritmongers, as in the time of Christ the Pharisees, and in our time the Monkes and Friars, &c. This righteousness some do observe to avoid the punishments of the law: some that they may be praised of men and esteemed righteous, constant and patient, and therefore it is rather to be called coloured hypocrisie, then righteousness.

Moreover, the law when it is in his principall use and office, can do nothing but accuse, terrifie, condemne and kill. But where such terrour, such feeling of sinne, of death, of the wrath and judgement of God is, there is no righteousness, no divine or heavenly thing, but all these are meere things of the world: which (because it is the kingdome of the devill) is nothing else but a certaine puddle of sin, of death, of hell, and of all evils, which the fearfull, sorrowfull and heavy hearted do feele, but the secure and carelessse contempters do not feele them. Wherefore the law even in his best and most perfect use, doth nothing else but reveale and increase sinne, and strike into

into us the terror of death, and these are but worldly things. We see then that the law giveth no lively, no healthfull, no divine or heavenly thing; but only worldly things: Wherefore *Paul* doth very fitly call the law the elements or rudiments of the world.

touching
Christ there
is righteous-
ness and life

And although *Paul* call the whole law the rudiments of the world (as may appear by that I have said before) yet principally he speaketh thus in contempt of the ceremoniall lawes: which although they profit never so much, yet (saith he) they consist only in outward things, as meate, drinke, apparell, places, times, the temple, the feastes, washings, the sacrifices, &c. which be but meere worldly, and things ordained of God only for the use of this present life, but not to justify or save before God. Therefore by this clause, *The rudiments of the world*, he rejecteth and condemneth the righteousness of the law, which consisteth in these outward ceremonies, being notwithstanding ordained and commanded of God to be observed for a time, and by a contemptible name calleth it the rudiments of the world: So the Emperours lawes be rudiments of the world, for they intreat of worldly matters, that is to say, of things concerning this present life, as of goods, possessions, inheritances, murders, adulteries, robberies; &c. whereof speaketh also the second table of the Commandements. As for the Popes Canon lawes, and Decretals, which forbid marriage and meates, those *Paul* in another place calleth the doctrines of Devils: which are also rudiments of the world, but that they do most wickedly bind mens consciences to the observation of outward things, contrary to the word of God and faith.

The lawes
of the Cere-
monies.

The Emper-
ours lawes.

The lawes of
the Pope.

1 Tim. 4. 1.

Wherefore the law of *Moses* giveth nothing but worldly things, that is to say, it doth onely shew civilly and spiri-
tually the evils that be in the world. Notwithstanding, if it be in his true use, it driveth the conscience by his terrors to seeke and thirst after the promise of God, and to looke unto Christ. But that thou mayest so doe, thou hast neede of the aide and assistance of the holy Ghost, which may say in thy heart: It is not the will of God, that after the law hath done his office in thee, thou shouldest only be terrified and killed: but that when thou art brought by the law to the knowledge of thy misery and damnation, thou shouldest not despaire but believe in Christ, who is the end of the law to righteousness, to every one that believeth. Here is no worldly thing done, but here

The law of
Moses gi-
veth only
worldly
things.

By the com-
fort of the
holy Ghost
we are deli-
vered from
the terrors
of the law.
Rom. 10. 4.

all

all worldly matters and all lawes cease, and heavenly things begin now to appeare. Therefore so long as we be under the rudiments of the world : that is to say, under the law, which giveth not only no righteousnesse and peace of conscience, but revealeth and increaseth sinnes, and ingendreth wrath, we be servants, thrall and subject to the law, although we have the promise of the blessing to come. Indeed the law saith : *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God* : but that I may be able so to do, or to apprehend Christ, this cannot the law give.

Rom. 3. 20.
Rom. 4. 15.

Deut. 6. 5.

Wherefore
Paul abaseth
the law.

When wee
feele the
terrours of
conscience,
the law must
be abated,
and the pro-
mise magni-
fied.

He alludeth
to the slow
tongue, and
stammering
speech of
Moses
Rom 4. 18.

What names
Paul giveth
to the law.
1 Cor. 13. 56.

I speake not this to the end that the law should be despised, neither doth Paul so meane, but it ought to be had in great estimation. But because Paul is here in the matter of Justification, it was necessary that he should speake of the law, as of a thing very contemptible and odious. For justification is a far other manner of thing then the law is. We cannot speake basely and contemptuously enough of the law when we are in this matter. When the conscience therefore is in the conflict, then should it think upon nothing, know nothing at all but Christ onely and alone. Then should it remove the law utterly out of her sight, and embrace nothing but the promise concerning Christ. To say this, it is an easie matter : but in the time of tentation when the conscience wrestleth in the presence of God, to do it indeed, of all things it is the hardest: to wit, that when the law accuseth thee, terrifieth thee, revealeth unto thee thy sin, threatneth the wrath of God, and eternall death, that then (I say) thou shouldest have such strength of faith in Christ, as if there had never been any law or any sin, but only Christ, meere grace and redemption : or that thou shouldest be able to say : O law, I will not heare thee, for thou hast a stammering and a slow tongue : moreover, the fulnesse of time is now come, and therefore I am free, and will not suffer thy tyranny any longer. Here a man may see how hard a matter it is to separate the law from grace : Againe, how divine and heavenly a thing it is to hope here even against hope, and how true this proposition of Paul is, that we are justified by faith alone.

Learn here therefore to speake of the law as contemptuously as thou canst in the matter of justification, by the example of the Apostle, which calleth the law the rudiments of the world, pernicious traditions, the strength of sinne, the ministry of death, &c. For if thou suffer the law to beate rule in thy conscience : when thou

stan-

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

The law is
holy & righ-
teous, & yet
it is the ad-
ministration
of death.

the law; which is a divine doctrine revealed from heaven? To this *Paul* answereth, that the law is both holy, just and good, and that it is also the ministry of sin and death, but in divers respects. Before *Christ* it is holy: after *Christ* it is death. Therefore when *Christ* is come, we ought to know nothing at all of the law, unlesse it be in this respect, that it hath power and dominion over the flesh, to bridle it & to keep it under. Here is a conflict between the law and the flesh (to whom the yoke of the law is hard and grievous) as long as we live.

2 Cor. 3:6.

Paul's man-
ner of speak-
ing must
be marked.
Act. 19:15.

Only *Paul* among all the Apostles, calleth the law the rudiments of the world, weake and beggely elements; the strength of sin, the letter that killeth, &c. The other Apostles spake not so of the law. Whosoever then will be a right scholler in *Christ's* schoole, let him marke diligently this manner of speech used of the Apostle. *Christ* calleth him an elect vessell, and therefore gave unto him an exquisite utterance, and a singular kind of speech above all the rest of the Apostles, that he as an elect vessell might faithfully lay the foundations of the article of Justification, and clearly set forth the same.

Verse 4. But after the fulnes of time was come, God sent his Son, made of a woman, and made under the law; that he might redeem them which were under the law.

That is to say, after that the time of the law was fulfilled, and that *Christ* was revealed, and had delivered us from the law, and that the promise was published among all nations, &c.

The person
and office
of *Christ*.

It Marke here diligently how *Paul* defineth it: *Christ* (saith he) is the Sonne of God and of a woman, which for us sinners was made under the law, to redeem us that were under the law. In these words he comprehendeth both the person of *Christ* and the office of *Christ*. His person consisteth of his divine and humane nature. This he sheweth plainly when he saith: *God sent his owne Sonne borne of a woman.* *Christ* therefore is very God and very man. His office he setteth forth in these words: *Being made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law, &c.*

1. 13.

And it seemeth that *Paul* here, as it were in reproach, calleth the virgin *Mary* but onely a woman: which thing was not well taken even of some of the ancient Doctors, who would that he should rather have called her a virgin, then a woman. But *Paul* intrea-

intreateth in this Epistle of the most high and principall matter of all, to wit of the Gospell, of faith, of Christian righteousness. Also, what the person of Christ is, what is his office, what he hath taken upon him and done for our cause, and what benefits he hath brought to us wretched sinners. Wherefore the excellency of so high and so wonderfull a matter was the cause that he had no regard to her virginity. It was enough for him to set forth and preach the inestimable mercy of God, which would that his Son should be borne of that sex. Therefore he maketh no mention of the dignity of the sex, but of the sex onely. And in that he nameth the sex, hee signifieth that Christ was made true and very man of woman-kind. As if he said: He was borne, not of man and woman, but only of woman-kind. Therefore when he nameth but onely the woman-kind, saying: *made of a woman*, it is as if he should have said, *made of a virgin*. John the Evangelist, when he thus setteth forth the Word, that it *was in the beginning, and was made flesh*, speaketh not one word of his mother.

Why Paul calleth the mother of Christ a woman and not a virgin.

Job. 1. 2.

Furthermore this place also witnesseth that Christ, when the time of the law was accomplished, did abolish the same, and so brought liberty to those that were oppressed therewith, but made no new law after or besides that old law of *Moses*. Wherefore the Monkes and popish Schoolemen do no lesse erre and blaspheme Christ, in that they imagine that he hath given a new law besides the law of *Moses*, then do the Turks, which vaunt of their *Mahomet* as of a new law-giver after Christ, and better then Christ. Christ then came not to abolish the old law, that he might make a new, but (as *Paul* here saith) he was sent of his Father into the world, to redeeme those which were kept in thraldome under the law. These words paint out Christ lively and truly: they doe not attribute unto him the office to make any new law, but to redeeme them which were under the law. And Christ himselfe saith: *I judge no man*. And in another place: *I came not to judge the world, but that the world should be saved by mee*. That is to say, I came not to bring any law, nor to judge men according to the same, as *Moses* and other law-givers, but I have a higher and a better office. The law killed you, and I againe doe judge, condemn and kill the Law, and so I deliver you from the tyranny thereof.

The errorre and blasphemie of the Papists and Turks.

The true picture of Christ.

Job. 8. 25.
Job. 11. 47.

The office of Christ.

Wee that are old men, which have beene so nuffed up in this pernicious

A false opi-
nion of
Christ is not
easily call
off.

pernicious doctrine of the Papists, that it hath taken deepe root even in our bones and marrow, have conceived an opinion quite contrary to that which *Paul* here teacheth. For although we confessed with our mouth that Christ redeemed us from the tyranny of the law, yet in very deed in our heart we thought him to be a law-giver, a tyrant & a Judge, more terrible then *Moses* himself. And this perverse opinion we cannot yet at this day in so great light of the truth, utterly reject: so strongly are those things rooted in our hearts which we learne in our youth. But ye which are yet young, and are not infected with this pernicious opinion, may learne Christ purely with lesse difficulty then we that are old can remove out of our minds these blasphemous imaginations which we have conceived of him. Notwithstanding ye have not utterly escaped the deceits of the devill. For although you be not as yet infected with this cursed opinion, that Christ is a law-giver, yet have ye in you the root whereof it springeth, that is, ye have the flesh, reason, and the corruption of nature; which can judge no otherwise of Christ, but that he is a law-giver. Therefore ye must endeavour with all your power to learne so to know and to apprehend Christ, as *Paul* hath set him forth in this place. But if besides this naturall corruption, there come also corrupt and wicked teachers (of whom the world is full) they will increase this corruption of nature, and so shall the evil be doubled: that is to say, evil instruction will increase and confirme the pernicious error of blind reason, which naturally judgeth Christ to be a law-giver, and printeth that error mightily in our minds, that without great travell and difficulty it can never be abolished.

The judgement of naturall reason concerning Christ.

The sweet and comfortable places of the Scripture touching Christ, must be alwaies before our eyes. The comfort of afflicted consciences against the terrours of the law.

Wherefore it is very profitable for us to have alwayes before our eyes this sweet and comfortable sentence, and such like, which set out Christ truly and lively, that in our whole life, in all dangers, in the confession of our faith before tyrants, and in the houre of death, we may boldly and with sure confidence say: * O law, thou hast no power over me, and therefore thou dost accuse and condemne me in vaine. For I beleve in Christ Jesus the Sonne of God, whom the Father sent into the world to redeeme us miserable sinners oppressed with the tyranny of the law. He gave his life and shed his blood for me. Therefore feeling thy terrours and threatenings, O law, I plunge my conscience in the wounds, blood, death, resurrection and victory of my Saviour Christ. Besides him

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



The law ru-
leth all man-
kind.

The law con-
demned and
killed by
Christ.

Mat. 11. 28.

Christ by
double right
hath conque-
red the law.

**Prosopopæia*
is a figure,
whereby
things that
have no life
are famed
personally to
speak, or to
be spcke to
Rom. 8. 3.
Christ by his
victory hath
delivered us
from the terrors
of the
law.

God which it exercised upon us the children of wrath. Now, therefore, because the law did so horribly and so curiously sin against his God, it is accused and arraigned. There Christ saith: O law, thou mighty Queen and cruell Regent of all mankind, what have I done, that thou hast accused me, terrified me and condemned me, which am innocent? Here the law, which had before condemned and killed all men, when it hath nothing where with to defend or purge it selfe, is againe so condemned and vanquished, that it loseth his whole right, not onely over Christ. (whom it so cruelly handled and killed) but also over all them that beleve in him. For to those Christ saith: Come unto me all ye that labour under the yoke of the law. I could have overcome the law by my absolute power, without mine owne smart: for I am Lord of the law, and therefore it hath no right over me. But I have made my selfe subject unto the law, for your cause which were under the law, taking your flesh upon me: that is to say, of mine inestimable love I humbled and yeilded my selfe to the same prison, tyranny and bondage of the law, under the which ye served as captives and bondslaves, I suffered the law to have dominion over me which was his Lord, to terrifie me, to make me thral and captive unto sinne, death and the wrath of God, which it ought not to have done. Therefore I have vanquished the law by double right and authority: first as the sonne of God and Lord of the law: secondly in your person: which is as much as if ye had overcome the law your selves: for my victory is yours.

After this manner Paul speaketh every where of this marvellous combate betweene Christ and the law. And to make the matter more delectable and more apparent, he is wont to set forth the law, by a figure called **Prosopopæia*, as a certaine mighty person which had condemned and killed Christ, whom Christ againe, overcoming death, had conquered, condemned and killed. Eph. 2. *Killing exmitia in himselfe.* Againe, *Psal. 68, Thou art gone up on high, thou hast led captivity captive, &c.* He useth the same figure also in his Epistles to the Romanes, Corinthians and Colossians. *By sinne be condemned sinne, &c.* Christ therefore by this his victory banished the law out of our conscience, so that now it can no more confound us in the sight of God; drive us to desperation, or condemne us. Indeed it ceaseth not still to reveale our sinne, to accuse and to terrifie us: but the conscience taking hold

hold of this word of the Apostle : *Christ hath redeemed us from the Law,* is raised up by faith, and conceiveth great comfort. Moreover, it triumpheth over the law with a certaine holy pride, saying: I care not for thy terrours and threatnings. For thou hast crucified the Son of God, and this hast thou done most unjustly : therefore the sin that thou hast committed against him, cannot be forgiven. Thou hast lost thy right and sovereignty, and now for ever thou art not onely overcome, condemned and slaine unto Christ, but also to me beleeving in him, unto whom he hath freely given this victory. So the law is dead to us for ever, so that we abide in Christ. *Thanks be therefore to God, which hath given us victorie through our Lord Jesus Christ.*

2 Cor. 1. 57.
(1872 1572)

These things do also confirme this doctrine, that we are justified by faith only. For when this combate was fought betwixt Christ and the law, none of our works or deserts came between, but only Christ was found, who putting upon him our person, made himself subject to the law, and in perfect innocency suffered all tyranny. Therefore the law, as a thief and cursed murtherer of the Son of God, looseth all his right, and deserveth to be condemned in such sort; that whersoever Christ is, or is once named, there it is compelled to avoid and flie away, no otherwise then the devil (as the Papists imagin) flieth from the cross: wherefore if we believe, we are delivered from the law through Christ, who hath triumphed over it by himself. Therefore this glorious triumph purchased unto us by Christ, is not gotten by any works, but only by faith: therefore faith only justifieth.

The law by his sentence killed the Son of God

Col. 2. 15.

These words then, *Christ was made under the law,* &c. as they are pithy and import a certaine vehemency, so they are diligently to be weighed and considered. For they declare that the Son of God being made under the law, did not only performe one or two works of the law : that is to say, he was not only circumcised, or presented in the temple, or went up to *Jerusalem* with other at the times appointed, or only lived civilly under the law, but he suffered all the tyranny of the law. For the law being in his principall use and full power, set upon Christ, and so horribly assailed him, that he felt such anguish and terrour, as no man upon the earth had ever felt the like. This his bloody sweat doth sufficiently witness, his comfort ministred by the Angell, that mighty prayer which he made in the garden; and briefly, that lamentable complaint

Christ suffered all the tyranny of the law.

plaint upon the crosse: *O my God, why hast thou forsaken me?* These things he suffered to redeem those which were under the law, that is to say, in heaviness of spirit, in anguish and terrour, and ready to despair, which were oppressed with the heavy burden of their sins, as indeed we are all oppressed. For as touching the flesh, we sin daily against all the commandements of God. But *Paul* giveth us good comfort, when he saith, *God sent his Son, &c.*

Christ came not to make a law, but to take the law clean away.

The ministry of Moses

So Christ a divine and humane person; begotten of God without beginning, and borne of the virgin in the time appointed, came not to make a law, but to feele and suffer the terrors of the law with all extremity, & to overcome the same, that so he might utterly abolish the law. He was not made a teacher of the law, but an obedient disciple to the law, that by this his obedience he might redeem them which were under the law: This is against the doctrine of the Papists, who have made Christ a law-giver: yea much more severe and rigorous then *Moses*. *Paul* teacheth here clean contrary, to wit, that God humbled his Sonne under the law, that is to say, constrained him to beare the judgement and curse of the law, sin, death, &c. For *Moses* the minister of the law; sin, wrath and death, apprehended, bound, condemned and killed Christ: and all this he suffered. Therefore Christ standeth as a meeke patient, and not as an agent, in respect of the law. He is not then a law-giver, or a Judge after the law, but in that he made himself subject to the law, bearing the condemnation of the law, he delivered us from the curse thereof.

It is not the proper office of Christ to teach the law.

Now, whereas Christ in the Gospell giveth commandements, and teacheth the law, or rather expoundeth it, this pertaineth not to the doctrine of Justification, but of good works. Moreover, it is not the proper office of Christ (for the which he came principally into the world) to teach the law, but an accidentall or by-office: like as it was to heale the weak, to raise up the dead, &c. These are indeed excellent and divine works: but yet not the very proper and principall works of Christ. For the Prophets also taught the law, and wrought miracles. But Christ is God and man, who fighting against the law, suffered the uttermost cruelty and tyranny thereof. And in that he suffered the tyranny of the law, he vanquished it in himself: And afterwards being raised up againe from death, he condemned and utterly abolished the law which was our deadly enemy, so that it cannot condemne and kill the faithfull any more. Wherefore the true and proper office of Christ

is.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

When the curse (which is sin, death, &c.) is abolished, then in the stead thereof succeedeth the blessing, that is, righteousness, life and all good things.

But by what merit have we received this blessing, that is to say, this adoption and inheritance of everlasting life. By none at all. For what can men deserve that are shut under sin, subject to the curse of the law, and worthy of everlasting death? We have then received this blessing freely, and being utterly unworthy thereof, but yet not without merit. What merit is that? not ours, but the merit of Jesus Christ the son of God; who being made under the law, not for himself but for us (as Paul said afore, that he was made a curse for us) redeemed us which were under the law: Wherefore we have received this adoption by the only redemption of Jesus Christ the Sonne of God; which is our rich and everlasting merit, whether it be of congruence or worthinesse going before grace or coming after. And with this free adoption, we have also received the holy Ghost, which God hath sent into our hearts, crying *Abba, Father*, as followeth.

The merit wherby we receive the adoption of the sons of God.

He useth the termes of the school-men.

Verse 6. *And because you are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts.*

The holy Ghost is sent two manner of waies. *Mat. 3.16. Act. 2.3.*

The holy Ghost is sent two manner of waies. In the primitive Church he was sent in a manifest and visible appearance. So he came upon Christ at *Jordan* in the likenes of a Dove, and in the likenes of fire upon the Apostles and other beleevers. And this was the first sending of the holy Ghost: which was necessary in the primitive Church, for it was expedient that it should be established by many miracles, because of the unbelievers, as Paul witnesseth, *1 Cor. 14. Strange tongues* (saith he) *be for a signe and a token, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not.* But after that the Church was gathered together and confirmed with those miracles, it was not necessary that this visible sending of the holy Ghost should continue any longer.

Secondly, The holy Ghost is sent by the word into the hearts of the beleevers, as here it is said: *God sent the Spirit of his Sonne, &c.* This sending is without any visible appearance, to wit, when by the hearing of the external word, we receive an inward fervency and light; whereby wee are changed and become new creatures: whereby also we receive a new judgement, a new feeling, and

and a new moving. This change and this new judgement is no work of reason, or of the power of man, but is the gift and operation of the holy Ghost, which commeth with the word preached, which purifieth our hearts by faith, and bringeth forth in us spirituall motions. Therefore there is a great difference betwixt us and those which with force and subtilty persecute the doctrine of the Gospell. For we by the grace of God, can certainly judge by the word, of the will of God towards us: also of all laws and doctrines, of our own life and of the life of others. Contrariwise the Papists and Sectaries cannot certainly judge of any thing: For they corrupt, they persecute and blaspheme the word. Now, without the word a man can give no certaine judgement of any thing.

The godly are able certainly to judge of all things.

And although it appeare not before the world, that we be renewed in spirit and have the holy Ghost, yet notwithstanding our judgement, our speech and our confession do declare sufficiently, that the holy Ghost with his gifts is in us. For before we could judge rightly of nothing. We spake not as now we do. We confessed not that all our works were sinne and damnable, that Christ was our onely merit both before grace and after, as now we doe in the true knowledge and light of the Gospell. Wherefore let this trouble us nothing at all, that the world (whose works we testifie to be evill) judgeth us to be most pernicious hereticks and seditious persons, destroyers of Religion, and troublers of the common peace, possessed of the devill speaking in and governing all our actions. Against this perverse and wicked judgement of the world, let this testimony of our conscience be sufficient, whereby we assuredly know that it is the gift of God, that we doe not only beleve in Jesus Christ, but that we also openly preach and confesse him before the world. As we beleve with our heart, so do we speake with our mouth, according to that saying of the *Psalme*: *I beleved, and therefore I have spoken.*

Signes of regeneration in the godly.

Christ our onely merit of congruence and worthinesse both before grace and after.

Psalm 116 10.

Moreover we exercise our selves in the feare of God, and avoide sinne as much as we may. If we sinne, we sinne not of purpose, but of ignorance, and we are sorry for it. We may slip, for the devill lieth in waite for us both day and night. Also, the remnants of sinne cleave yet fast in our flesh: therefore as touching the flesh we are sinners, yea after that we have received the holy Ghost. And there is no great difference betwixt a Christian and a civill honest man.

The remnants of sin in the Saints.

There is
small diffe-
rence in out-
ward shew
betweene a
Christian &
a man that
is but out-
wardly and
civilly righ-
teous.

For the workes of a Christian in outward shew are but base and simple. He doth his duty according to his vocation, he guideth his family, he tilleth the ground, he giveth counsell, he aideth and succoureth his neighbour. These works the carnall man doth not much esteeme, but thinketh them to be common to all men, and such as the heathen may also do. For the world understandeth not the things which are of the Spirit of God, and therefore it judgeth perversly of the workes of the godly. But the monstrous superstition of hypocrites and their will-workes they have in great admiration. They count them holy workes, and spare no charges in maintaining the same. Contrariwise the workes of the faithfull, which although in outward appearance they seem to be but vile and nothing worth, yet are they good works indeed, and accepted of God, (because they are done in faith, with a cheerefull heart, and with obedience and thankfulness toward God) these works, I say, they do not onely not acknowledge to be good works, but also they despise and condemne them as most wicked and abominable. The world therefore beleeveth nothing lesse then that we have the holy Ghost. Notwithstanding in the time of tribulation or of the crosse, and of the confession of our faith (which is the proper and principall work of those that beleeve) when we must either forsake wife, children, goods and life, or else deny Christ, then it appeareth that we make confession of our faith, that we confesse Christ and his word, by the power of the holy Ghost.

2 Cor. 3. 16.

Signes of
the presence
of the holy
Ghost.

2 Cor. 4. 4.

Wee ought not therefore, to doubt whether the holy Ghost dwelleth in us or not: but to be assuredly perswaded that we are the temple of the holy Ghost, as *Paul* saith. For if any man feele in himselfe a love towards the word of God, and willingly heareth, talketh, writeth and thinketh of Christ, let that man know that this is not the worke of mans will or reason, but the gift of the holy Ghost: For it is impossible that these things should be done without the holy Ghost. Contrariwise, where hatred and contempt of the word is, there the devill the god of this world raigneth, blinding mens hearts, and holding them captive, that the light of the glorious Gospell of Christ should not shine unto them. Which thing we see at this day in the most part of the common people which have no love to the word, but contemne it as though it pertained nothing at all unto them. But whosoever do feele any love or desire

to

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



How thou
mayst assure
thy self that
not only thy
office but al-
so thy per-
son pleaseth
God.

Psa. 119. 113.

thy office pleaseth God: but this canst thou never doe unless thou have the holy Ghost. But thou wilt say, I doubt not but that my office pleaseth God, because it is Gods ordinance; but I doubt of mine owne person whether it please God or no. Here thou must resort to the word of God, which teacheth and assureth us, that, not onely the office of the person, but also the person it selfe pleaseth God. For the person is baptized, beleeveth in Christ, is purged in his blood from all his sinnes, liveth in the communion and fellowship of his Church: Moreover he doth not onely love the pure doctrine of the word, but also he is glad and greatly rejoyceth when he seeth it advanced, and the number of the faithfull increased. Contrariwise he detesteth the Pope and all Sectaries with their wicked doctrine, according to that saying of the *Psalme*: *I hate them that imagine evill things, but thy law do I love.*

Grace is
more strong
and more
mighty then
sinne.

We ought therefore to be surely perswaded, that not only our office, but also our person pleaseth God: Yea whatsoever it saith, doth, or thinketh particularly, the same pleaseth God, not for our owne sake, but for Christs sake, who was made under the law for us. Now, we are sure that Christ pleaseth God, that he is holy, &c. For as much then as Christ pleaseth God, and we are in him, we also please God and are holy. And although sin do still remaine in our flesh, and we also daily fall and offend, yet grace is more abundant and stronger then sin. The mercy and truth of the Lord raigneth over us for ever. Wherefore sinne cannot terrifie us and make us doubtfull of the grace of God which is in us. For Christ that most mighty giant hath quite abolished the law, condemned sinne, vanquished death and all evils. So long as he is at the right hand of God, making intercession for us, we cannot doubt of the grace and favour of God towards us.

Outward to-
kens that we
are in the
favour of
God.

Moreover, God hath also sent the Spirit of his Sonne into our hearts, as *Paul* here saith. But Christ is most certaine in his Spirit, that he pleaseth God, &c: therefore we also having the same Spirit of Christ, must be assured that we are under grace for his sake which is most assured. This I have said concerning the inward testimony, whereby a Christian mans heart ought to be fully perswaded that he is under grace, and hath the holy Ghost. Now the outward signes (as before I have said) are, gladly to heare of Christ, to preach and teach Christ, to render thanks unto him, to praise him,

to confesse him, yea with the losse of goods and life : Moreover to do our duty according to our vocation as we are able : to do it (I say) in faith, joy, &c. Not to delight in sin, nor to thrust our selves into another mans vocation, but to attend upon our owne, to helpe our needy brother, to comfort the heavy hearted, &c. By these signes as by certaine effects and consequents, we are fully assured and confirmed, that we are in Gods favour. The wicked also do imagine that they have the same signes, but they have nothing lesse. Hereby we may plainely see that the Pope with his doctrine doth nothing else, but trouble and torment mens consciences, and at length driveth them to desperation : For he not only teacheth but also commandeth men to doubt. Therefore as the *Psalme* saith : *There is no truth nor certainty in his mouth.* And in another place : *Under his tongue is iniquity and mischief.*

Psal. 5. 9.
Psal. 10. 7.

Here we may see what great infirmity is yet in the faith of the godly. For if we could be fully perswaded that we are under grace, that our sins are forgiven, that we have the Spirit of Christ, that we are the children of God : then doubtlesse we should be joyfull, and thankfull to God for this inestimable gift. But because we feele contrary motions, that is to say, feare, doubtfulnesse, anguish and heavines of heart, and such like, therefore we cannot assure our selves hereof : yea our conscience judgeth it a great presumption and pride to challenge this glory. Wherefore, if we will understand this thing rightly and as we should do, we must put it in practise : for without experience and practise it can never be learned.

The weaknes of faith in the godly.

Wherefore let every man so practise with himselfe; that his conscience may be fully assured that he is under grace, and that his person and his workes do please God. And if he feele in himselfe any wavering or doubting, let him exercise his faith, and wastle against this doubting : and let him labour to attaine more strength and assurance of faith, so that he may be able to say : I know that I am accepted, and that I have the holy Ghost : not for mine own worthinesse, my work, my merit, but for Christs sake, who of his inestimable love towards us, made himselfe thrall and subject to the law, and tooke away the sinnes of the world. In him doe I believe. If I be a sinner and erre, he is righteous and cannot erre. Moreover, I gladly heare, reade, sing and write of him, and I desire nothing more then that this Gospell may be knowne to the whole world,

The assurance of faith.

world, and that many may be converted unto him. These things doe plainly witnesse that the holy Ghost is present with us and in us. For such things are not wrought in the heart by mans strength, nor gotten by mans industry or travell, but are obtained by Christ alone, who first maketh us righteous by the knowledge of himself in his holy Gospell, and after wards he createth a new heart in us, bringeth forth new motions, and giveth unto us that assurance wherby we are perswaded that we please the Father for his sake. Also he giveth us a true judgement wherby we prove and try those things, which before we knew not, or else altogether despised. It becometh us therefore to wattle against this doubting, that we may daily overcome it more and more, and attaine to a full perswasion and certainty of Gods favour toward us, rooting out of our hearts this cursed opinion, that a man ought to doubt of the grace and favour of God: which hath infected the whole world.

Verse 6. *Crying: Abba Father.*

Paul might have said: God sent the Spirit of his Sonne into our hearts calling, *Abba Father*. He saith not so, but crying, *Abba Father*, that he might shew and set forth the temptation of a Christian, which yet is but weake, and weakly beleeveth. In *Rom. 8.* he calleth this crying an unspeakeable groaning. Likewise he saith: *The Spirit helpeth our infirmities: For we know not how to pray as we ought, but the Spirit maketh intercession for us with unspeakeable groanings, &c.*

The crying
of the Spirit.

The hinderances
of Faith.

1 *Pet. 5. 8.*

The roaring
of the devill.

And this is a singular consolation when he saith, that the Spirit of Christ is sent into our hearts, crying, *Abba Father*: and againe, that he helpeth our infirmities, making intercession for us with unspeakeable groanings. He that could assuredly beleieve this, should never be overcome with any affliction, were it never so great. But there are many things that hinder this faith in us. First our heart is borne in sinne: Moreover this evill is naturally grafted in us, that we doubt of the good will of God towards us, and cannot assure our selves that we please God, &c. Besides all this, the devill our adversary rangeth about: with terrible roarings, and saith: Thou art a sinner: therefore God is angry with thee, and will destroy thee for ever. Against these horrible and intollerable roarings, we have nothing whereupon to hold and stay

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Chap. III. . Upon the E P I S T L E

Paul calleth
the groa-
ning of our
heart a cry.

it conceiveth comfort againe, and saith: *Abba Father*. This groaning which then we scantly feele. *Paul* calleth a crying and unspeakeable groaning, which filleth both heaven and earth. Moreover he calleth it the crying and groaning of the Spirit, because the holy Ghost stirreth up the same in our hearts when we are weake and oppressed with tentation and terrour.

The profe
of tempta-
tions.

Although then the law, sinne and the devill cry out against us never so much with great and terrible roarings, which seeme to fill Heaven and earth, and farre to exceed this groaning of our heart, yet can they not hurt us. For the more fiercely they assaile us, accuse and torment us with their cryings, so much the more doe we groane, and in groaning lay hold upon Christ, call upon him with heart and mouth, cleave unto him, and beleve that he was made under the law, that he might deliver us from the curse of the law, and destroy both sin and death. And thus when we have taken hold upon Christ by faith, we cry through him: *Abba Father*. And this our cry doth farre surmount the roaring of the law, sin, the devill, &c.

Gal. 4. 4.

The cry of
our heart we
heare not,
and the
groaning we
scarcely per-
ceive.

But so farre off is it that we thinke this groaning which we make in these terrours and this our weaknesse, to be a cry, that scarcely we perceive it to be a groaning. For our faith which in tentation thus groaneth unto Christ is very weake, if we consider our own sense and feeling, and therefore we heare not this cry. We have but onely the word, which when we apprehend in this conflict, we have a little breathing, and then we groane. Of this groaning some little feeling we have, but the cry we heare not. *But he* (saith *Paul*) *which searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the meaning of the Spirit, &c.* To this searcher of the hearts, this small and feeble groaning (as it seemeth unto us) is a loud and a mighty cry, and an unspeakeable groaning: in comparison whereof the great and horrible roarings of the law, of sin, of death, of the devill, and of hell, are nothing, neither can they be once heard. *Paul* therefore, not without cause, calleth this groaning of a godly afflicted heart, a cry and a groaning of the Spirit which cannot be expressed. For it filleth Heaven, so that the Angels thinke they heare nothing else but this cry.

Rom. 8. 27

How we are
affected in
the terrours
of conscience

But in us there is a cleane contrary feeling. For it seemeth unto us that this our small groaning doth not so pierce the clouds, that there is nothing else heard in Heaven of God and his Angels.

Nay,

Jay, we thinke, and especially during the time of tentation, that he devill horribly roareth against us, that the heavens thunder and the earth trembleth, that all will fall upon us, that all creatures threaten our destruction, that hell is open and ready to swallow us up. This feeling is in our heart, these horrible voyces and this carefull shew we heare and we see. And this is it that *Paul* saith in the 2 Corinth. 12. *That the strength of Christ is made perfect through our weakenesse.* For then is Christ Almighty indeed, then loth he truly reigne and triumph in us, when we are so weak that we can scarcely groane. But *Paul* saith, that this groaning is in the cares of God, a most mighty cry, which filleth both heaven and earth.

Christ also in the 18. of *Luke*, in the parable of the wicked judge, alleth this groaning of a faithfull heart, a cry, yea and such a cry as caseth not day and night to cry unto God, where he saith: *Hear what the unrighteous judge saith. Now shall not God avenge his elect, which cry day and night unto him, yea though he suffer long for them? yea I tell you he will avenge them quickly.* We at this day in so great persecuti-
n and contradiction of the Pope, of tyrants and Sectaries which fight against us both on the right hand and on the left, can do nothing else but utter such groanings. And these were our guns and artillery wherewith we have so many yeares scattered the counsels and enterprises of our adversaries: wherby also we have begun to overthrow the kingdome of Antichrist. They also shall provoke Christ to hasten the day of his glorious coming, wherein he shall abolish all rule, authority and power, and shall put all his enemies under his feet. So be it.

The groaning of the heart is a cry.

The weapons of the godly wherewith they overthrow the kingdome of the Pope, &c.

In the 14. of *Exodus* the Lord speaketh unto *Moses* at the red sea, saying: *Why cryest thou unto me?* Yet *Moses* cryed not, but trembled and almost despaired, for he was in great trouble. It seemed that infidelity reigned in him, and not faith. For he saw the people of *Israel* compassed and enclosed with the *Egyptians* host and with the sea, that there was no way whereby they might escape. Here *Moses* durst not once open his mouth. How then did he cry? We must not judge herefore according to the feeling of our own heart, but according to the word of God, which teacheth us that the holy Ghost is given to those that are afflicted, terrified, and ready to despair, to raise them up and to comfort them, that they be not overcome in their tentations and afflictions,

The cry of *Moses* at the red sea,

The office of the holy Ghost,

afflictions, but may overcome them, and yet not without great terrors and troubles.

The Papists dreamed that holy men had the holy Ghost in such fort that they never had nor felt any tentation. They spake of the holy Ghost only by speculation and naked knowledge. But *Paul* saith, *That the strength of Christ is made perfect through our weakenesse*: Also, *That the Spirit helpeth our infirmities, and maketh intercession for us with unspeakable groanings*. Therefore we have then most need of the helpe and comfort of the holy Ghost, yea and then is he most ready to helpe us, when we are most weake and nearest to desperation. If any man suffer affliction with a constant and a joyfull heart, then hath the holy Ghost done his office in him. And indeed he exerciseth his worke, specially and properly in those which have suffered great terrors and afflictions; and have, as the *Psalme* saith, *approached nigh to the gates of hell*. As I said of *Moses*, which saw present death in the waters, and on every side whithersoever he turned his face. He was therefore in extreame anguish and desperation, and (no doubt) he felt in his heart a mighty cry of the devill against him, saying: All this people shall this day perish, for they can escape no way, and of this great calamity thou onely shalt be found to be the Authour, because thou hast led them out of *Agypt*. Besides all this, the people cried out against him, saying: *Were there no graves in Agypt? Thou hast brought us out that wee should die here in the Wildernesse. Had it not beene better for us to have served the Egyptians, then here wretchedly to dye in the Wildernesse?* The holy Ghost was not here in *Moses* by bare speculation and knowledge only, but truly and effectually, who made intercession for him with an unspeakable groaning, so that he sighed unto the Lord and said: *O Lord at thy commandement have I led forth this people: helpe us therefore. This groaning and sighing unto God, the Scripture calleth a crying.*

This matter I have the more largely prosecuted, that I might plainly shew what the office of the holy Ghost is; and when he specially exerciseth the same. In temptation therefore we must in no wise judge thereof according to our own sence and feeling, or by the crying of the law, sin and the devill, &c. If we here follow our owne sence and beleeve those cryings, we shall thinke our selves to be destitute of all helpe and succour of the holy Ghost, and utter

In whom
the holy
Ghost doth
his office,
and at what
time.

The tentati-
on of *Moses*
at the red
sea.

Exod. 14. 21.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



sometime
riseth of in-
firmity in
the godly:
but of wilful
doubting,
which the
Papists
teach and
maintain.

suffered, died, and rose again for us, &c. But there can be no greater blasphemy against God, then to deny his promises, to deny God himself, to deny Christ, &c. Wherefore it was not only an extream madness, but an horrible impiety that the Monks did so earnestly entice the youth both men and women to their Monasteries, and to their holy orders (as they called them) as to a most certain state of salvation: and yet when they had thus done, they bad them doubt of the grace and favour of God towards them.

The Popes
kingdome.

Moreover, the Pope called all the world to the obedience of the holy Church of Rome, as to an holy state, in the which they might undoubtedly attain salvation; and yet after he had brought them under the obedience of his laws, he commanded them to doubt of their salvation. So the kingdom of Antichrist braggeth and vaunteth at the first, of the holines of his orders, his rules and his laws, and assuredly promieth everlasting life to such as observe and keep them. But afterwards when these miserable men have long afflicted their bodies with watching, fasting and such like exercises, according to the traditions and ordinances of men, this is all that they gain thereby, that they are uncertain whether this obedience please God or no? Thus Satan most horribly dallied in the death and destruction of soules through the Pope, and therefore is the Papacy a slaughter-house of consciences, and the very kingdom of the devill.

The Papacy
is a very
slaughter-
house of
consciences.

Now, to establish and confirme this pernicious and cursed error, they alleadged the saying of Salomon, Eccles. 9. The just and the wise men are in the hands of God: and yet no man knoweth whether he be worthy of love or of hatred. Some understand this of that hatred which is to come, and some againe of that which is present: but neither of them understand Salomon, who in that place meaneth nothing lesse then that which they dreame. Moreover, the whole Scripture teacheth us, especially and above all things, that we should not doubt, but assure our selves and undoubtedly beleve that God is mercifull, loving and patient: that he is neither dissembler nor deceiver: but that he is faithfull and true, and keepeth his promise: yea and hath performed that he promised, in delivering his onely begotten Sonne to death for our sinnes, that every one that beleeveth in him might not perish, but have everlasting life. Here we cannot doubt but that God is pleased with us, that he loveth us indeed, that the hatred and wrath of God is taken

The chiefe
drift of the
Scripture, is
to make us
certaine of
the mercy
of God to-
wards us.
John 3.16.

taken away, seeing he suffered his Sonne to die for us wretched sinners. Although this matter be set out and often repeated throughout the whole Gospell, yet it profited nothing at all. This one saying of *Salomon* perversly understood, did more prevaile (especially among the voracious and hypocrites of the straiter religion) then all the promises and consolations of the whole Scripture, yea then Christ himselfe. They abused the Scriptures therefore to their own destruction, and were most justly punished for despising the Scriptures and rejecting the Gospell.

One onely sentence out of Ecclesiastes not well understood, was of more force in the Papacy, then all the promises of the Scripture.

It is expedient for us to know these things: First, because the Papists vaunt of their holines, as if they had never committed any evil. Therefore they must be convinced by their own abominations, where-with they have filled the whole world, as their own books do witness, whereof there is yet an infinite number: Secondly, that we may be fully certified that we have the pure doctrine of the Gospell: of which certaintie the Pope cannot glory. In whose kingdom though all things else were sound and uncorrupt, yet this monstrous doctrine of doubting of Gods grace and favour, passeth all other monsters. And although it be manifest, that the enemies of Christs Gospell teach uncertaine things, because they command that mens consciences should remaine in doubt, yet notwithstanding they condemne and kill us as hereticks, because we dissent from them, and teach those things which are certaine. And this they do with such devillish rage and cruelty, as if they were most assured of their doctrine.

Doubtfulness of salvation in the Papacy.

Let us therefore give thanks unto God, that we are delivered from this monstrous doctrine of doubting; and can now assure our selves that the holy Ghost crieth and bringeth forth in our hearts unspeakeable groanings. And this is our anker hold and our foundation: This Gospell commandeth us to behold, not our owne good works, our owne perfection: but God the promiser, and Christ the Mediatour. Contrariwise, the Pope commandeth us to looke, not unto God the promiser, nor unto Christ our high Bishop, but unto our works and merits. Here, on the one side, doubting and desperation must needs follow: but on the other side, assurance of Gods favour and joy of the Spirit. For we cleave unto God who cannot lie. For he saith: Behold, I deliver my Sonne to death, that through his blood, he may redeeme thee from thy finnes and from eternall death. In this case I cannot doubt, unlesse

How we may know that we are in Gods favour and have the holy Ghost.

The doctrine
which wee
professe is
certaine.

I will utterly deny God. And this is the reason that our doctrine is most sure and certaine, because it carrieth us out of our selves, that we should not leane to our own strength, our own conscience, our own feeling, our own person, and our own works: but to that which is without us, that is to say, the promise and truth of God which cannot deceive us. This the Pope knoweth not, and therefore he wickedly imagineth that no man knoweth, be he never so just or so wise, whether he be worthy of love or of hatred. But if he be just and wise, he knoweth assuredly that he is beloved of God, or else he is neither just nor wise.

The true
meani g of
the sentence
out of the 9
of Ecclesi
astes
What thaks
the world gi-
veth to the
that deserve
well of it.

Moreover, this sentence of *Salomon* speaketh nothing at all of the hatred or favour of God towards men, but it is a morall sentence reproving the ingratitude of men. For such is the perverseness and ingratitude of the world, that the better a man deserveth, the lesse thanks he shall have; and oftentimes he that should be his most friend, will be his most enemy: Contrariwise, such as least deserve, shall be most esteemed. So *David* a holy man, and a good King, was cast out of his kingdom. The Prophets, Christ and his Apostles were slaine. To conclude, the Historie of all Nations witness, that many men well deserving of their Country, were cast into banishment by their own Citizens, and there lived in great misery, and some also shamefully perished in prison; Wherefore *Salomon* in this place speaketh not of the conscience having to do with God, nor of the favour or judgement, the love or hatred of God: but of the judgement and affection of men among themselves. As though he would say: There are many just and wise men, by whom God worketh much good, and giveth peace and quietness: unto men. But so farre off are they from acknowledging the same, that oftentimes they requite them againe most unkindly and uncourteously for their well doings and deservings. Therefore although a man do all things well and never so well, yet he knoweth not whether by this his diligence and faithfullness: he deserve the hatred or favour of men.

So we at this day, when we thought we should have found favour among our own countrymen, for that we preach unto them the Gospell of peace, life and eternall salvation, instead of favour we have found bitter and cruell hatred. Indeed at the first many were greatly delighted with our doctrine, and received it gladly. We thought they would have been our friends and brethren, and that
with

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Also: *I am become a broken vessell, &c.* This is not indeed the groaning that cryeth, *Abba, Father:* but the roring of Gods wrath, which crieth strongly, O cruell Judge, O cruell tormentour, &c. Here it is now time that thou turn away thine eyes from the law, from works, and from the sence and feeling of thine own conscience, and lay hold by faith on the promise, that is to say, on the word of grace and life, which raiseth up the conscience againe, so that now it beginneth to groane and say: Although the law accuse me, sin and death terrifie me never so much, yet O my God, thou promist grace, righteousnesse and everlasting life through Jesus Christ: And so the promise bringeth a sighing and groaning, which cryeth: *Abba Father:*

Verse 7. *Wherefore thou art no more a servant but a sonne.*

This is the shutting up and the conclusion of that which he said before. As if he should say: I his being true that we have received the Spirit by the Gospell, wherby we cry, *Abba Father:* then is this decree pronounced in Heaven, that there is now no bondage any more, but meere liberty and adoption. And who bringeth this liberty? Verily, this groaning. By what means? The Father offereth unto me by his promise, his grace and his fatherly favour. This remaineth then, that I should receive this grace. And this is done when I againe with this groaning do cry, and with a childly heart do assent unto this name *Father.* Here then the Father and the Son meete, and the marriage is made up without all pompe and solemnity: that is to say, nothing at all cometh between, no law nor work is here required. For what should a man do in these terrors and horrible darkenes of temptations? Here is nothing else but the Father promising, and calling me his son by Christ, who was made under the law, &c. And I receiving and answering by this groaning, saying, *Father.* Here then is no exacting, nothing is required, but only that childly groaning that apprehendeth a sure hope and trust in tribulation, and saith: Thou promist, and callest me thy child for Christs sake, and I againe receive thy promise and call thee *Father.* This is indeed to be made children simply and without any works. But these things without experience and practise cannot be understood.

Paul in this place taketh this word *Servant* otherwise then he did before in the third Chapter, where he saith: *There is neither*
bond

By what means the adoption cometh unto us.

band nor free, &c. Here he calleth him a servant of the law which is subject to the law, as he did a little before: *We are in bondage under the rudiments of the world.* Wherefore, to be a servant according to *Paul* in this place, is to be guilty and captive under the law, under the wrath of God and death; to behold God, not as a mercifull Father, but as a tormentour, an enemy, and a tyrant. This is indeed to be kept in bondage and babylonicall captivity, and to be cruelly torment-ed therein. For the law delivereth not from sin and death, but reveal-eth and increaseth sin, and ingendreth wrath. This bondage (saith *Paul*) continueth no longer: it oppresseth us not, nor maketh us heavy any more, &c. *Paul* saith: *Thou shalt be no more a servant.* But the sen-tence is more generall if we say: there shall be no bondage in Christ any more, but meere freedom and adoption. For when faith cometh, that bondage ceaseth, as he said before in the third Chapter.

What *Paul* calleth a servant in this place

Rom. 2. 20.
Rom. 4. 15.

Now, if we by the spirit of Christ crying in our hearts, *Abba Father*, be no more servants, but children, then it followeth that we are not onely delivered from the Pope and all the abomina-tions of mens traditions, but also from all the jurisdiction and power of the law of God. Wherefore we ought in no wise to suf-fer the law to reigne in our conscience, and much lesse the Pope with his vaine threatnings and terrours. Indeed he roareth migh-tily as a Lyon, *Apoc. 10.* and threatneth to all those that obey not his lawes, the wrath and indignation of almighty God and of his blessed Apostles, &c. But here *Paul* armeth and comforteth us a-gainst these roarings, when he saith: *Thou art no more a servant, but a sonne.* Take hold of this consolation by faith, and say: O law thy tyranny can have no place in the throne where Christ my Lord sitteth: there I cannot heare thee (much lesse do I heare thee O Antichrist:) for I am free and a son, who must not be subject to any bondage or servile law. Let not *Moses* therefore with his laws, (much lesse the Pope) ascend up into the bride-chamber there to lie, that is to say, to reigne in the conscience, which Christ hath delivered from the law, to the end that it should not be subject to any bondage. Let the servants abide with the Ass in the valley: Let none but *Isaac* ascend up into the Mountaine with his Father *Abraham*: That is, let the law have dominion over the body and over the old man: let him be under the law and suffer the burden to be laid upon him: let him suffer himselfe to be exercised and vexed with the law; let

The law must not be suffered to rule in the conscience.

The law hath no power over the conscience, but over the flesh.

Gen. 22 4, 5.

the law limit and prescribe unto him what he ought to do, what he ought to suffer, and how he ought to live and to governe himselfe among men. But let it not defile the bed in which Christ should rest and sleep alone: that is to say, let it not trouble the conscience. For she alone ought to live with Christ her Spouse in the kingdome of liberty and adoption.

What the adoption bringeth.

1 Cor. 13. 12.

- If then (saith he) by the Spirit of Christ ye cry: *Abba, Father*, then are ye indeed no longer servants, but free-men and sons. Therefore ye are without the law, without sin, without death: that is to say, ye are saved, and ye are now quite delivered from all evils. Wherefore the adoption bringeth with it the eternall kingdome, and all the heavenly inheritance. Now, how inestimable the glory of this gift is, mans heart is not able to conceive, and much lesse to utter. In the mean time we see this but darkly, and as it were a far off. We have this little groaning and feeble faith which onely resteth upon the hearing and the sound of the voyce of Christ in giving the promise. Therefore we must not measure this thing by reason or by our own feeling, but by the promise of God. Now because he is infinite, therefore his promise is also infinite, although it seem to be never so much inclosed in these narrow straits, these anguishes I mean: wherefore there is nothing that can now accuse, terrifie, or bind the conscience any more. For there is no more servitude but adoption: which not only bringeth unto us liberty from the law, sin and death, but also the inheritance of everlasting life, as followeth.

v. 13. 1

Verse 7. *Now, if thou be a sonne, thou art also the heire of God through Christ.*

For he that is a sonne, must be also an heire: for by his birth he is worthy to be an heire. There is no worke nor merit that bringeth to him the inheritance, but his birth onely: And so in obtaining the inheritance he is a meere patient and not an agent: that is to say, not to beget, not to labour, not to care: but to be borne is that which maketh him an heire. So we obtaine eternall gifts, namely the forgivenesse of finnes, righteousnesse, the glory of the resurrection and everlasting life, not as agents, but as patients, that is, not by doing, but by receiving. Nothing here cometh between, but faith alone apprehendeth the promise offered. Like as therefore a son

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Rom 7. 24.

By the
of the
3 5

rit, cryeth out: O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from this body of death? He accuseth his body, which notwithstanding it behoved him to love, calling it by an odious name, his death. As if he would say: My body doth more afflict me, and more grievously vex me then death it self: for it hindreth in him also this joy of spirit. He had not alwaies the sweet and joyfull cogitations of the heavenly inheritance to come, but he felt oftentimes also much heavines of spirit, great anguish and terrours.

Hereby we may plainly see how hard a matter faith is: which is not easily and quickly apprehended, as certain full and loathing spirits dreame, which swallow up at once all that is contained in the holy Scriptures. The great infirmity which is in the Saints, and the striving of the flesh against the Spirit, do sufficiently witness how feeble faith is in them. For a perfect faith bringeth by and by a perfect contempt and loathing of this present life. If we could fully assure our selves, and constantly believe that God is our Father, and we his sons and heirs, then should we utterly contemne this world with all the glory, righteousness, wisdom and power, with all the royall scepters and crowns, and with all the riches and pleasures thereof. We should not be so carefull for this life: we should not be so addicted to the world and worldly things, trusting unto them when we have them, lamenting and despairing when we lose them: but we should doe all things with great love, humility and patience. But we do the contrary: for the flesh is yet strong, but faith is feeble and the spirit weak. Therefore Paul saith very well, that we have here in this life, but only the first fruits of the Spirit, and that in the world to come, we shall have the tenth also.

Signs whereby it appeareth that our faith is weak.

In this life we have but only the first fruits of the Spirit.

x

Verse 7. Through Christ.

Paul hath alwaies the name of Christ in his mouth.

Paul hath Christ alwaies in his mouth: he cannot forget him. For he did well fore-see that nothing should be lesse knowne in the world (yea among them which should professe themselves to be Christians) then Christ and his Gospell. Therefore he talketh of him and setteth him before our eyes continually. And as often as he speaketh of grace, righteousness, the promise, adoption and inheritance, he is alwaies wont to adde: In Christ or through Christ, covertly impugning the law. As if he would say: These things come unto us, neither by the law, nor by the workes thereof, much lesse by our owne strength:

Strength: or by the works of mens traditions: but only by Christ.

Verse 8, 9. *But even then when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods. But now seeing ye know God, ye rather are known of God: how turne ye again unto impotent and beggarly rudiments, whereunto, as from the beginning, yee will be in bondage againe.*

This is the conclusion of *Pauls* disputation. From this place unto the end of the Epistle he doth not much dispute, but only giveth precepts as touching manners. Notwithstanding he first reproveth the *Galathians*, being sore displeas'd that this divine and heavenly doctrine should be so suddenly and easily removed out of their hearts: As if he would say, Ye have teachers which will bring you backe againe into the bondage of the law. This did not I: but by my doctrine I called you out of darknesse and out of the ignorance of God, into a wonderfull light and knowledge of him. I brought you out of bondage and set you in the freedome of the sonnes of God, not by preaching unto you the workes of the law, or the merits of men; but the grace and righteousnes of God, and the giving of heavenly and eternall blessings through Christ. Now, seeing this is true, why do ye so soon forsake the light and returne to darkenesse? Why doe ye suffer your selves so easily to be brought from grace unto the law, from freedome to bondage?

What the
Gospell
bringeth.

Here againe wee see (as before I have said) that to fall in faith is an easie matter, as the example of the *Galathians* witnesseth. The example of the Anabaptists, Libertines, and such other hereticks witnesseth the same also at this day. We for our part doe set forth the doctrine of faith with continuall travell, by preaching, by reading and by writing; we purely and plainly distinguish the Gospell from the law, and yet do we little prevaile. This cometh of the devill, who goeth about by all subtile means to seduce men and to hold them in error: he can abide nothing lesse then the true knowledge of grace and faith in Christ. Therefore to the end he may take Christ clean out of sight, he setteth before them other shews, wherewith he so deceiveth them, that by little and little he leadeth them from faith and the knowledge of grace, to the disputation of the law. When he hath brought this about, then is Christ taken away: It is not

To slide in:
faith is an
easie thing.

The devill
laboureth to
bring men
from faith
to the law.

Without

without cause therefore that *Paul* speaketh so much and so often of Christ, and that he goeth about so purely to set forth the doctrine of faith: wherunto he attributeth righteousness only and alone, and taketh it from the law, declaring that the law hath a clean contrary effect: that is, to ingender wrath, to increase sin. &c. For he would gladly persuade us, that we should not suffer Christ to be plucked out of our heart: that the spouse should not suffer her husband to depart out of her arms, but should alwaies imbrace him and cleave fast unto him, who being present, there is no danger: yea there is the faithfull groaning, fatherly good will, adoption and inheritance.

Why *Paul* saith that the *Galathians* returned backe to weake and beggarly elements.

But why saith *Paul* that the *Galathians* turned backe againe to weak and beggarly rudiments or ceremonies, that is to say, to the law, wheras, they never had the law? for they were *Gentiles* (notwithstanding he wrote these things to the *Jews* also, as afterwards we will declare) or why speaketh he not rather after this manner? Once when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature were, no gods: but now, seeing ye know God, why turne ye backe againe, forsaking the true God to worship Idols? Doth *Paul* take it to be all one thing, to fall from the promise to the law, from faith to works, and to doe service unto gods which by nature are no gods? I answer: Whosoever is fallen from the article of Justification, is ignorant of God, and an Idolater. Therefore it is all one thing whether he afterwards turn againe to the law, or to the worshipping of Idols: it is all one, whether he be called a Monke, a Turke, a Jew, or an Anabaptist. For when this Article is taken away, there remaineth nothing else but errour, hypocrisie, impiety and Idolatry, how much soever it seem in outward appearance to be the very truth, the true service of God, and true holines, &c.

God is knowne by Christ only.

The reason is, because God will or can be knowne no otherwise then by Christ, according to that saying of *John* 1. *The onely begotten Sonne which is in the bosome of the Father, hee hath declared him.* He is the Seede promised unto *Abraham*, in whom God hath established all his promises. Wherefore Christ is the onely meane, and as ye would say, the glasse by the which we see God, that is to say, we know his will. For in Christ we see that God is not a cruell exactour or a judge, but a most favourable, loving and mercifull Father, who to the end he might blesse us, that is to say, deliver us from the law, sinne, death and all evils, and might endue us with
grace,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY
BIBLE**

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

all the me-
ritmongers
alike.

And therefore every man that revolteth from the knowledge of Christ must needs fall into Idolatry, and conceive such an imagination of God as is not agreeable to his nature: As the Charter-house Monk for the observing of his Rule, the Turk for the keeping of his *Alcoran*, hath this affiance; that he pleaseth God, and shall receive a reward of him for his labour.

All merit-
mongers
honour a
God which
by nature is
no God.

God abhor-
reth wil-
worship-
pings and
works devi-
sed by man

Doctrine
concerning
the true
God.

Such a God as after this sort forgiveth sins and justifieth sinners, can no where be found, and therefore this is but a vaine imagination, a dreame and an Idoll of the heart. For God hath not promised that he will save and justifie men for the religions; observations, ceremonies, and ordinances devised by men: yea God abhorreth nothing more (as the whole Scripture witnesseth) then such will-works, such services, rites and ceremonies: for the which also he overthroweth whole kingdoms and empires: therefore, as many as trust to their own strength and righteousness, doe serve a God, but such a God as they themselves have devised, and not the true God indeed. For the true God speaketh thus: No righteousness, wisdom, nor religion pleaseth me, but that only wherby the Father is glorified through the Son. Whosoever apprehendeth this Son, and me, and my promise in him by faith, to him I am a God, to him I am a Father; him do I accept, justifie and save. All other abide under wrath, because they worship that thing which by nature is no God.

To what e-
vils they be
subiect,
which de-
stroy the
doctrine of
faith.

Whosoever forsaketh this doctrine, must needs fall into the ignorance of God: he understandeth not what the true Christian righteousness, wisdom and service of God is: he is an Idolater abiding under the law, sinne, death, and the power of the devill, and all things that he doth, are accursed, and condemned. Therefore the Anabaptist imagining with himselfe that he pleaseth God if he be rebaptized, if he forsake his house, wife and children, if he mortifie his flesh and suffer much adversity, and at length death it selfe; yet there is not one drop of the knowledge of Christ in him, but secluding Christ, he dreameth altogether, of his owne workes, of the forsaking of his goods, of his affliction and mortification, and now differeth nothing from the Turke, Jew or Papist in spirit or in heart, but onely in the outward appearance, workes and ceremonies which he hath chosen to himselfe. The same confidence in workes have all the Monkes and other religious orders: notwithstanding their apparell, and other outward things

things there is a difference. There are at this day very many like unto these, which notwithstanding would be counted among the true professors and teachers of the Gospell and as touching the words, they teach that men are delivered from their sinnes by the death of Christ. But because they teach faith, in such sort, that they attribute more to charity then to faith, they highly dishonour Christ and wickedly pervert his word. For they dreame that God regardeth and accepteth us for our charities sake, wherby we being reconciled to God, do love God and our neighbour. If this be true, then have we no need of Christ at all. Such men serve not the true God, but an idoll of their own heart, which they themselves have devised. For the true God doth not regard or accept us for our charity, vertues, for newnesse of life, but for Christs sake, &c.

But they make this objection: Yet notwithstanding the Scripture commandeth that we should love God with all our heart, &c. It is true. But it followeth not, that because God commandeth us, therefore we do it. If we did love God with all our heart, &c. Then, no doubt, we should be justified, and live through this obedience, as it is written: *He that shall do these things shall live in them.* But the Gospell saith: *Thou doest not these things: therefore thou shalt not live in them.* For this sentence: *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, &c.* requireth a perfect obedience, a perfect feare, trust and love towards God. These things men neither do nor can performe in this corrupt nature. Therefore this law: *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, &c.* justifieth not, but accuseth and condemneth all men, according to the saying: *The law causeth wrath, &c.* Contrariwise, *Christ is the finishing and accomplishing of the law to righteousness, to every one that beleeveth.* Of this we have spoken largely before.

Levit. 18. 5.
Rom. 10. 30

Rom. 4. 15.
Rom. 10. 4.

In like manner the Jew keeping the law with this opinion, that he by this obedience will please God, serveth not the true God, but is an Idolater, worshipping a dreame and an idoll of his owne heart, which is no where to be found. For the God of his fathers, whom he saith he worshippeth, promised to Abraham a seed, through the which all nations should be blessed. Therefore God is known and the blessing is given, not by the law, but by the Gospell of Christ. Although Paul speake these words: *Then when yee knew not God, yee did service, &c.* properly and principally

God is not knowne and the blessing given thro- row the law, but by the Gospell.

The Gentiles
idolatry was
grosse. Con-
trariwise the
Jews idola-
try was out-
wardly holy
& therefore
more hurt-
full.

to the *Galathians*, which were Gentiles: yet notwithstanding by the same words he also toucheth the *Jewes*, who though they had rejected their idols outwardly, yet in their hearts they worshipped them more then did the Gentiles, as he said, *Rom. 2. Thou abhorrest Idols, and committest sacrilege.* The Gentiles were not the people of God, they had not his word, and therefore their Idolatry was grosse. But the idolatrous *Jewes* cloaked their Idolatry with the name and word of God (as all Justiciaries which seeke righteousness by works, are wont to do) and so with this outward shew of holinesse they deceived many. Therefore Idolatry the more holy and spirituall it is, the more hurtfull it is.

But how may these two contrary sayings which the Apostle here setteth down, be reconciled together? *Yes. knew not God: and yet worshipped God.* I answer: All men naturally have this generall knowledge, that there is a God, according to that saying, *Rom 1. Forasmuch as that which may be known of God, was manifest in them.* For God was made manifest unto them, in that the invisible things of him did appear by the creation of the world. Moreover, the ceremonies and religions which were and alwayes remained among all nations, sufficiently witness that all men have had a certaine generall knowledg of God. But whether they had it by nature or by the tradition of their fore-fathers, I will not here dispute.

A general &
particular
knowledge
of Gods

But here some will object againe: If all men knew God, wherefore then doth *Paul* say, that the *Galathians* knew not God before the preaching of the Gospell? I answer: There is a double knowledge of God, generall and particular. All men have the generall knowledge, namely that there is a God, that he created Heaven and earth, that he is just, that he punisheth the wicked: But what God thinketh of us, what his will is towards us, what he will give or what he will do, to the end we may be delivered from sin and death, and be saved (which is the true knowledge of God indeed) this they know not. As it may be that I know some man by sight, whom yet indeed I know not throughly, because I understand not what affection he beareth towards me. So men know naturally that there is a God, but what his will is, or what is not his will, they do not know. For it is written: *There is none that understandeth God.* And in another place: *No man hath scene God:* that is to say, no man hath known what is the will of God. Now, what doth it

Rom. 3. 11.
Joh. 1. 18.

availe

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Chap. III.

Upon the Epistle of

all laws are
Idolatry.

or the Popes ordinance, or the Turks Alcoran, &c. Therefore he saith
with a certaine admiration:

Verse 9. *But now seeing ye know God.*

As though he would say: This is a marvellous thing, that ye know-
ing God by the preaching of Faith, do so suddenly revolt from the
true knowledge of his will, (wherein I thought ye were so surely es-
tablished, that I feared nothing lesse then that ye should be so easily
overthrown) and do now againe by the instigation of the false Apo-
stles, returne to the weake and beggerly ceremonies, which ye would
serve againe afresh. Ye heard before by my preaching, that this is
the will of God, to blesse all nations: not by circumcision or by the
observation of the law, but by Christ promised to *Abraham*. They
that beleeve in him shall be blessed with faithfull *Abraham*: they are
the sonnes and heires of God. Thus (I say) have ye known God.

The will of
God.

Gal. 3.9.
Gala. 7.

Verse 9. *Ye are rather are knowne of God, &c.*

He correcteth the sentence going before: *But now seeing yee
have knowne God*, or rather turneth it after this manner: *ye
rather ye are knowne of God*: For hee feared least they had
lost God utterly. As if he would say: Alas, are ye come to this
point, that now ye know not God, but returne againe from grace to
the law? Yet notwithstanding God knoweth you. And indeed
our knowledge is rather passive then active: that is to say, it confi-
steth in this, that we are rather known of God, then that we know
him. All our doing, that is, all our endeavour to know and to
apprehend God, is to suffer God to work in us. He giveth the word:
which when we have received by faith given from above, we are
new borne and made the sonnes of God. This is then the sense and
meaning: *Ye are knowne of God*, that is, ye are visited with the
word, ye are endued with faith and the holy Ghost, whereby ye
are renewed, &c. Wherefore even by these words, *Ye are knowne
of God*, he taketh away all righteousness from the law, and denieth
that we attaine the knowledge of God through the worthinesse of
our own works. *For no man knoweth the Father but the Sonne, and
hee to whom the Sonne will reveale him.* Also: *Hee by his knowledge
shall justifie many, because hee shall beare our iniquities.* Where-
fore our knowledge concerning God, consisteth in suffering, and

Our know-
ledge con-
cerning God.

Ye are know-
nen of God

Luk. 10. 22.
Esa. 53. 11.

not

not in doing.

He much marvelleth therefore, that seeing they knew God truly by the Gospell, they returned so suddenly to weake and beggerly rudiments, by the perswasion of the false apostles. As I my selfe also should greatly marvell if our Church (which by the grace of God is godly reformed in pure doctrine and faith) should be seduced and perverted by some fond and frantick head, through the preaching of one or two Sermons, that they would not acknowledge me for their Pastour any more. Which thing notwithstanding shall one day come to passe, if not whilest we live, yet when we are dead and gone: For many shall then rise up, which will be masters and teachers: who under a colour of true religion shall teach falso and perverse doctrine, and shall quickly overthrow all that we in so long time and with so great travell have builded. We are not better then the Apostles, who, while they yet lived, saw (not without their great griefe and sorrow) the subversion of those Churches which they themselves have planted through our ministry. Therefore it is no great marvell if we be constrained to behold the like evill at this day in those Churches, where Sectaries doe reigne, who hereafter when we are dead, shall possess those Churches which we have won and planted by our ministry, and with their poyson infect and subvert the same. And yet notwithstanding Christ shall remaine and reigne to the end of the world, and that marvellously, as he did under the Papacy.

The Apostles even in their life time saw the subversion of those Churches which they had planted,

Paul seemeth to speake very spitefully of the law when he calleth it rudiments (as he did also before in the beginning of this Chapter) and not only rudiments, but weake and beggerly rudiments and ceremonies. Is it not blasphemy to give such odious names to the law of God? The law being in his true use, ought to serve the promises and to stand with the promises and græc. But if it fight against them, it is no more the holy law of God, but a falso and a devillish doctrine, and doth nothing else but drive men to desperation, and therefore must be rejected.

Rudiments or elements are called the principles and first beginnings of any things and so the law is but as an A. B. C. in respect of the Gospell,

Wherefore when he calleth the law weake and beggerly rudiments, he speaketh of the law in respect of proud and presumptuous hypocrites which would be justified by it, and not of the law being spiritually understood, which ingendreth wrath. For the law, (as I have often said) being in his own proper use, accuseth and condemneth a man: and in this respect it is not onely a strong

Rom. 4. 15. When the law is weake and beggerly, &c

when it is
strong and
mighty.

and a rich rudiment, but also most mighty and most rich, yea rather an invincible power and riches: and if here the conscience be compared with the law, then is it most weake and beggerly. For it is so tender a thing, that for a small sinne it is so troubled and terrified, that it utterly despaireth, unlesse it be raised up againe. Wherefore the law in his proper use hath more strength and riches, then heaven and earth is able to containe: insomuch that one letter or one title of the law is able to kill all mankind, as the history of the law given by *Moses*, *Exod. 19. 20.* doth witness. This is the true and divine use of the law, of which *Paul* speaketh not in this place.

Paul therefore intreateth here of hypocrites, which are fallen from grace, or which have not yet attained to grace. These, abusing the law, seek to be justified by it. They exercise and tyre themselves day and night in the works therof: as *Paul* witnesseth of the Jews, *Rom. 10.* For I beare them record (saith he) that they have the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge, for they being ignorant of the righteousnesse of God, &c. Such doe hope so to be strengthened and enriched by the law, that they may be able to set their power and riches which they have gotten by the righteousnesse therof, against the wrath and judgement of God, and so to appease God, and to be saved thereby. In this respect then we may well say that the law is a weake and a beggerly rudiment: that is to say, which can give neither helpe nor counsell.

When the
law is a
weake and
beggerly
rudiment.

And who so listeth to amplifie this matter, may further say, that the law is a weake and a beggerly rudiment, because it maketh men more weake and beggerly: againe, because that of it selfe it hath no power, or riches whereby it is able to give or to bring righteousnesse: and moreover, that it is not only weake and beggerly, but even weaknesse and beggery it selfe. How then shall it enrich or strengthen those, which were before both weake and beggerly? Therefore to seek to be justified by the law, is as much as if a man being weake and feeble already, would seeke some other greater evill whereby he might overcome his weaknesse and poverty, which notwithstanding would bring unto him utter destruction. As if he which hath the falling sicknesse, would seek to joyne unto it the pestilence for a remedy: or if a leaper should come to a leaper, or a begger to a begger, the one to helpe and enrich the other.

Paul therefore sheweth, that they which seeke to be justified by the law, have this commodity thereby, that daily they become more
and

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

which still increase without end, so that he swarveth from righteousnesse more and more untill at length he fall to desperation. Hereof it cometh that many being at the point of death, have uttered these desperate words: O wretch that I am: I have not kept mine order: Whither shall I flie from the wrath of Christ, that angry Judge? Would to God I had been made a swineheard, or the vilest wretch in the whole world.

Thus the Monke in the end of his life is more weake, more beggarly, more faithlesse and fearfull then he was at the beginning when he first entred into his order. The reason is, because he would strengthen himselfe through weaknesse, and enrich himselfe through poverty. The law, or mens traditions, or the rule of his order, should have healed him when he was sick, and enriched him when he was poore: but he is become more feeble and more poore then the Publicans and harlots. The Publicans and harlots have not an heape of good workes to trust unto as the Monkes have: but although they feele their sinnes never so much, yet they can say with the Publican: *O Lord be mercifull to me a sinner.* But contrariwise the Monke which hath spent all his time in weake and beggarly elements, is confirmed in this opinion: If thou keep thy rule thou shalt be saved, &c. With this false perswasion he is so deluded and bewitched, that he cannot apprehend grace, no nor once remember grace. Thus, notwithstanding all the works which either he doth or hath done, be they never so many and so great, he thinketh that he hath never done enough, but hath still an eye to more works, and so by heaping up of works he goeth about to appease the wrath of God and to justifie himselfe, untill he be driven to utter desperation. Wherefore, whosoever falleth from faith and followeth the law, is like to *Esops* dogge, which forgoeth the flesh, and snatcheth at the shadow. Wherefore it is impossible that such as seek righteousnesse and salvation by the law (whereunto men are naturally enclined) should ever find quietnesse and peace of conscience: yea they doe nothing else but heape laws upon laws, whereby they torment both themselves and others, and afflict mens consciences so miserably, that through extreame anguish of heart many die before their time. For one law always bringeth forth ten more, and so they increase without number and without end.

Now, who would have thought that the *Galathians*, which had

Luke 18.13.

A lively description of all the religious hypocrites in the kingdom of Antichrist.

The fable is this, that a dogge swimming over the water with a peece of flesh in his mouth, let the flesh go, and snatcheth at the shadow which appeared in the water.

had learned so sound and so pure a doctrine of such an excellent Apostle and Teacher, could be so suddenly led away from the same, and utterly perverted by the false Apostles? It is not without cause that I repeat this so often, that to fall away from the truth of the Gospell is an easie matter. The reason is, because men doe not sufficiently consider, no not the very faithfull, what an excellent and a precious treasure the true knowledge of Christ is. Therefore they do not labour so diligently and so carefully as they should doe, to obtaine and to retain the same. Moreover, the greater part of those that heare the word, are exercised with no crosse or affliction: they wrestle not against sinne, death and the devill, but live in security without any conflict. Such men because they are not proved and tried with tentations, and therefore are not armed with the word of God against the subtillies of the devill, never feele the use and power of the word. Indeed whiles they are among faithfull Ministers and preachers, they can follow their words and say as they; perswading themselves that they perfectly understand the matter of justification. But when they are gone, and wolves in sheeps cloathing are come in their place; it happeneth unto them as it did to the Galatians: that is to say, they are suddenly seduced and easily turned backe to weake and beggerly rudiments.

Falling away from the Gospell is very easie.

of 1. Cor. 13

They that are not tryed with afflictions and tentations, never feele the power of the word

Paul hath here his peculiar manner of speech, which the other Apostles did not use. For there was none of them besides Paul, that gave such names to the law: to wit, that it is a weake and beggerly rudiment, that is to say, utterly unprofitable to righteousness. And surely I durst not have given such termes unto the law, but should have thought it great blasphemy against God, if Paul had not so done before. But of this I have intreated more largely before, where I shewed when the law is weake and beggarly, and when it is most strong and rich, &c. Now if the law of God be weake and unprofitable to justification, much more are the laws and decrees of the Pope, weake and unprofitable to justification. Therefore we give sentence against the ordinances, laws and decrees of the Pope, with such boldnesse and assurance, as Paul did against the law of God, that they are not onely weake and beggarly rudiments, and utterly unprofitable to righteousness, but also execrable, accursed, devillish and damnable: for they blaspheme grace, they overthrow the Gospell, abolish faith, take away Christ, &c.

Paul's manner of speech.

If the law of God be weake and not able to obtaine righteousness, much more the Popes traditions.

For as much then as the Pope requireth that we should keepe his laws as necessary to salvation, he is very Antichrist and the Vicar of Satan. And as many as cleave unto him, and confirme his abominations and blasphemies, or keepe them to this end, that thereby they may merit the forgiveness of their sins, are the servants of Antichrist and of the devill. Now, such hath the doctrine of the Papisticall Church bin of a long time, that these laws ought to be kept as necessary to salvation. Thus the Pope sitteth in the temple of God, vaunting himselfe as God: he setteth himselfe against God and exalteth himselfe above all that is called God or worshipped, &c. And mens consciences more feared and revered the laws and ordinances of the Pope, then the word of God and his ordinances. By this means he was made the Lord of heaven, of earth, and of hell, and beare a triple crown upon his head. The Cardinals also and Bishops his creatures, were made Kings and Princes of the world: and therefore if he did not burden mens consciences with his laws, he could not long maintain his terrible power, his dignity and his riches: but his whole kingdome would quickly fall.

a Thess. 2 40

The Popes
triple
crownes

To fall from
the grace of
God.

What judg-
ment they
give of the
law which
know not
Christ.

The thun-
drings of
Luther a-
gainst the
Pope and
his laws,

This place which *Paul* here handleth, is weighty and of great importance, and therefore the more diligently to be marked: to wit, that they which fall from grace to the law, do utterly loose the knowledge of the truth, they see not their own sins, they neither know God nor the devill, nor themselves, and moreover they understand not the force and use of the law, although they bragge never so much that they keep and observe the same. For without the knowledge of grace, that is to say, without the Gospell of Christ, it is impossible for a man to give this definition of the law: that it is a weak and a beggarly rudiment, and unprofitable to righteousness. But he rather judgeth quite contrary of the law: to wit, that it is not only necessary to salvation, but also that it strengthneth such as are weake, and enricheth such as are poore and beggarly: that is to say, that such as obey and observe the same, shall be able to merit righteousness and everlasting salvation. If this opinion remain, the promise of God is denied, Christ is taken away, lying, impiety and idolatry is established. Now, the Pope with all his Bishops, his Schoole and whole Synagogue, taught that his laws are necessary to salvation. Therefore he was a teacher of weak and beggarly elements, whereby he made the Church of Christ throughout the whole world; most weake and beggarly: that is to say, he burdened

and

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

The holy daies of the Iewes.

files taught, namely, the obseruation of daies, months, times and yeares. The *Jewes* were commanded to keepe holy the Sabbath day, the new Moons, the first and the seventh Month, the three appointed times or feasts, namely, the Paschall or Pasceover, the Feast of weeks, of the tabernacles, and the yeare of *Jubile*. These ceremonies the *Galathians* were also constrained by the false Apostles to keep as necessary to righteousness. Therefore he saith, that they, loosing the grace and libertie which they had in Christ, were turned back to the serving of weake and beggarly elements. For they were perswaded by the false Apostles, that these laws must needs be kept, and by keeping of them they should obtain righteousness: but if they kept them not, they should be damned. Contrariwise *Paul* can in no wise suffer that mens consciences should be bound to the law of *Moses*, but alwaies delivered them from the law. Behold *I Paul* (saith he a little after in the fifth chapter) doe write unto you, that if yee be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing: And Col. 2. Let no man judge you in meat or drink, or in a peece of an holy day, or of a new Moon or Sabbath day, &c. So saith our Saviour Christ: The kingdome of God cometh not with obseruation of the law. Much lesse then are mens consciences to be burdened and snared, with humane traditions.

Luk. 17. 20.

Verse 11. I am in feare of you, lest I have bestowed on you labour in vaine.

The fatherly affection of Paul towards the Galathians.

Here *Paul* sheweth himselfe to be greatly troubled through the fall of the *Galathians*: Whom he would more bitterly reprove, but that he feareth lest if he should deale with them more sharply, he should not only not make them better, but more offend them and so utterly alienate their minds from him. Therefore in writing hee changeth and mitigateth his words, and as though all the harme redounded unto himselfe, he saith: I am in feare of you lest I have bestowed my labour on you in vaine: That is to say, it grieveth me that I have preached the Gospell with so great diligence and faithfulness amongst you, and see no fruit to come thereof. Notwithstanding although he shew a very loving and a fatherly affection towards them, yet withall he chideth them somewhat sharply, but yet covertly. For when he saith, that he had laboured in vaine, that is to say, that he had preached the Gospell among them without any fruit, he sheweth covertly, that either they were obstinate

To labour in vaine.

unbelievers, or else were fallen from the doctrine of faith. Now, both these, as well unbelievers as back-sliders from the doctrine of faith, are sinners, wicked, unrighteous, and damned. Such therefore do obey the law in vain, they observe daies, months and years in vain. And in these words: *I am in feare of you, lest I have bestowed on you labour in vain,* is contained a certain secret excommunication. For the Apostle meaneth thereby that the *Galathians* were secluded and seperate from Christ, unless they speedily returned to sound and sincere doctrine again: yet he pronounced no open sentence against them. For he perceived that he could do no good with over sharp dealing: wherfore he changeth his stile and speaketh them very fair, saying:

Be ye as I: for I am even as you.

Hitherto *Paul* hath bin occupied wholly in teachings, and being moved with this great enormity and wicked revolting of the *Galathians*, he was vehemently incensed against them, and chid them bitterly, calling them fools, bewitched, not believing the truth, crucifiers of Christ, &c. Now the greater part of his Epistle being finished; he beginneth to perceive that he had handled them too sharply, Therefore being careful lest he should doe more hurt, then good through his severity, he sheweth that this his sharpe chiding proceeded of a fatherly affection and a true Apostolicall heart: and so he qualifieth the matter with sweet and gentle words, to the end that if he had offended any (as no doubt there were many offended) by these sweet and loving words he might win them again.

The Apostle now speaketh them faire, whom before he did sharply chide.

And here by his owne example he admonisheth all Pastours and Ministers, that they ought to beare a fatherly and motherly affection: not towards ravening wolves, but towards the poore sheep, miserably seduced and going astray, patiently bearing with their faults and infirmities, instructing and restoring them with the spirit of meeknesse: For they cannot be brought into the right way againe by any other meanes: and by over sharpe reproving and rebuking they are provoked to anger, or else to desperation, but not to repentance. And here is to be noted by the way, that such is the nature and fruit of true and sound doctrine, that when it is well taught and well understood; it joyneth mens hearts together with a singular concord: but when men reject godly and sincere doctrine and embrace errors, it this

A right Image of a godly Pastor.

Gal. 6. 3.

The fruit of sound doctrine.

unity.

Vainy and
concord
broken by
wicked do-
ctrine.

unity and concord is soone broken. Therefore as soone as thou seest thy brethren seduced by vaine and fantastical spirits, to fall from the article of Justification, thou shalt perceiue that by and by they will pursue the faithfull with bitter hatred, whom before they most tenderly loved.

They which
fall from
sound do-
ctrine, be-
come worse
then they
were before

This we find to be true at this day in our false brethren and other Sectaries, who at the beginning of the Reformation of the Gospell, were glad to heare us, and read our bookes with great zeale and affection. They acknowledged the grace of the holy Ghost in us, and revered us for the same, as the Ministers of God. Some of them also lived familiarly with us for a time, and behaved themselves very modestly and soberly. But when they were departed from us and perverted by the wicked doctrine of the Sectaries, they shewed themselves more bitter enemies to our doctrine and our name, then any other. I doe much and often marvell whereupon they should conceive such a deadly hatred against us, whom they before so dearly and so tenderly loved: for we offended them not in any thing, nor gave them any occasion to hate us. Yea they are constrained to confesse that we desire nothing more then that the glory of God may be advanced, the benefit of Christ truly known, and the truth of the Gospell purely taught, which God hath now againe in these latter dayes revealed by us unto this unthankfull world: which thing should rather provoke them to love us then to hate us. I marvell therefore not without cause, whereof this chance cometh: Verily there is no other cause, but that they have gotten unto themselves new masters and hearkned to new teachers, whose poyson hath so infected them, that now of very friends they are become our mortal enemies. And I see the condition of the Apostles and of all other faithfull Ministers to be such, that their disciples and hearers being once infected with the errors of the false Apostles and hereticks, have and do set themselves against them, and become their enemies. There were very few amongst the *Galathians* which continued in the sound doctrine of the Apostle: all the rest being seduced by the false Apostles, did not acknowledge *Paul* for their Pastour and teacher any more: yea there was nothing more odious unto them then the name and doctrine of *Paul*. And I feare me, that this Epistle brought very few of them back again from their error.

The condi-
tion of the
Apostles.

If the like case should happen unto us: that is to say, if in our

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

to bee unto you a father, but his letters shew in his absence that he is a tyrant, &c.) Therefore hee is so troubled through a godly care and fatherly affection, that hee cannot well tell how and what to write to them. For it is a dangerous thing for a man to defend his cause against those which are absent, and have now begun to hate him, and are perswaded by others that his cause is not good. Therefore being in great perplexity, he saith a little after: I am troubled and at my wits end for your cause, that is, I know not what to doe, or how to deale with you.

Verse 12. *Be ye not as I am, for I am as ye are.*

These words are to be understood, not of doctrine, but of affections. Therefore the meaning is not: *Be ye as I am*: that is to say, thinke of doctrine as I doe: but beare such an affection towards me, as I doe towards you. As though he would say: Perhaps I have too sharply chidden you, but pardon this my sharpenesse, and judge not my heart by my words, but my words by the affection of my heart. My words seeme rough, and my chastisement sharpe, but my heart is loving and fatherly. Therefore (O my *Galathians*) take this my chiding with such a mind as I beare towards you: For the matter required that I should shew my selfe so sharpe and severe towards you.

He mitigateth his former sharpe chiding.

The master

Even so may we also say of our selves. Our correction is severe and our manner of writing sharpe and vehement: but certainly there is no bitternesse in our heart, no envie, no desire of revenge against our adversaries: but there is in us a godly carefulnesse and sorrow of spirit. We doe not so hate the Pope and other erroneous spirits, that we wish any evill unto them, or desire their destruction: but rather wee desire that they may returne againe to the right way, and be saved together with us. The schoolemaster chastiseth his scholler, not to hurt him but to reforme him. The rod is sharpe, but correction is necessary for the child, and the heart of him that correcteth, loving and friendly. So the father chastiseth his sonne, not to destroy him, but to reforme and amend him. Stripes are sharpe and grievous to the child, but the fathers heart is loving and kind: And unlesse he loved his child, hee would not chastise him, but cast him off, despaire of his welfare, and suffer him to perish. This correction therefore which hee giveth to his child, is a token of fatherly affection, and is profitable for the child. Even

The fathers chastisement necessary & profitable.

so, O my Galathians, think ye likewise of my dealing towards you: then will ye not judge my chiding to be sharpe and bitter, but profitable for you. *Chastisement for the present time seemeth not to be joyous, but grievous: but afterwards it bringeth the quiet fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby:* Let the same affection therefore be in you towards me, which I beare towards you. I beare a loving heart towards you: the same I desire againe of you. Heb. 12. 11

Thus he speaketh them faire, and with this faire speech he still continueth, that he might pacifie their minds which were stirred up against him by his sharp chiding. Notwithstanding he revoketh not his severe words. Indeed he confesseth that they were sharp and bitter: but necessity (saith he) compelled me to reprehend you somewhat sharply and severely: but that which I did, proceeded of a sincere and loving heart towards you. The Physitian giveth a bitter potion to his patient, not to hurt him, but to cure him. If then the bitterness of the medicine, which is given to the sick body, is not to be imputed to the Physitian, but to the medicine and the malady: judge ye also in like manner of my severe and sharpe reprehension. The Physitian,

Verse 12. *Bretheren, I beseech you: ye have not hurt me at all.*

Is this to beseech the Galathians, when he calleth them bewitched, disobedient to the truth, and crucifiers of Christ? It seemeth rather to be a great rebuke. But contrariwise Paul saith, that it is no rebuke, but an earnest beseeching, and indeed so it is. And it is as much as if he said: I confesse that I have chidden you somewhat bitterly, but take it in good part, and then shall ye find this my chiding, to be no chiding, but a praying and a beseeching. If a father likewise doe sharply correct his sonne, it is as much as he said: My sonne, I pray thee be a good child, &c. It seemeth indeed to be a correction, but if ye respect the fathers heart, it is a gentle and an earnest beseeching. The stripes of a friend are better then the kisses of an enemy.

Verse 12. *Ye have not hurt me at all.*

As if he said: Why should I be angry with you, or of a malicious minde speake evill of you, seeing ye have nothing offended me? Why then sayest thou that we are perverted, that we have forsaken thy doctrine, that we are foolish, bewitched, &c. These things. An objection.

things doe witnesse that we have offended thee. He answereth: Ye have not offended me but your selves, and therefore I am thus troubled, not for mine owne cause, but for the love I beare unto you. Thinke not therefore that my chiding did proceed of malice or any evill affection. For I take God to witnesse, ye have done me no wrong, but contrariwise ye have bestowed great benefits upon me.

Thus speaking them faire, he prepareth their minds to suffer his fatherly chastisement with a childlike affection. And this is to temper wormewood or a bitter potion with hony and sugar, to make it sweet againe. So parents speake their children faire when they have well beaten them, giving them apples, peares and other like things, whereby their children know that their parents love them and seeke to doe them good, how sharpe soever their correction doth appeare.

Verſe 13. *And ye know how through the infirmity of the flesh, I preached the Gospell unto you at the first. And the triall of me which was in my flesh, ye despised not, neither abhorred, but ye received me as an Angell of God, yea as Christ Jesus.*

He praiseth
the Galathi-
ans because
they were
not offen-
ded with his
infirmity.

Now he declareth what pleasure he had received of the *Galathians*. The first benefit (saith he) which I esteeme as the greatest of all, was this. When I began first to preach the Gospell amongst you, and that through infirmity of the flesh and great tentations, my crosse did nothing at all offend you: but ye shewed your selves so loving, so kind and so friendly towards me, that not only ye were not offended with this my infirmity of the flesh, with my tentations and afflictions wherewith I was almost overwhelmed: but also ye loved me dearly, and received me as an Angell of God, yea rather as Christ Jesus himselfe. This is indeed a great commendation of the *Galathians*, that they received the Gospell of a man so contemptible and afflicted on every side as *Paul* was. For where he preached the Gospell amongst them, both the Jewes and Gentiles murmured and raged against him. For all the mighty, wise, religious and learned men, hated, persecuted and blasphemed *Paul*. With all this the *Galathians* were no whit offended, but turning their eyes from the beholding of this infirmity, these tentations and dangers, they did not only heare that poore, despi-
fed,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



power of Christ may dwell in mee. Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in anguish for Christ's sake: for when I am weak then am I strong. And in the 11th Chapter, In labours more abundant: in stripes above measure: in prisons more plentiful: in death oft. Of the Jewes five times received I forty stripes save one: I was thrice beaten with rods, I was once stoned: I suffered thrice shipwracke, &c. These afflictions which he suffered in his body he calleth the infirmity of the flesh, and not any corporall disease. As though he would say: When I preached the Gospell amongst you, I was oppressed with sundry tentations and afflictions. I was alwayes in danger both of the Jewes and of the Gentiles, and also of false brethren. I suffered hunger, and wanted all things. I was as the very filth and offcowering of the world. He maketh mention of that his infirmity in many places, as in the 1 Cor. 4. 2 Cor. 4. 6, 11, 12. and in many other.

We see then that *Paul* calleth afflictions the infirmities of the flesh which he suffered in the flesh, like as the other Apostles, the Prophets and all godly men did: notwithstanding he was mighty in Spirit. For the power of Christ was in him, which alwayes reigned and triumphed through him. Which thing he testifieth in the 2 Cor. 12. in these words: *For when I am weak then am I strong.* Also: *I will gladly rejoyce in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may dwell in me.* And in the second Chapter. *Thanks be to God which alwayes maketh us to triumph in Christ.* As though he would say: Indeed the devill, the Jewes and the Gentiles rage cruelly against us: notwithstanding we continue constant and invincible against all their assaults, and will they nill they, our doctrine prevaileth and triumpheth. This was the strength and power of the Spirit in *Paul*, against the which he setteth here the infirmity and bondage of the flesh.

The power
of the Spirit
in *Paul*.

Now, this infirmity of the flesh in the godly doth wonderfully offend reason. Therefore *Paul* so highly commendeth the *Galatians*, because they were not offended with this great infirmity, and with this vile and contemptible forme of the crosse which they saw in him: but received him as an Angell, yea as Christ Jesus. And Christ himselfe also armeth the faithfull against this base and contemptible forme of the crosse in which he appeared, when he saith: *Blessed is hee that is not offended in mee.* And surely it is

Math. 23.

great matters that they which beleeve in him, doe acknowledge him to be Lord of all, and Saviour of the world: whom notwithstanding they heare to have been the most miserable of all others, the least of men, yea a very scorne of men, and a contempt of the world: briefly, despised and hated of all men, and condemned to the death of the crosse, and even of his own people, and especially of those that were esteemed the best, the wisest, the holiest of all others. This is a great matter (I say) not to be moved with these great offences, and to be able, not only to contemne them, but also to esteeme this poore Christ so spitefully scorned, spit upon, whipped and crucified, more then the riches of all the richest, the strength of all the strongest, the wisdom of all the wisest, the holinesse of all the holiest men, with all the crownes and scepters of all the Kings and Princes of the whole world. They therefore are worthily called blessed of Christ, which are not offended in him.

Psalm. 12, 9.

Now; *Paul* had not only outward tentations (whereof I have spoken already) but also inward and spirituall tentations, as Christ had in the garden: such as that was whereof he complaineth in the 2 *Cor.* 12. *That he felt the prick or sting of the flesh, and the Angell of Satan which buffeted him.* This I say by the way, because the Papists expound this to be a motion of fleshly lust; but it was a spirituall tentation. And herein is no repugnance in that he addeth this word *flesh*, saying: *A pricke was given me in the flesh.* Yea he calleth it of purpose a pricke in the flesh. For the *Galathians* and others which were conversant with *Paul*, had seen him oftentimes in great heavinesse, anguish, and terrour: Wherefore the Apostles had not onely bodily, but also spirituall tentations, which also he confesseth in the 2 *Cor.* 7. with these words: *Fightings without, and terrours within.* And *Luke* saith in the last of the *Acts*, that *Paul* when he had long striven in the tempests of the sea, even unto the heavinesse of the spirit, was againe refreshed, and waxed bold when he saw the brethren that came from *Rome* to meet him at the market of *Appius* and three Tavernes. Also, in *Phil.* 2. he confesseth, that God had mercy upon him, in that he restored *Epaphroditus* so weake and neare to death, unto health againe, least he should have sorrow upon sorrow. Therefore besides outward tentations, the Apostles also suffered great anguish, heavinesse and terrours.

The spirituall tentations of *Paul*.

The anguish of the spirit in the Apostles.

But why saith *Paul*, that he was not despised of the *Galathians*?

ans? It seemeth that they despised him, when they fell away from his
 Gospell. *Paul* expoundeth himselfe. When I first preached to you the
 Gospell (saith he) ye did not as other people have done, who being
 greatly offended through this my infirmity and tentation of the flesh,
 have despised and rejected me. For mans reason is soone offended
 with this vile and contemptible forme of the crosse, and judgeth those
 to be starke mad, which being so afflicted, will go about to comfort,
 to helpe and to succour others: Also, those that boast of their great
 riches, that is to say, of righteousnesse, strength, victory over sinne,
 death and all evils, of joy, salvation and everlasting life, and yet not
 withstanding are needy, weake, heavy hearted and despised, evill in-
 treated and slaine, as very noisome poisons both of common-weales
 and religion, and they which kill them think they doe high service
 unto God. Therefore, when they promise unto others eternall trea-
 sures, and they themselves perish so wretchedly before the world, they
 are laughed to scorn and compelled to heare: *Physitian cure thy selfe.*
 And hereof come these complaints which are every where in the
 Psalmes: *I am a worme and no man, &c.* Againe: *Depart not from me,*
for tribulation is at hand, and there is none to helpe, &c.
 This is therefore a great commendation of the *Galathians*, that
 they were not offended with this infirmity and tentation of *Paul*,
 but received him as an Angell of God, yea as Christ Jesus.
 It is indeed a great vertue and worthy of great praise to heare
 the Apostle. But it is a greater, and a true Christian vertue, to
 give care, unto one so miserable, weake and contemptible as *Paul*
 was among the *Galathians* (as here he witnesseth of himselfe) and
 to receive him as an Angell from Heaven, and to give him such ho-
 nour as if he had been Christ Jesus himselfe, and not to be offen-
 ded with his afflictions, being so great and so many. Wherefore, by
 these words he highly commendeth the vertue of the *Galathians*,
 which hee saith, hee will keepe in perpetuall remembrance, and
 so greatly esteemeth the same, that he desireth it may be knowne
 unto all men. Notwithstanding in setting forth so highly their
 benefits and praises, he sheweth covertly how entirely they lo-
 ved him before the coming of the false Apostles, and therewith-
 all he moveth them to continue as they began, and to embrace
 him with no lesse love and reverence then they did before. And here-
 by it may also appeare, that the false apostles had greater authority
 among

Job. 6. 2.

Luk. 4. 23.

Psal. 22. 6. 11.

The praise
of the Ga-
lathians.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

The Galatians succoured Paul with their great perill.

The name of Luther odious.

He praiseth the *Galathians* above measure. Ye did not only intreat me (saith he) most courteously and with all reverence, receiving me as an Angell of God, &c. but also if necessity had required, ye would have plucked out your own eyes and given them to me: yea, you would have bestowed your lives for me. And indeed the *Galathians* bestowed their lives for him: For in that they received and maintained Paul (whom the world accounted most execrable and accursed) they turned upon their own heads, as receivers and maintainers of Paul, the cruell hatred and indignation of all the Jewes and Gentiles.

So also at this day the name of *Luther* is most odious to the world. He that praiseth me sinneth worse then any Idolater, blasphemour, perjurer, whoremonger, adulterer, murderer or theefe. It must needs be therefore that the *Galathians* were well established in the doctrine and faith of Christ, seeing that they with so great danger of their lives, received and maintained Paul which was hated throughout all the world. For else they would never have sustained that cruell hatred of the whole world.

Verse 16. *Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth.*

What Paul sought by his sharpe chiding.

Here he sheweth the reason, why he speaketh the *Galathians* so faire. For he suspecteth that they take him for their enemy, because he had reprov'd them so sharply. I pray you (saith he) set apart these rebukes, and seperate them from doctrine, and ye shall find that my purpose was not to rebuke you, but to teach you the truth. Indeed I confesse that my Epistle is sharpe and severe: but by this severity I goe about to call you backe againe to the truth of the Gospell, from the which ye are fallen, and to keep you in the same: therefore apply this sharpenesse and this bitter potion, not to your persons, but to your disease: And judge me not to be your enemy in rebuking you so sharply, but rather thinke that I am your father. For unlesse I loved you dearly as my children, and knew also that I am beloved of you, I would not have reprov'd you so sharply.

It is the part of a friend, freely to admonish his friend if he doe amisse, and when he is so admonished, if he be wise he is not angry with the other which hath so friendly admonished him and told him the truth, but giveth him thanks. It is commonly scene in the

the world that truth bringeth hatred, and that he is accounted an enemy which speaketh the truth. But amongst friends it is not so: much lesse amongst Christians. Seeing therefore I have reprehended you of meer love, to the end ye might abide in the truth, ye ought not to be offended with me nor loose the truth, or think me your enemy, because of my friendly and fatherly reprehension. All these things are spoken of *Paul*, to confirm that which he said before: *Be ye as I am: ye have not hurt me, &c.*

Truth-pro-
cured ha-
tred.

Verse 17. *They are jealous over you amisse, &c.*

He reproveth here the flattery of the false Apostles. For Satan is wont by his Ministers, through wonderfull subtilty and crafty sleights to beguile the simple: As *Paul* saith, Rom. 16. *With faire speech and flattering they deceive the hearts of the simple.* For first of all; they make great protestations that they seeke nothing else but the advancement of Gods glory: and moreover that they are moved by the Spirit (because the miserable people are neglected, or else because the truth is not purely taught of others) to teach the infallible truth, that by this meanes the elect may be delivered from error, and may come to the true light and knowledge of the truth. Moreover, they promise undoubted salvation to those that receive their doctrine. If vigilant and faithfull Pastors do not withstand these ravening wolves, they will do great harme to the Church under this pretence of godlines, and under this sheeps cloathing. For the *Galathians* might say: why dost thou inveigh so bitterly against our teachers for that they be jealous over us? For that which they do, they do of zeal and meer love: this ought not to offend thee, &c. Indeed (saith he) they are jealous over you, but their jealousie is not good.

The nature
and subtilty
of the false
Apostles.

Here note that zeale or jealousie, properly signifieth an angry love, or, as ye would say, a godly envy. *Elias* saith: *I have beene ver- ry jealous for the Lord of hosts.* After this manner the husband is jealous towards the wife, the father towards the sonne, the brother towards his brother, that is to say, they love him entirely: yet so that they hate their vices and goe about to amend them. Such a zeale the false Apostles pretended to beare towards the *Galathians*. *Paul* indeed confesseth that they were very zealous towards the *Galathians*, but their zeale (saith he) was not good. Now, by this colour and subtile pretence the simple are deceived, when these

zeale.

2 Cor. 12. 16.

The simple
are decei-
ved by the

pretence & fained zeal of hereticks

A good zeale and an evill zeale.

seducers doe make them to believe that they beare a great zeale and affection toward them, and that they are very carefull for them: *Paul* therefore warneth us here to put a difference betwixt a good zeale and an evill zeale. Indeed a good zeale is to be commended, but not an evill zeale. I am as zealous over you (saith *Paul*) as they. Now judge ye which of our zeales is better, mine or theirs: which is good and godly, which is evill and carnall. Therefore let not their zeale so easily seduce you.

Verse 17. *They would exclude us, that you should altogether love them.*

The zeal of the false apostles.

As if he said: True it is, that they are very zealous towards you, but by this means they seek that ye again should be zealous towards them, and reject me. If their zeale were sincere and godly, then surely they would be content that I also should be beloved of you as well as they. But they hate our doctrine, and therefore their desire is that it may be utterly abolished, and their owne preached amongst you. Now, to the end they might bring this to passe, they goe about by this jealousie to plucke your hearts from me, and to make me odious unto you, that when ye have conceived an hatred against me and my doctrine, and turned your affection and zeale towards them, ye should love them only, and receive no other doctrine but theirs. Thus he bringeth the false apostles into suspition among the *Galatians*, shewing that by this goodly pretence they go about to deceive them. So our Saviour Christ also warneth us, saying: *Take heed of false prophets which come to you in sheeps cloathing.*

Mat 7.15.

Many evils followed Pauls doctrine, although it was godly and holy.

Paul suffered the same tentation which we suffer at this day. He was marvellously troubled with this enormity, that after the preaching of his doctrine, which was divine and holy, he saw so many sects, commotions, dissipations of common-weales, changes of kingdomes and other like things to ensue, which were the cause of infinite evils and offences. He was accused by the Jewes to be a pernicious fellow, a mover of sedition in his whole nation, and to be an authour of the sect of *Nazarites*. As if they had said: This is a seditious and a blasphemous fellow: for he preacheth such things, whereby he not onely overthroweth the *Jewish* Common-wealth, excellently well ordered and established by the laws of God: but also

Act. 21.5.

so

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Chap. III.

Upon the EPISTLE

in me. Contrariwise he knew that they were condemned, which judged this doctrine to be foolish and hereticall. Therefore he saith, as Christ said of the Jewes and Gentiles which were offended with this doctrine: *Let them alone, they are blind, and leaders of the blind.*

Mat. 15. 14.

All the troubles which are at this day, the world layeth unto our members charge

We also are constrained at this day to heare the same spoken of us, which was said of *Paul* and the other Apostles: to wit, that the doctrine of the Gospell which we professe, is the cause of many and great enormities, as of seditions, wars, sects and innumerable offences. Yea; they impute unto us all the troubles which are at this day. Surely we teach no heresies or wicked doctrine, but we preach the glad tidings concerning Christ, that he is our high Priest and our Redemer. Moreover, our adversaries are constrained (if they will confesse the truth) to grant us this, that we have given no occasion through our doctrine, of seditions, wars or tumults: but alwaies have taught that honour and reverence must be given to the Magistrate, because God hath so commanded. Neither are we the authours of offences: but in that the wicked are offended, the fault is in themselves and not in us. God hath commanded us to preach the doctrine of the Gospell without any respect of offence. But because this doctrine condemneth the wicked doctrine and idolatry of our adversaries, they being provoked therby, raise offences of themselves, which the Schoolmen called offences taken, which they said, ought not to be avoided, nor can be avoided.

Offence taken.

Mat. 15. 14.

Act 3. 21, 36
Act 4. 12.

Christ taught the Gospell, having no regard to the offence of the Jewes. *Suffer them,* (saith he) *they are blinde and leaders of the blinde.* The more the Priests forbad the Apostles to preach in the name of Christ, the more the Apostles gave witness, that the same Jesus whom they had crucified, is both Lord and Christ, and whosoever should call upon him, should be saved, and that there is none other name given unto men under Heaven, whereby they must be saved, &c. Even so we preach Christ at this day, not regarding the clamours of the wicked Papiſts and all our adversaries, which cry out that our doctrine is seditious and full of blasphemy, that it troubleth common-weales, overthroweth religion and teacheth heresies, and briefly that it is the cause of all evils. When Christ and his Apostles preached, the same was said likewise of them. Not long after, the *Romanes* came, and according to their own prophe-

The complaints of the adversaries against the doctrine of the Gospell.

prophecy, destroyed both the place and the nation. Wherefore let the enemies of the Gospell at this day take heed that they be not overwhelmed with these evils, which they prophecy unto themselves.

These they make grievous and hainous offences, that Monks and Priests do marry wives, that we eat flesh upon the Fridaies and such like. But this is no offence to them at all, that by their wicked doctrine they seduce and daily destroy innumerable souls, that by their evill example they offend the weake, that they blaspheme and condemne the glorious Gospell of the mighty God, and that they persecute and kill those that love the sincerity of doctrine and the word of life: this (I say) is to them no offence, but an obedience, a service and an acceptable sacrifice unto God. Let us suffer them therefore: *For they are blind, and leaders of the blind. He that hurteth, let him hurt still, and he that is filthy, let him be more filthy.* But we, because we believe, will speak and set forth the wonderfull works of the Lord so long as we have breath, and will endure the persecutions of our adversaries untill that time that Christ our high Bishop and King shall come from heaven, who we hope will come shortly as a just Judge to take vengeance of all these that obey not his Gospell. So be it.

The Papists
justifie their
own horri-
ble sins, and
condemne
our good
deeds.

Mat. 23. 14.
Apoc 22.

With these offences which the wicked alleadge, the godly are nothing moved. For they know that the devill hateth nothing more then the pure doctrine of the Gospel, and therefore he goeth about to deface it with innumerable offences, that by this meanes he might root it out of mens hearts for ever. Before, when nothing else was taught in the Church but mens traditions, the devill did not so rage. For whilst the strong man kept the house, all that he possessed was in peace: but now when a stronger commeth which vanquisheth and bindeth that strong one and spoyleth his house, then he beginneth to rage indeed. And this is an infallible token, that the doctrine which we professe is of God. For else (as it is said in the 40. of Job) that *Behemoth would lie hid under the trees in the covert of the reeds and fens.* But now, that he rangeth about like a roaring Lion, and stirreth up such hurly burlies, it is a manifest token that he feeleth the power of our preaching.

The devill
defaceth
the Gospell
with infinite
offences.

Luk. 11. 21,
22.

1 Pet. 5. 8.

Zealous spi-
rits with out
knowledge,
are the au-
thours of
sects.

When Paul saith: *They are jealous over you but amisse,* he sheweth by the way who are the authours of Sects: to wit, those jealous spirits which in all time overthrow the true doctrine, and trouble

trouble the publike peace. For these things stirred up with a perverse zeale, imagine that they have a certain singular holines, modesty, patience and doctrine above others, and therefore they thinke that they are able to provide for the salvation of all men, that they can teach more profound and profitable things, ordain better service and ceremonies then all other teachers besides: whom they despise as nothing in comparison of themselves, and abate their authority, and corrupt those things which they have purely taught. The false Apostles had such a wicked and perverse zeal, stirring up sects, not only in *Galatia*, but also in all the places whersoever *Paul* and the other Apostles had preached; after the which sects followed innumerable offences and marvellous troubles. For the devill (as Christ saith) is a liar and a murderer, and therefore he is wont not only to trouble mens consciences by false doctrine, but also to stir up tumults, seditions, warrs and all mischief.

Job. 8. 44.

There are very many at this day which are possessed with this kind of jealousie, which pretend great religion, modesty, doctrine, and patience, and yet in very deed they are ravening wolves: who with their hypocrisie seek nothing els but to discredit us, that the people might esteem, love and reverence them only, and receive no other doctrine but theirs. Now, because these men have a great opinion of themselves, and despise other, it cannot be, but that there must needs follow horrible dissentions, sects, divisions and seditions. But what should we do? we cannot remedy this matter: as *Paul* could not do in his time. Notwithstanding he gained some, which obeyed his admonitions. So I hope also that I have called some back from the errours of the Sectaries.

Verse 18. *But it is a good thing to love earnestly alwaies in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you.*

As if he should say: I commend you for this, that ye loved me so entirely when I preached the Gospell amongst you in the infirmity of the flesh. Ye ought to beare the same affection towards me now when I am absent, even as if I had never departed from you. For although I be absent in body, yet have ye my doctrine, which ye ought to retain and maintain, seeing ye received the holy Ghost through it: thinking with your selves that *Paul* is alwaies present with you as long as yee have the doctrine. I do not therefore reprehend your zeale, but I praise it, and so farre forth I praise it, as it is the zeale of God or of the Spirit,
and

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

you rightly through the Gospell : but these corrupters have formed a new shape in your heart, not of Christ, but of *Moses* : so that now your affiance is not grounded any more upon Christ, but upon the works of the law. This is not the true forme of Christ, but it is another forme, and altogether devillish. And he saith not : of whom I travell in birth untill my forme be fashioned in you, but untill Christ be formed in you : That is to say, I travell that ye may receive again the forme and similitude of Christ, and not of *Paul*. In which words he again reproveth the false Apostles : for they had abolished the forme of Christ in the hearts of the believers, and had deviled another form, that is to say, their own : As he saith chap. 6. *They would have you circumcised, that they might rejoyce in your flesh.*

The forme
of Christ,

Of this forme of Christ he speaketh also in the third to the *Colossians* : *Put yee on the new man which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him.* *Paul* therefore goeth about to repaire the forme of Christ in the *Galathians* that was disfigured and corrupted by the false Apostles : which is, that they should thinke, and will as God doth, whose thought and will is, that wee should obtaine remission of our sins, and everlasting life by *Jesus Christ* his only Sonne, whom he sent into the world to the end he might be the propitiation of our sinnes, and that we should know that through this his Son he is appeased and become our loving father. They that believe this are like unto God, that is to say, all their thoughts are of God, as the affection of their heart is : they have the same forme in their mind which is in God or in Christ. This is to be renewed in the spirit of our mind, and to put on the new man which after God is created in righteousnesse and true holinesse, as *Paul* saith, *Ephes. 4.*

Who be
like unto
God,

Phil. 2.5.

He saith then, that he travellet h againe of the *Galathians* in birth, and yet so notwithstanding, that the forme of the children should not be the forme of the Apostle : so that the children should not resemble the forme of *Paul*, or of *Cephas*, &c. but of another father, that is to say, of Christ. I will fashion him (saith he) in you that the same mind may be in you, which was in Christ himselfe. To be brieft : *I travell of you* : that is to say, I labour carefully to call you backe to your former faith, the which ye have lost, (being deceived by the craft and subtilty of the false Apostles) and are returned to the law and works. Therefore I must now againe
care-

carefully travell to bring you backe, from the law to the faith of Christ. This he calleth to travell in birth, &c.

Verse 20. *And I would I were with you now, that I might change my voice, &c.*

These are the true cares of an Apostle. It is a common saying, that a letter is a dead messenger: for it can give no more then it hath. And no Epistle or letter is written so exactly, wherein there is not somewhat lacking. For the circumstances are divers: there is a diversity of times, places, persons, manners and affections: all which no Epistle can expresse: Therefore it moveth the reader diversly, making him now sad, now merry, as he himselfe is disposed. But if any thing be spoken sharply or out of time, the lively voice of a man may expound, mitigate, or correct the same. Therefore the Apostle wisheth that he were with them, to the end he might temper and change his voice, as he should see it needfull by the qualities of their affections. As, if he should see any of them very much troubled, he might so temper his words, that they should not be oppressed thereby, with more heavinesse: Contrariwise: if he should see others high minded, he might sharply reprehend them, lest they should be too secure and carelesse, and so at length become contemners of God.

An Epistle
or letter is a
dead messenger.

Wherefore he could not devise how he being absent, should deale with them by letters. As if he should say: If my epistle be too sharp, I feare I shall more offend then amend some of you. Againe: if it be too gentle, it will not profit those which are perverse and obstinate: for dead letters and words give no more then they have. Contrariwise, the lively voice of a man compared to an Epistle, is a Queene: For it can adde and diminish: it can change it selfe into all manner of affections, times, places, and persons. To be briefe, I would gladly convert you by letters, that is to say, call you back from the law to the faith of Jesus Christ: but I feare that I shall not so do by my dead letters. But if I were with you, I could change my voice, I could reprove them bitterly that are obstinate, and comfort the weake with sweet and loving words, as occasion should require.

Verse 20. *For I am troubled for you.*

That is to say: I am so troubled in my spirit; that I know not how

Chap. III. . . . Upon the EPISTLE

The true affection of an Apostle.

how by letters to behave my selfe towards you. Here is a lively description of the true affection of an Apostle. He omitteth nothing, he chideth the *Galathians*: he intreateth them: he speaketh them faire: he highly commendeth their faith, labouring by all meanes to bring them backe againe to the truth of the Gospell, and to deliver them out of the snares of the false apostles. These are vehement words, proceeding from an heart stirred up and enflamed with a hot burning zeale, and therefore ought diligently to be considered.

Verſe 21. Tell me, yee that will be under the law, doe yee not heare the law?

The use of allegories and similitudes.

Here would *Paul* have closed up his Epistle, for he desired not to write any more, but rather to be present with the *Galathians*, and to speake unto them himselfe. But he being in great perplexity and very carefull for this matter, taketh by the way this allegorie, which then came into his mind. For the people are greatly delighted with allegories and similitudes, and therefore Christ himselfe oftentimes useth them. For they are as it were certaine pictures which set forth things as if they were painted before the eyes of the simple, and therefore they move and perswade very much; especially the simple and ignorant. First therefore he stirreth up the *Galathians* with words and writings: Secondly he painteth out the matter it selfe before their eyes with this goodly allegorie.

How Paul handleth allegories.

Origen and Hierome.

Now, *Paul* was a marvellous cunning workman in handling of allegories: for he is wont to apply them to the doctrine of faith, to grace, and to Christ; and not to the law and the works thereof, as *Origen* and *Hierome* doe, who are worthily reprehended for that they turned the plaine sentences of the Scripture, where allegories have no place, into unfit and foolish allegories. Therefore to use allegories, it is oftentimes a very dangerous thing. For unlesse a man have the perfect knowledge of Christian doctrine, he cannot use allegories rightly and as he should doe.

An objection.

But why doth *Paul* call the booke of *Genesis*, out of the which he alledgeth the history of *Ismael* and *Isaac*, the law, seeing that booke containeth nothing at all concerning the law: and specially that place which he alledgeth, speaketh not of any law: but onely containeth a plaine history of *Abrahams* two children? *Paul* is wont to call the first booke of *Moses* the law, after the manner of the Jews:

The answer.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Sara had heard the promise of God as concerning the seed, but she waiteth not for Gods appointed time. Sara resigneth up her right.

The humility of Sara.

Ismael was the sonne of Abraham according to the flesh. * That is said to be done at adventure or by chance, wherof man knoweth not the cause: although un- to God it be fore-known and appointed.

Abraham hath two sorts of children.

Abraham, as it is said in the booke of *Genesis*. For *Sara* had heard that *Abraham* by the promise of God, should have seed of his body, and she hoped that she should be the mother of this seed. But when she had waited now for the promise many yeares with great anguish of spirit, and saw that the matter was so long deferred, she was out of hope. This holy woman therefore giveth place for the honour of her husband, and resigneth her right to another, that is to say, to her maid. Notwithstanding she suffereth not her husband to marry another wife out of his house, but she giveth unto him in marriage her servant, to the end that she might be builded by her: For so saith the historie, *Gen. 16.* Now, *Sara* *Abrahams* wife bare him no children, and she had a maid an Egyptian, *Agar* by name. And *Sara* said unto *Abraham*: Behold now the Lord hath restrained me from child-bearing, I pray thee goe in to my maid: it may be that I shall be builded by her. This was a great humility of *Sara*, who so abased her selfe, and tooke in good part this tentation and triall of her faith. For thus she thought, God is no lyer: that which he hath promised to my husband he will surely performe. But peradventure God will not that I shall be the mother of that Seed. It shall not grieve me that *Agar* should have this honour, unto whom let my lord enter, for I may peradventure be builded by her.

Ismael therefore is borne without the word at the onely request of *Sara*. For there is no word of God which commanded *Abraham* thus to doe, or promised unto him a sonne, but all this is done at * adventure. Which also the words of *Sara* do declare: *It may be* (saith she) *that I shall be builded by her*. Seeing therefore there was no word of God spoken to *Abraham* before, as there was when *Sara* should bring forth *Isaac*, but onely the word of *Sara*: it is evident enough that *Ismael* was the sonne of *Abraham* after the flesh onely without the word of God: therefore he was borne at adventure, and unlooked for as another child is. This *Paul* observed and diligently considered.

In the 9th Chap. to the *Romanes*, he persecuteth the same argument which here he repeateth and setteth forth in an allegoric, and concludeth strongly, that all the sonnes of *Abraham* are not the sonnes of God, *Abraham* (saith he) hath two sorts of children. Some are borne of his flesh and blood, but the word and promise of God goeth before, as *Isaac*. Other are borne without the promise

mise as *Ishmael*, Therefore the children of the flesh (saith he) are not the children of God, but the children of the promise, &c. And by this argument he mightily stoppeth the mouthes of the proud Jews, which gloried that they were the seede and children of *Abraham*: As also Christ doth in *Mat. 3.* and in the eight of *John*. As if he said: It followeth not, I am the carnall seede of *Abraham*, therefore I am the child of God. *Esau* is the naturall sonne, therefore the heire. Nay rather (saith he) they that will be the children of *Abraham*, besides their carnall birth, must be also the sonnes of the promise, and must beleeve. And they are the true children of *Abraham*, and consequently of God, who have the promise and beleeve.

Who be the true sonnes of *Abraham*.

But *Ishmael*, because he was not promised of God to *Abraham*, is a sonne after the flesh only, and not after the promise, and therefore he was borne at adventure, as other children be. For no mother knoweth whether she shall have a child or no, or if she perceive her selfe to be with child, yet she cannot tell whether it shall be a sonne or a daughter. But *Isaac* was expressly named, *Gen. 17.* *Sara thy wife* (saith the Angell to *Abraham*) *shall beare thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name Isaac.* Here the sonne and the mother are expressly named. Thus, for this humility of *Sara*, because she gave up her right and suffered the contempt of *Agar*, *Gen. 16.* God requited her with this honour, that she should be the mother of the promised sonne, &c.

Verse 24. *The which things are spoken by allegories.*

Allegories doe not strongly perswade in Divinity, but as certaine pictures they beautifie and set out the matter. For if *Paul* had not proved the righteousnesse of faith against the righteousnesse of workes by strong and pithy arguments, he should have little prevailed by this allegory. But because he had fortified his cause before with invincible arguments taken of experience, of the example of *Abraham*, the testimonies of the Scriptures and similitudes: now in the end of his disputation he addeth an allegory, to give a beauty to all the rest. For it is a seemely thing sometimes to adde an allegory when the foundation is well laid, and the matter thoroughly proved. For as painting is an ornament to set forth and garnish an house already builded: so is an allegory the light of a matter which is already otherwise proved and confirmed.

An allegory is that where by one thing is spoken, and another thing meant.

Verse 25. For these mothers are the two Testaments: the one which is *Agar* of mount *Sina*, which gendreth unto bondage. (For *Agar* or *Sina* is a mountaine in Arabia.)

Abraham is a figure of God, which hath two sonnes, that is to say, two sorts of people are represented by *Ishmael* and *Isaac*. These two are borne unto him by *Agar* and *Sara*, the which signifieth the two Testaments, the old and the new. The old is of mount *Sina*, begetting unto bondage, which is *Agar*. For the Arabians in their language call *Agar* the same mountaine which the Jews call *Sina* (which seemeth to have that name of brambles and thornes) which also *Ptolomæus* and the Greek commentaries doe witnesse. After the same manner divers names are given to many mountaines, according to the diversity of nations. So the mount which *Moses* calleth *Hermon* of the Sidonians is called *Sirion*, and of the Amorites *Senir*.

Now, this serveth very well to the purpose, that Mount *Sina* in the Arabians language signifieth as much as an handmaid: and I thinke the likenesse of this name gave *Paul* light and occasion to seeke out this allegorie. Likewise then as *Agar* the bondmaid brought forth to *Abraham* a sonne, and yet not an heire but a servant: so *Sina* the allegoricall *Agar*, brought forth to God a sonne, that is to say, a carnall people. Againe, as *Ishmael* was the true sonne of *Abraham*, so the people of Israel had the true God to be their father, which gave them his law, his oracles, religion and true service, and the temple: as it is said in the Psalm 147. *He sheweth his word unto Jacob, his statutes and his judgements unto Israel.* Notwithstanding this onely was the difference: *Ishmael* was borne of a bondmaid after the flesh, that is to say, without the promise, and could not therefore be the heire. So the mysticall *Agar*, that is to say, mount *Sina* where the law was given and the old Testament ordained, brought forth to God the great *Abrahams* people, but without the promise, that is to say, a carnall and a servile people, and not the heire of God. For the promises as touching Christ the giver of all blessing, and as touching the deliverance from the curse of the law, from sinne and death, also as touching the free remission of sinnes, of righteousness, and everlasting life, are not added to the law, but the law saith: *He that shall doe these things shall live in them:*

There

Sina.

Agar.

Hermon.

The people
of the law.

Levit. 18. 5.
Rom. 10. 5.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

This is a wonderfull allegorie. As *Paul* a little before made *Agar* of *Sina*, so now of *Jerusalem* he would gladly make *Sara*: but he dareth not, neither can he so doe: but is compelled to joyne *Jerusalem* with mount *Sina*. For he saith: The same belongeth to *Agar*, seeing mount *Agar* reacheth even to *Jerusalem*. And it is true that there be continuall mountaines, reaching from *Arabia Petrea*, unto *Cades Bernea* of *Jurie*. He saith then that this *Jerusalem* which now is, that is to say, this earthly and temporall *Jerusalem* is not *Sara*, but pertaineth to *Agar*; for there *Agar* reigneth. For in it is the law begetting unto bondage: in it is the worship and ceremonies, the Temple, the Kingdome, the Priesthood: and whatsoever was ordained in *Sina*, by the mother which is the law, the same is done in *Jerusalem*. Therefore I joyne her with *Sina*, and I comprehend both in one word, to wit, *Sina* or *Agar*.

The earthly *Jerusalem* pertaineth to *Agar*.

It is not for every man to dally with allegories.

Sara the heavenly *Jerusalem*.

The earthly *Jerusalem* destroyed.

The earthly *Jerusalem* is in bondage.

I durst not have beene so bold to handle this allegory after this manner, but would rather have called *Jerusalem* *Sara* or the new Testament, especially seeing the preaching of the Gospell began in it, the holy Ghost was there given, and the people of the new Testament were there borne: and I would have thought, that I had found out a very fit allegory. Wherefore it is not for every man to use allegories at his pleasure: for a goodly outward shew may soone deceive a man and cause him to erre. Who would not thinke it a very fit thing to call *Sina* *Agar*, and *Jerusalem* *Sara*? Indeed *Paul* maketh *Jerusalem* *Sara*, but not this corporall *Jerusalem*, which he simply joyneth unto *Agar*: but that spirituall and heavenly *Jerusalem* in which the law reigneth not, nor the carnall people, as in that *Jerusalem* which is in bondage with her children, but wherein the promise reigneth, wherein is also a spirituall and a free people.

And to the end that the law should be quite abolished, and that whole kingdome which was established in *Agar*, the earthly *Jerusalem* was horribly destroyed, with all her ornaments, the temple, the ceremonies, &c. Now, although the new Testament began in it, and so was spread throughout the whole world, yet notwithstanding it appertaineth to *Agar*: that is to say, it is the city of the law, of the ceremonies and of the Priesthood instituted by *Moses*. Briefly it is gendred of *Agar* the bondwoman, and therefore is in bondage with her children, that is to say, it walketh in the workes of

of

of the law; and never attaineth to the liberty of the spirit, but abideth continually under the law, sin, an evil conscience, the wrath and judgment of God, and under the guilt of death and hell. Indeed it hath the liberty of the flesh, it hath a corporall kingdom, it hath Magistrates, riches and possessions, and such like things: but we speak of the liberty of the Spirit, wherby we are dead to the law, to sin and death, and we live and reign in grace, forgiveness of sins, righteousness and everlasting life. This cannot the earthly *Ierusalem* perform, and therefore it abideth with *Agar*.

Verse 26. *But Ierusalem which is above is free: which is the mother of us all.*

That earthly *Ierusalem* (saith he) which is beneath, having the policy and ordinances of the law, is *Agar*, and is in bondage with her children: that is to say, she is not delivered from the law, sin and death. But *Ierusalem* which is above, that is to say, the spirituall *Ierusalem*, is *Sara* (albeit *Paul* addeth not the proper name of *Sarah*, but giveth her another name, calling her the free woman) that is to say, that true Lady and free woman, which is the mother of us all, gendring us unto liberty, and not unto bondage as *Agar* doth. Now, this heavenly *Ierusalem*, which is above, is the Church, that is to say, the faithfull dispersed throughout the whole world, which have one and the same Gospel, one and the same faith in Christ, the same holy Ghost, and the same Sacraments.

Ierusalem
which is above.

Therefore understand not this word [*Above*] of the triumphant Church (as the School-men call it) in heaven: but of the militant Church in Earth. For the godly are said to have their conversation in heaven, *Philip. 3. Our conversation is in heaven*, not locally: but in that a Christian believeth, in that he layeth hold of those inestimable, those heavenly and eternall gifts, he is in heaven, *Ephesians 1. Which hath blessed us with all spirituall blessing in heavenly things in Christ.* We must therefore distinguish the heavenly and spirituall blessing, from the earthly. For the earthly blessing is to have a good civill government both in common weals and families: to have children, peace, riches, fruits of the earth, and other corporall commodities. But the heavenly blessing is to be delivered from the law, sinne and death, to be justified and quickned to life: to have peace with God: to have a faith-

The earthly
& heavenly
blessing.

The heavenly
blessing
what it is.

full heart, a joyfull conscience, and a spirituall consolation: to have the knowledge of Iesus Christ: to have the gift of prophesie and the revelation of the Scriptures: to have the gifts of the holy Ghost, and to rejoyce in God. These are the heavenly blessings which Christ giveth to his Church.

Wherefore *Ierusalem* which is above, that is to say, the heavenly *Ierusalem*, is the Church; which is now in the world, and not the city of the life to come, or the Church triumphant: as the idle and unlearned Monks and Schoole-doctors dreamed, which taught that the Scripture hath foure senses: the litterall sense, the figurative sense, the allegoricall sense, and the morall sense: and according to these senses they have foolishly interpreted almost all the words of the Scriptures: As this word *Ierusalem* literally signified that city which was so named: figuratively a pure conscience: allegoricallly the Church militant: morally the celestiall City or the Church triumphant. With these trifling and foolish fables they rent the Scriptures into so many and divers senses, that silly poore consciences could receive no certaine doctrine of any thing. But *Paul* saith here, that the old and earthly *Ierusalem* belongeth unto *Agar*, -and that it is in bondage with her children, and is utterly abolished. But the new and heavenly *Ierusalem*, which is a Queen and a free woman, is appointed of God in earth and not in heaven, to be the mother of us all, of whom we have beene gendred, and yet daily are gendred. Therefore it is necessary that this our mother should be in earth among men, as also her generation is. Notwithstanding she gendreth by the holy Ghost, by the ministry of the Word and Sacraments, and not in the flesh.

This I say to the end that in this matter wee should not be carried away with our cogitataions into heaven, but that wee should know that *Paul* setteth the *Ierusalem*, which is above, against the earthly *Ierusalem*, not locally but spiritually. For there is a distinction betweene those things which are spirituall, and those which are corporall or earthly. The spirituall things are above, the earthly are beneath: So *Ierusalem* which is above, is distinguished from the carnall and temporall *Ierusalem* which is beneath, not locally (as I have said) but spiritually. For this spirituall *Ierusalem* which tooke her beginning in the corporall *Ierusalem*, hath not any certaine place as hath the other in *Iudea*: but it is

The foure senses of the Scriptures, according to the Papists.

The heavenly *Ierusalem* which is yet upon earth.

By the heavenly *Ierusalem* he meaneth the spiritual *Ierusalem*, which he setteth against the earthly *Ierusalem*. The spirituall *Ierusalem* dispersed throughout the whole world.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Chap. IV.

Upon the EPISTLE

Eph. 4.13.

fashioneth us to the image of Christ, untill we grow up to a perfect man, &c. So all things are done by the ministry of the word. Wherefore the office of the free woman is to gender children to God her husband without ceasing and without end: that is to say, such children as know that they are justified by faith, and not by the law.

Isa. 54.1.

Verse 27. For it is written: Rejoyce thou barren that bearest no children: breake forth and crie thou that travellest not: for she desolate hath many more children then she which hath an husband.

Isa. 54.

Paul alleadgeth this place out of *Isaias* the Prophet, which is altogether allegoricall. It is written (saith he) that the mother of many children, and she which hath an husband, must be sick and die: and contrariwise, that the barren and she which hath no children, must have abundance of children. After the same manner *Hannab* singeth in her Song, out of the which *Isaias* the Prophet tooke his Prophecie, 2 Sam. 2. The bow and the mighty men are broken, and the weake have girded themselves with strength. They that were full are hired forth for bread, and the hungrie are no more hired; so that the barren hath borne seven: and she that had many children is feeble. A marvellous matter (saith he) She that was fruitfull shall be made barren, and she that was barren fruitfull. Moreover, such as before were strong, full, rich, glorious, righteous, and blessed, shall become feeble, hungry, poor, ignominious, sinners, subject to death and damnation: And contrariwise the feeble and hungry, &c. shall be strong and satisfied, &c.

The song of Hanna.

Isa. 54.

The difference between the Synagogue and the Church.

The righteousness of the law is well known to reason.

The Apostle sheweth by this allegory of the Prophet *Isaias*, the difference which is betweene *Agar* and *Sarah*, that is to say, between the Synagogue and the Church, or between the law and the Gospell. The law being the husband of the fruitfull woman, that is to say, of the Synagogue, begetteth very many children. For men of all ages, not only idiots, but also the wisest and best (that is to say, all mankind except the children of the free woman) do neither see nor know any other righteousness then the righteousness of the law: much lesse do they know any which is more excellent: Wherefore they think themselves righteous if they follow the law and outwardly performe the works thereof.

These

These, although they be fruitfull, have many disciples, and shine in the righteousnesse and glorious works of the law, yet notwithstanding are not free, but bond servants: For they are the children of *Agar*, which gendreth to bondage. Now, if they be servants, they cannot be partakers of the inheritance, but shall be cast out of the house: for servants remaine not in the house for ever: Yea, they are already cast out of the kingdome of grace and liberty. *For he that beleeveth not, is condemned already.* They remaine therefore under the malediction of the law, under sin and death, under the power of the devill, and under the wrath and judgement of God.

Joh. 8. 35.

Joh. 3. 18.

Now, if the morall law it selfe or the ten commandements of God, can doe nothing else but gender servants, that is to say, cannot justify, but only terrifie, accuse, condemne, and drive mens consciences to desperation: how then (I pray you) shall the laws of men, or the laws of the Pope justify, which are the doctrines of devils? They therefore that teach and set forth either the traditions of men, or the law of God as necessary to obtaine righteousnesse before God, doe nothing else but gender servants. Notwithstanding such teachers are counted the best men, they obtaine the favour of the world, and are most fruitfull mothers, for they have an infinite number of disciples: For mans reason understandeth not what faith and true godlinesse is, and therefore it neglecteth and despiseth it, and is naturally addicted to superstition and hypocrisie, that is to say, to the righteousnes of works. Now, because this righteousnes shineth and flourisheth every where, therefore it is a mighty Empresse of the whole world. They therefore which teach the righteousnesse of works by the law, beget many children which outwardly seem to be free, and have a glorious shew of excellent vertues, but in conscience they are servants and bond-slaves of sinne: therefore they are to be cast out of the house and condemned.

The teachers of the law gender bond servants.

Reason is delighted with hypocrisie.

Contrariwise *Sarah* the free woman, that is to say, the true Church seemeth to be barren. For the Gospell, which is the word of the crosse and affliction, which the Church preacheth, shineth not so brightly as the doctrine of the law and workes, and therefore she hath not so many disciples to cleave unto her. Moreover, she beareth this title, that she forbiddeth good works, maketh men secure, idle, and negligent, raiseth up heresies and seditions, and is

The Church seemeth to be barren. *1 Cor. 1. 18.*

The Gospell hath but few disciples.

the

the cause of all mischief: and therefore she seemeth to bring no success or prosperity, but all things seeme to be full of barrenesse, desolation, and desperation. Therefore the wicked are certainly perswaded, that the Church with her doctrine cannot long endure. The Iewes assured themselves, that the Church which was planted by the Apostles, should shortly be overthrowne: the which by an odious name they called a Sect. For thus they speak to *Paul* in the 28. chapter of the Acts: *As concerning this Sect, we know that every where it is spoken against.* In like manner how often (I pray you) have our adversaries bin deceived, which some whiles appointed one time, and some whiles another, when we should be certainly destroyed? Christ and his Apostles were oppressed: but after their death the doctrine of the Gospell was further spread abroad then it was during their life. In like manner our adversaries may oppress us at this day, but the word of God shall abide for ever. How much soever then the Church seemeth to be barren and forsaken, weak and despised, and outwardly to suffer persecution: and moreover be compelled to heare this reproach, that her doctrine is hereticall and seditious; notwithstanding she alone is fruitfull before God: she gendreth by the ministry of the word an infinite number of children, heirs of righteousness and everlasting life: and though outwardly they suffer persecution, yet in spirit they are most free: who not only are Judges over all doctrines and works, but also are most victorious conquerours against the gates of hell.

The Church
is in heavi-
nesse.

The Prophet therefore confesseth, that the Church is in heaviness: for else he would not exhort her to rejoyce. He granteth that she is barren before the world: for else he would not call her barren and forsaken having no children: but before God, saith he, she is fruitfull, and therefore he biddeth her to rejoyce. As though he would say: Thou art indeed forsaken and barren, and hast not the law for thy husband, and therefore thou hast no children. But rejoyce: for although thou hast not the law for thy husband, but art forsaken as a virgin that is ready to marry (for he will not call her a widdow) which should have an husband, if she were not forsaken of him, or if he were not slain, thou (I say) which art solitary and forsaken of thy husband the law, and not subject to the marriage of the law, shalt be a mother of innumerable children. Wherefore the people or the Church of the new Testament is altogether with-

The people
of grace.

with-

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

ching the words. For who seeth not that *Agar* is not *Sarah*, and that *Sarah* is not *Agar*? Also, that *Ishmael* is not *Isaac*, and that he hath not that which *Isaac* hath? A man may easily discern these things. But in great terrours and in the agony of death, when the conscience wrastleth with the judgement of God, it is the hardest thing of all others to say with a sure and stedfast hope: I am not the son of *Agar*, but of *Sarah*, that is to say the law belongeth nothing unto me: For *Sarah* is my mother, who bringeth forth free children and heires, and not servants.

Paul then by this testimonie of *Isaias* hath proved that *Sarah*, that is to say, the Church is the true mother which bringeth forth free children and heires: Contrariwise that *Agar*, that is to say, the Synagogue breedeth many children indeed, but they are servants and must be cast out. Moreover, because this place speaketh also of the abolishing of the law and of Christian liberty, it ought to be diligently considered. For as it is the most principall and speciall article of Christian doctrine, to know that we are justified and saved by Christ, so is it also very necessary to know and understand well the doctrine concerning the abolishment of the law. For it helpeth very much to confirme our doctrine as touching faith, and to attain sound and certain consolation of conscience, when we are assured that the law is abolished, and specially in great terrours and serious conflicts.

The law is
abolished
to all Chri-
stians.

Isa. 54.1.
The Church
is forsaken
and barren
before the
world.

I have often said before, and now I say againe (for it cannot be too often repeated) that a Christian laying hold of the benefit of Christ through faith, hath no law, but all the law is to him abolished with all his terrours and torments. This place of *Isaias* teacheth the same thing, and therefore it is very notable and full of comfort, stirring up the barren and forsaken to rejoyce, which was counted worthy to be mocked or pittied according to the law. For such as were barren, were accursed according to the law. But the holy Ghost turneth this sentence, and pronounceth the barren worthy of praise and blessing: and contrariwise the fruitfull and such as bring forth children, accursed, when he saith: *Rejoyce thou barren, which bearest not: Breake forth into joy and reioyce thou that travellest not: For the desolate hath many more children then the married wife.* Howsoever then *Sarah*, that is to say, the Church seemeth to be forsaken and barren before the world, not having the righteousnesse and workes of the law: yet notwithstanding

standing she is a most fruitfull mother, having an infinite number of children before God, as the Prophet witnesseth. Contrariwise, although *Agar* seeme never so fruitfull and to bring forth never so many children, yet notwithstanding she hath no issue remaining: for the children of the bond woman are cast out of the house together with their mother, and receive not the inheritance with the children of the free woman, as *Paul* saith afterwards.

Because therefore we are the children of the free woman, the law our old husband is abolished, *Rom. 7.* Who as long as he had dominion over us, it was impossible for us to bring forth children free in spirit, or knowing grace: but we remained with the other in bondage. True it is, that as long as the law reigneth, men are not idle, but they labour fore, they beare the burthen and the heate of the day, they bring forth and gender many children: but as well the fathers as the children are bastards, and doe not belong to the free-mother: Therefore they are at the length cast out of the house and inheritance with *Ishmael*: they die and are damned. It is impossible therefore that men should attaine to the inheritance, that is to say, that they should be justified and saved by the law, although they travell never so much, and be never so fruitfull therein. Accursed therefore be that doctrine, life and religion, which endeavoureth to get righteousness before God by the law or the works thereof. But let us prosecute our purpose as touching the abolishment of the law.

Mat. 23. 12.
The people
of the law,
laborious &
paine full.

The Schoole doctours speaking of the abolishment of the law, say that the judiciall and the ceremoniall lawes are pernicious and deadly since the comming of Christ, and therefore they are abolished: but not the morall law. These blind doctours knew not what they said. But if thou wilt speake of the abolishment of the law, talke of it as it is in his owne proper use and office, and as it is spiritually taken; and comprehend withall the whole law, making no distinction at all between the Judiciall, Ceremoniall and Morall law. For when *Paul* saith, that we are delivered from the curse of the law by Christ, he speaketh of the whole law, and principally of the morall law, which only accuseth, curseth and condemneth the conscience, which the other two do not. Wherefore we say that the Morall law or the law of the ten Commandements hath no power to accense and terrifie the conscience, in which Jesus Christ reigneth by his grace: for he hath abolished the power thereof.

The whole
law is abo-
lished!

The whole
law abolis-
hed by Christ,
but princi-
pally the
law of the
ten comman-
dements.

The godly man feeleth the terrours of the law, but by faith in Christ he is raised up and comforted againe.

The law hath no power over those that beleeve.

Not that the conscience doth not at all feele the terrours of the law. (For indeed it feeleth them :) but that they cannot condemne it, nor bring it to desperation. *For there is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Iesus, Rom. 8.* Also: *If the Sonne shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed, Iohn. 8.* Howsoever then a Christian man be terrified through the law shewing unto him his sin, notwithstanding he despaireth not. For he beleeueth in Jesus Christ, and being baptised in him and cleansed by his blood, he hath remission of all his sins. Now, when our sinne is pardoned through Christ, who is the Lord of the law, (and yet so pardoned that he gave himselfe for it) the law being a servant hath no more power to accuse and condemne us for sinne, seeing it is forgiven us, and we are now made free, forasmuch as the Sonne hath delivered us from bondage. Wherefore the law is wholly abolished to them that beleeve in Christ.

But thou wilt say: I doe nothing. True it is that thou canst doe nothing, whereby thou mayest be delivered from the tyranny of the law. But heare this joyfull tidings which the holy Ghost bringeth unto thee out of the words of the Prophet: *Rejoyce thou that art barren, &c.* As if he would say: Why art thou so heavy, why doest thou so mourne: since there is no cause why thou shouldst so doe? But I am barren and forsaken. Well: although thou be never so barren and forsaken, not having the righteousnesse of the law, notwithstanding Christ is thy righteousnesse: he was made a curse for thee to deliver thee from the curse of the law. If thou beleeve in him, the law is dead unto thee. And looke how much Christ is greater then the law, so much hast thou a more excellent righteousnesse then the righteousnesse of the law. Moreover, thou art fruitfull and not barren: for thou hast many more children then she which hath an husband.

The politick lawes of Moses pertaine not to us.

There is also another abolishment of the law which is outward: to wit, that the politick lawes of *Moses* doe nothing belong unto us. Wherefore we ought not to call them backe againe, nor superstitiously bind our selves unto them: as some went about to doe in times past, being ignorant of this liberty. Now, although the Gospell make us not subject to the judiciall lawes of *Moses*, yet notwithstanding it doth not exempt us from the obedience of all politick lawes, but maketh us subject in this corporall life, to the laws of that government wherein we live, that is to say, it commandeth

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Chap. III. Upon the E P I S T L E

but by the word of faith in the Spirit of God. Here is nothing else but birth: no working at all. Contrariwise they that are fruitfull, labour and exercise themselves with great travell in bearing and bringing forth. Here is altogether working, and no birth. But because they endeavour to get the right of children and heires by the righteousness of the law or by their own righteousness, they are servants and never receive the inheritance, no though they tire themselves to death with continuall travell. For they goe about to obtaine that by their own works against the will of God, which God of his meere grace will give to all beleevers for Christs sake. The faithfull worke well also, but they are not thereby made sonnes and heires (for this their birth bringeth unto them) but this they do to the end that they being now made children and heires might glorifie God by their good workes, and helpe their neighbours.

That is
their rege-
neration in
Christ by
faith and
the holy
Ghost.

Verse 28. *Therefore brethren we are after the manner of Isaac, children of the promise.*

That is to say, we are not children of the flesh, as *Ishmael*, or as all the fleshly Israel, which gloried that they were the seed of *Abraham* and the people of God. But Christ answered them, *Joh. 8. If ye were the sonnes of Abraham, yee would not seeke to kill me which speake the truth unto you. Also: If God were your father, then would ye love me and receive my word.* As if he would say: Brethren borne and brought up together in one house, know one anothers voice: *But ye be of your father the devill, &c.* We are not such children (saith he) as they are which remaine servants, and at length shall be cast out of the house; but we are children of the promise as *Isaac* was: that is to say, of grace and of faith, borne onely of the promise. Concerning this I have spoken sufficiently before in the third Chapter, intreating upon this place: *In thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed.* Therefore we are pronounced righteous: not by the law, by works, or our own righteousness, but by the meere mercy and grace of God. *Paul* repeateth very often, and diligently setteth forth the promise which is received by faith alone: for he knew that it was very necessary so to doe.

The chil-
dren of the
promise.

Hitherto as touching the allegory out of *Genesis*: to the which *Paul* annexeth the place of *Isay* as an interpretation. Now he applieth

applieth the history of *Ismael* and *Isaac* for our example and consolation.

Verse 29. *But as then he that was borne after the flesh, persecuted him that was borne after the Spirit, even so is it now.*

This place containeth a singular consolation. Whosoever are borne and live in Christ, and rejoyce in this birth and inheritance of God, have *Ismael* for their enemy and their persecutor. This we learne at this day by experience: For we see that all the world is full of tumults, persecutions, sects and offences. Wherefore, if we did not arme our selves with this consolation of *Paul*, and such like, and well understand this Article of Justification, we should never be able to withstand the violence and subtill sleights of Satan. For who should not be troubled with these cruell persecutions of our adversaries, and with these sects and infinite offences which a sort of busie and fantastical spirits stirre up at this day? Verily it is no small grieffe unto us, when we are constrained to heare that all things were in peace and tranquility before the Gospell came abroad, but since the preaching and publishing thereof, all things are unquiet, and the whole world is in an uproare, so that every one armeth himselfe against another. When a man, that is not indued with the Spirit of God heareth this, by and by he is offended, and judgeth that the disobedience of subjects against their Magistrates, that seditions, warres, plagues and famine, that the overthrowing of common-weales, kingdomes and countries, that sects, offences, and such other infinite evils doe proceed altogether of the doctrine of the Gospell.

Ismael al-
ways per-
secuteth
Isaac.

A consolati-
on against
offences.

The judge-
ment of the
world con-
cerning the
Gospell.

Against this great offence we must comfort and arme our selves with this sweet consolation, that the faithfull must beare this name and this title in the world, that they are seditious and schismaticks, and the authors of innumerable evils. And hereof it commeth, that our adversaries thinke they have a just cause against us, yea that they doe God good service, when they hate, persecute, and kill us. It cannot be then but that *Ismael* must persecute *Isaac*: but *Isaac* againe persecuteth not *Ismael*. Who so will not suffer the persecution of *Ismael*, let him not professe himselfe to be a Christian.

What the
faithfull must
be content
to be called
in this world

Joh 16.20

But let our adversaries (which so mightily amplifie these evils at this day) tell us what good things ensued the preaching of the

What fol-
lowed the

preaching
of the Gos-
pell,

Gospell of Christ and his Apostles. Did not the destruction of the kingdome of the Jewes follow? was not the Romane Empire overthrowne? was not the whole world in an uproare? And yet the Gospell was not the cause hereof; which Christ and his Apostles preached for the profit and salvation of men, and not for their destruction. But these things followed through the iniquity of the people, the nations, the Kings and Princes, who being possessed of the Devill would not hearken to the word of grace, life; and eternall salvation: but detested and condemned it as a doctrine most pernicious and hurtfull to religion and common-weales. And that this should so come to passe, the holy Ghost foretold by *David*, when he saith, *Psal. 2. Why doe the heathen rage, and the people murmur in vaine? &c.*

Such tumults and hurly-burlies we heare and see at this day, The adversaries lay the fault on our doctrine. But the doctrine of grace and peace stirreth not up these troubles: but the people, nations, Kings and Princes of the earth (as the Psalmist saith) rage, murmur, conspire and take counsell, not against us (as they thinke) nor against our doctrine, which they blaspheme as false and seditious: but against the Lord and his annoynted. Therefore all their counsels and practises are and shall be disappointed and brought to nought: *Hee that dwelleth in the heaven shall laugh: The Lord shall have them in derision.* Let them cry out therefore as long, as they list, that we raise up these tumults and seditions: notwithstanding this Psalme comforteth us, and saith, that they themselves are the authours of these troubles. They cannot beleve this, and much lesse can they beleve that it is they which murmur, rise up, and take counsell against the Lord and his annoynted: nay rather they thinke that they maintaine the Lords cause, that they defend his glory, and doe him acceptable service in persecuting us: but the Psalme lyeth not, and that shall the end declare. Here we doe nothing, but we only suffer, as our conscience beareth us witnesse in the holy Ghost. Moreover, the doctrine for the which they raise up such tumults and offences, is not ours, but it is the doctrine of Christ. This doctrine we cannot deny, nor forsake the defence thereof, seeing Christ saith: *Whosoever shall be ashamed of mee and of my words in this adulterous and sinfull nation, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed when he shall come in his glory, and in the glory of the Father and of the holy Angels.*

Psal. 2.4.

The blind-
ness of the
adversaries,
Joh. 16.2.

Luk. 9.26.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

these tumults, all these furious and cruell ragcs of the world.

The fruits of
the Gospell.

Wherefore let it not trouble us, that our aduersaries are offended, and cry out, that there commeth no good by the preaching of the Gospell. They are infidels, they are blind and obstinate, and therefore it is impossible that they should see any fruit of the Gospell. But contrariwise, we which beleewe, doe see the inestimable profits and fruits thereof: although outwardly for a time wee be oppressed with infinite evils, despised, spoyled, accused, condemned as the outcasts and filthy dung of the whole world, and put to death, and inwardly afflicted with the feeling of our sinne, and vexed with devils. For we live in Christ, in whom, and by whom we are made Kings and Lords over sinne, death, the flesh, the world, hell, and all evils. In whom, and by whom also we tread under our feete the Dragon and Basiliske which is the King of sinne and death. How is this done? In faith. For the blessednesse which we hope for, is not yet revealed, which in the meane time we waite for, in patience, and yet notwithstanding doe now assuredly possesse the same by faith.

The article
of iustifica-
tion com-
forteth us
against all
offences.

We ought therefore diligently to learne the article of Justification: for that onely is able to support us against these infinite slanders and offences, and to comfort us in all our tentations and persecutions. For we see, that it cannot otherwise be, but that the world will be offended with the pure doctrine of the Gospell, and continually cry out that no good commeth of it: *For the naturall man understandeth not those things which are of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishnesse to him, 1. Cor 2.* He onely beholdeth the outward evils, troubles, rebellions, murders, sects, and such other like things. With these sights he is offended and blinded, and finally falleth into the contempt and blaspheming of God and his word.

Why our
aduersaries
doe con-
demne us.

On the contrary part, we ought to stay and comfort our selves in, this, that our aduersaries doe not, accuse and condemne us for any manifest wickednesse which we have committed, as adultery, murder, theft and such like, but for our doctrine. And what doe we teach. That Christ the Sonne of God, by the death of the crosse hath redeemed us from our sinnes, and from everlasting death. Therefore they doe not impugne our life, but our doctrine: yea the doctrine of Christ, and not ours. Therefore if there be any offence, it is Christs offence, and not ours; and so the fault wherefore they persecute us,

us, Christ hath committed and not we. Now, whether they will condemne Christ, and plucke him out of Heaven as an heretick and seditious person for this fault, that he is our only justifier and Saviour, let them looke to that. As for us, we commending this his own cause unto himselfe, are quiet beholders whether of them shall have the victory, Christ or they. Indeed after the flesh it grieveth us that these Ishmalites hate and persecute us so furiously: notwithstanding according to the spirit we glory in these afflictions, both because we know that we suffer them not for our finnes, but for Christs cause, whose benefit and whose glory we set forth, and also because *Paul* giveth us warning aforehand, that *Ishmael* must mocke *Isaac* and persecute him.

Griefe after
the flesh, and
glory after
the spirit.

The Jewes expound this place, which *Paul* alleadgeth out of the 21th of *Genesis*, of *Ishmael* mocking and persecuting *Isaac* after this manner, that *Ishmael* constrained *Isaac* to commit Idolatry. If he did so, yet I beleeve not that it was any such grosse Idolatry as the Jewes dreame of: to wit, that *Ishmael* made Images of clay after the manner of the Gentiles, which he compelled *Isaac* to worship: For, this *Abraham* would in no wise have suffered. But I think that *Ishmael* was in outward shew a holy man, as *Cain* was, who also persecuted his brother, and at length killed him: not for any corporall thing, but because he saw that God esteemed him above the other. In like manner *Ishmael* was outwardly a lover of religion: he sacrificed, and exercised himselfe in well doing. Therefore he mocked his brother *Isaac*, and would be esteemed a better man then he for two reasons: First, for his religion and service of God: Secondly, for his civill government and inheritance. And these two things he seemed justly to challenge to himselfe. For he thought that the kingdome and Priesthood pertained to him by the right of Gods law as the first borne, and therefore he persecuted *Isaac* spiritually because of religion, and corporally because of his inheritance.

What manner
of man
Ishmael was.

This persecution alwayes remaineth in the Church, especially when the doctrine of the Gospell flourisheth: to wit, that the children of the flesh mocke the children of the promise, and persecute them. The Papists persecute us at this day, and for none other cause, but for that we teach that righteousness commeth by the promise. For it vexeth the Papists that wee will not worship their Idols, that is to say, that we set not forth their righteousness, their

Ishmael al-
wayes perfec-
teth *Isaac*.

works and worshippings devised and ordained by men, as available to obtaine grace and forgiveness of finnes. And for this cause they goe about to cast us out of the house, that is to say, they vaunt that they are the Church, the children and people of God, and that the inheritance belongeth unto them, &c. Contrariwise they excommunicate and banish us as hereticks and seditious persons, and if they can, they kill us also: and in so doing they thinke they doe God good service. So, as much as in them lieth, they cast us out of this life, and the life to come. The Anabaptists and such other doe hate us deadly, because we impugne and detest their errors and heresies which they spread abroad, and daily renew in the Church, and for this cause they judge us to be far worse then the Papists, and therefore they have conceived a more cruell hatred against us, then against the Papists.

The devill
persecuteth
the Church
by violence
and subtilty.

As soone therefore as the word of God is brought to light, the devill is angry, and useth all his force and subtil sleight to persecute it, and utterly to abolish it. Therefore he can no otherwise doe, but raise up infinite sects, horrible offences, cruell persecutions, and abhominable murders: For he is the father of lying, and of murder. He spreadeth his lies throughout the world by false teachers, and he killeth men by tyrants, By these means he possesseth both the spirituall and the corporall kingdome: the spirituall kingdome by the lying of false teachers (stirring up also without ceasing every man particularly by his fiery darts to heresies and wicked opinions:) the corporall kingdome by the sword of tyrants. Thus this father of lying and of murder, stirreth up persecution on every side, both spirituall and corporall, against the children of the free-woman. The spirituall persecution which we are at this day constrained to suffer of hereticks, is to us most grievous and intollerable, because of the infinite offences and slanders wherewith the devill goeth about to deface our doctrine. For we are enforced to heare, that the errors and heresies of the Anabaptists and other hereticks, and all other enormities doe proceed from our doctrine. The corporall persecution, by which tyrants lye in waite for our goods and lives, is more intollerable: For they persecute us not for our finnes, but for the testimony of the word of God. Let us learne therefore even by the title which Christ giveth to the divell: to wit, that he is the Father of lying and murder, *John 8.* that when the Gospell flourisheth, and Christ reigneth, then

The spiritu-
all and cor-
porall perse-
cution of
the godly.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



delivereth us from all feare. As if he would say: Ye are not the cause why the world hateth and persecuteth you, but my name which ye preach and confesse, is the cause thereof. *But be of good comfort, I have overcome the world.* This comfort upholdeth us, so that we doubt nothing but that Christ is strong enough, not only to beare, but also to vanquish all the cruelty of tyrants, and the subtil sleights of hereticks, and this he hath declared in shewing forth his power against the Jews and Romanes, whose tyranny and persecutions he suffered for a time. He also suffered the subtil and crafty practises of hereticks, but in time and place he overthrew them all, and remained king and conquerour. Let the Papists then rage as much as they will: Let the Sectaries slander and corrupt the Gospell of Christ as much as they can: notwithstanding Christ shall reigne eternally, and his word shall stand for ever, when all his enemies shall be brought to nought. Moreover, this is a singular consolation that the persecution of *Ishmael* against *Isaac* shall not alwayes continue, but shall endure for a little while, and when that is ended, the sentence shall be pronounced, as followeth:

Christ remaineth King and Conquerour, though the gates of hell fight against him.

Gen. 21. 10. Verse 30. *But what saith the Scripture? Cast out the servant and his sonne: For the sonne of the servant shall not be heire with the sonne of the free woman.*

This word of *Sara* was very grievous to *Abraham*: and no doubt, when he heard this sentence, his fatherly bowels were moved with compassion towards his sonne *Ishmael*: for he was borne of his flesh. And this the Scripture plainely witnesseth, *Genesis 21.* when it saith: *And this thing was very grievous in Abrahams sight, because of his sonne.* But God confirmed the sentence which *Sara* pronounced, saying to *Abraham*: *Let it not be grievous in thy sight for the child and for thy bond woman: In all that Sara shall say unto thee heare her voice: For in Isaac shall thy Seed be called.*

Gen. 21. 10. God confirmeth the sentence of *Sara*.

The sentence pronounced against the *Ishmaelites* is effectuall, all, &c.

The *Israelites* heare in this place the sentence pronounced against them, which overthroweth the *Jewes*, *Grecians*, *Romanes*, and all others, which persecute the Church of Christ. The selfe same sentence also shall overthrow the *Papists*, and as many as trust in their owne workes, which at this day boast themselves to be the people of God and the Church: which also trust that they shall surely receive the inheritance, and judge

us which rest upon the promise of God, not only to be barren and forsaken, but also hereticks cast out of the Church, and that it is impossible that we should be sonnes and heires. - But God overthroweth their judgement, and pronounceth this sentence against them, that because they are the children of the bond woman, and persecute the children of the free woman, therefore they shall be cast out of the house, and shall have no inheritance with the children of promise: to whom only the inheritance belongeth, because they are the children of the free woman. This sentence is ratified, and can never be revoked: wherefore it shall assuredly come to passe, that our Ishmaelites shall not only lose the Ecclesiasticall and politick government which now they have, but also everlasting life. For the Scripture hath foretold, that the children of the bond-woman shall be cast out of the house, that is to say, out of the kingdom of grace: for they cannot be heires together with the children of the free-woman.

Now, here it is to be noted, that the holy Ghost calleth the people of the law and works, as it were in contempt, the child of the bond-woman. As if he said: Why doe ye vaunt of the righteousness of the law and works, and why doe ye glory that ye are the people and children of God for the same? If ye know not of whom ye are borne, I will tell you: You are bond-servants of a bond-woman. And what servants? The bond-servants of the law, and consequently of sinne, of death, and of everlasting damnation. Now a servant is no inheritour, but is cast out of the house. Wherefore the Pope with all his kingdome, and all other Justiciaries, (what outward appearance of holiness soever they have) which hope to obtaine grace and salvation by the law, are servants of that bond-woman, and have no inheritance with the children of the free-woman. I speake now, not to the Popes, Cardinals, Bishops and Monkes that were manifestly wicked, who have made their bellies their god, and have committed such horrible sinnes as I will not willingly name: but of the best of them, such I meane as lived holily, and went about through great labour and travell by keeping of their monkish order, to pacifie the wrath of God, and to merit remission of their sinnes, and everlasting life. These heare their sentence here pronounced, that the sonnes of the bond-woman must be cast out of the house with their mother the bond-woman.

The people of the law are the sons of the bond-maid.

The Pope & all that seek righteousness by workes are children of the bond-woman.

Such sentences diligently considered, make us certaine of our doctrine.

The world embraceth the righte-ousnesse of workes, and condemne the righte-ousnesse of faith.

A comparison of the old Papacy and of the Papacy at this day.

The contemplative life of Monks and such other, which sequestred themselves from the world and all worldly affaires.

doctrine, and confirme us in the righteousnesse of faith, against the doctrine and righteousnesse of workes which the world embraceth and magnifieth, condemning and despising the other. And this troubleth and offendeth weake consciences: which albeit they plainly see the impiety, the execrable wickednesse, and horrible abominations of the Papists, yet notwithstanding, they are not easily perswaded, that all the multitude which beareth the name and title of the Church doe erre, and that there are but few of them which have a sound and right opinion of the doctrine of faith: And if the Papacy had the same holinesse and austeritie of life which it had in the time of the antient Fathers, *Hierome, Ambrose, Augustine*, and others, when the Clergy had not yet so evill a name for their Simony, excesse, abundance of riches, dissolute living, voluptuousnesse, whoredome, sodomy, and such other innumerable abominations, but lived after the rules and decrees of the fathers religiously, and holily in outward shew, and unmarried, what could we doe now against the Papacy?

The single life which the Clergy kept very straightly in the time of the Fathers, was a goodly thing, and made of men very Angels in the sight of the world, and therefore *Paul* in the second chapter to the *Colossians*, calleth it the religion of Angels: And the Papists say thus of their yingins: He led an angelicall life whilst he lived in the flesh, and yet lived contrary to the flesh. Moreover, the life which they call the contemplative life (whereunto the Clergy men were then very much given, utterly neglecting all civill and household government) had a goodly shew of holinesse. Wherefore, if that outward shew and appearance of the old Papacy remained at this day, we should peradventure doe but little against it by our doctrine of faith, seeing we do now so little prevaile when (that old shew of outward holinesse and severe discipline being utterly abolished) there is nothing to be seen but a very sinke and puddle of all vices and abominations.

But admit the case that the old discipline and religion of the Papacy were yet remaining: notwithstanding we ought by the example of *Paul* (who vehemently pursued the false Apostles, which outwardly appeared to be very godly and holy men) to fight against the meritmongers of the Papisticall kingdome, and to say: although ye live a single life, tiring and consuming your bodies with continuall travell, and walking in the humility and religion

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

wrath of God his monkery nor his angelicall life: but he took hold of that one thing which was necessary, and so was saved. I think that *Jerome, Gregory*, and many other of the Fathers were saved after the same sort. And it is not to be doubted, but that also in the old Testament many kings of Israel and other Idolaters were saved in like manner, who at the houre of death casting away their vaine trust which they had in Idols, took hold of the promise of God, which was made unto the seed of *Abraham*, that is to say, Christ in whom all nations should be blessed. And if there be any of the Papists which shall be saved, they must simply leane not to their own good deeds and deserts, but to the mercy of God offered unto us in Christ, and say with Paul: *I have not mine own righteousnesse which is of the law, but that which is by faith in Christ.*

Phil 3. 9.

Verse 13. *Then brethren we are not children of the servant; but of the free woman.*

Paul here concludeth his allegory of the barren Church, and of the fruitfull people of the law. We are not (saith he) the children of the bond woman: that is to say, we are not under the law which begetteth unto bondage, that is, which terrifieth, accuseth, and bringeth to desperation: but we are delivered from it by Christ: therefore it cannot terrifie nor condemne us. Of this we have spoken enough before. Moreover, although the sonnes of the bond woman doe persecute us never so much for a time, yet this is our comfort, that they shall be compelled to leave the inheritance unto us, which belongeth unto us that are the sonnes of the free woman; and shall at length be cast into utter darknesse.

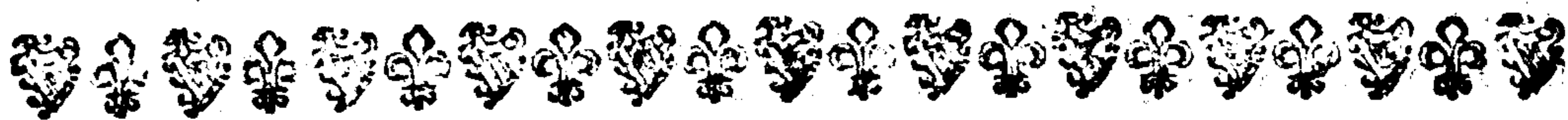
The children of the bond woman shall at length be cast out.
Mat. 25. 38.

Paul therefore by these words [bond woman and free woman] took occasion (as we have heard) to reject the righteousnesse of the law, and to confirme the doctrine of Justification. And of purpose he taketh hold of this word (free woman) vehemently urging and amplifying the same, especially in the beginning of the chapter following. Whereupon he taketh occasion to reason of Christian liberty, the knowledge whereof is very necessary: For the Pope hath in a manner quite overthrowne it, and made the Church subject to mans traditions and ceremonies, and to a most miserable and filthy bondage. That liberty which is purchased by Christ, is unto us at this day a most strong fort and munition whereby we de-

defend our selves against the tyranny of the Pope. Wherefore we must diligently consider this doctrine of Christian liberty, as well to confirme the doctrine of justification, as also to raise up and comfort weake consciences, against so many troubles and offences, which our adversaries doe impute unto the Gospell. Now, Christian liberty is a very spirituall thing, which the carnall man doth not understand. Yea they which have the first fruits of the Spirit, and can talke well thereof, do very hardly retaine it in their heart: It seemeth to reason: that it is a matter of small importance. Therefore if the holy Ghost do not magnifie it that it may be esteemed accordingly, it is contemned.

Christian liberty.

Rom. 8. 32.



The fifth Chapter.

PAUL now drawing towards the end of his Epistle, disputeth very vehemently in defence of the doctrine of Faith and Christian liberty, against the false Apostles; the enemies and destroyers of the same: against whom he casteth out very thundring words, to beate them downe and utterly to vanquish them. And therewithall he exhorteth the Galathians to shie their pernicious doctrine as a dangerous poyson. In his exhortation he entermingleth threatnings and promises, trying every way that he may keepe them in that liberty which Christ hath purchased for them, saying:

Paul tryeth every way to keep the Galathians in the liberty of the Gospell.

Verse 1. Stand fast therefore in that liberty wherein Christ hath made us free.

That is to say: Be yee stedfast. So Peter saith: *Be sober and watch, for your adversary the Devill as a roaring Lyon walketh about, seeking whom hee may devour, whom resist, being stedfast in the Faith.* Be yee not carelesse (saith he) but stedfast and constant. Lye not downe and sleepe, but stand up. As if he would say: It standeth you in hand to be watchfull and constant, that ye may keepe and hold fast that liberty wherein Christ hath made you free. They that are secure and negligent cannot keepe this liberty. For Satan most deadly hateth the light of the Gospell, that is

The godly must stand fast, that they lose not their liberty in Chn.

to say, the doctrine of grace, liberty, consolation and life. Therefore when he seeth that it beginneth once to appeare, forthwith he fighteth against it with all might and maine, stirring up stormes and tempests to hinder the course thereof, and utterly to overthrow it. Wherefore *Paul* warneth the faithfull not to sleepe, not to be negligent: but constantly and valiantly to resist Satan, that he spoile them not of that liberty which Christ hath purchased for them.

Every word hath here a certaine vehemency. *Stand*, (saith he) As if he should say: Here have ye need of great diligence and vigilancy. *In that liberty*. In what liberty? Not in that, wherewith the Emperour hath made us free, but in that wherewith Christ hath made us free. The Emperour hath given, or rather was compelled to give to the Bishop of Rome, a free city, and other lands: also immunities, priviledges and prerogatives, &c. This is also a liberty, but it is a civill liberty, whereby the Pope with all his Clergy is exempt from all publick charges. Moreover, there is a fleshly, or rather a devilish liberty, whereby the Devill chiefly reigneth throughout the whole world. For they that enjoy this liberty, obey neither God nor lawes, but doe what they list. This liberty the people seeke and embrace at this day: and so doe the Sectaries, which will be at liberty in their opinions and in all their doings, to the end they may teach and doe whatso' ver they dreame to be good and sound, without reprehension. These stand in that liberty wherein the devill hath made them free. But we speake not here, of this liberty: albeit the whole world seeketh no other liberty. Neither doe we, speake of the civill liberty: but of a far other manner of liberty, which the Devill hateth and resisteth with all his power.

This is that liberty whereby Christ hath made us free: not from an earthly bondage, or from the Babylonicall captivity, or from the tyranny of the Turkes, but from Gods everlasting wrath. And where is this done? In the conscience. There resteth our liberty, and goeth no farther. For Christ hath made us free, not civilly, nor carnally; but divinely; that is to say, we are made free in such sort, that our conscience is now free and quiet, not fearing the wrath of God to come. This is that true and inestimable liberty, to the excellency and Majesty whereof if we compare the other, they are but as one droppe of water in respect of the whole sea. For who is able to expresse what a thing it is when a man is assured

The freedom of the Papists.

The liberty of the flesh

The Anabaptists and Libertines with other Sectaries will be free to doe what they list.

Freedom from the wrath of God.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

have compassion on thee. But this is very hard to doe. Wherefore that liberty which Christ hath purchased for us, is not so soone beleeved as it is named. If it could be apprehended with a sure and a stedfast Faith, then no rage or terrour of the world, of the law, sinne, death, or the devill, could be so great; but by and by it should be swallowed up as a little drop of water is swallowed of the maine sea. And certainly this Christian liberty swalloweth up at once and taketh quite away the whole heape of evils, the law, sinne, death, Gods wrath, and briefly the serpent himselfe with his head and whole power, and in the stead thereof it placeth righteousness, peace, and everlasting life, &c. But blessed is he that understandeth and beleeveth.

Luk. 11. 28.

Christian
liberty.

Let us learne therefore to magnifie this our liberty, purchased by Jesus Christ the Sonne of God, by whom all things were created both in heaven and earth. Which liberty he hath purchased with no other price then with his own bloud, to deliver us, not from any bodily or temporall servitude, but from a spirituall and everlasting bondage under mighty and invincible tyrants, to wit, the law, sin death and the devill, and so to reconcile us unto God his Father. Now, since these enemies are overcome, and we reconciled unto God by the death of his Sonne, it is certaine that we are righteous before God, and that whatsoever we do, pleaseth him. And although there be certaine remnants of sinne yet still in us, they are not laid to our charge, but pardoned for Christs sake.

Liberty is
freely given
unto us for
Christs sake.

Paul useth words of great force and vehemency. *Stand* (saith he) *in that liberty wherein Christ hath made us free.* This liberty then is not given unto us by the Law, or for our righteousness, but freely for Christs sake: Which thing *Paul* here witnesseth, and plainly declaereth throughout his whole Epistle. Christ also in the sight of *John* saith: *If the Sonne shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.* He onely is set betwixt us and the evils which trouble and afflict us: he hath overcome them and taken them away, so that they can no more oppresse us; nor condemne us. In the stead of sinne and death he giveth unto us righteousness and everlasting life: and by this meanes he changeth the bondage and terrours of the law, into the liberty of conscience and consolation of the Gospell, which saith: *Bee of good comfort my sonne: thy sinnes are forgiven thee.* Whosoever then beleeveth in Christ the

Math. 2. 2.

Sonne

Sonne of God, he hath this libertie.

Reason cannot perceive the excellency of this matter: which when a man considereth in Spirit, he shall see that it is inestimable. For who is able to conceive in his mind how great and unspeakable a gift it is to have the forgiveness of sinnes, righteousness and everlasting life, in the stead of the law, sinne, death and the wrath of God; and to have God himselfe favourable and mercifull for ever? The Papists and the hypocrites that seeke the righteousness of the law, or their owne righteousness, doe glory that they likewise have remission of sinnes, righteousness, life and the grace of God. For they vaunt that they also have this liberty, and they promise the same unto others: but in very deed they are the servants of corruption, and in the time of temptation all their vaine confidence vanisheth away even in a moment. For they trust unto the works and satisfaction of men, and not to the word of God, nor unto Christ. Wherefore it is impossible for the Justiciaries which seeke to win Heaven, life and salvation by works and merits, to know what the liberty and deliverance from sinne is.

Hypocrites brag much of God.

Contrariwise, our liberty hath for her foundation Christ himselfe, who is our everlasting high Bishop, sitting at the right hand of God, and making intercession for us. Wherefore the forgiveness of sinnes, righteousness, life and liberty which we have through him, is sure, certaine and perpetuall, so that we believe the same. Wherefore if we cleave unto Christ with a stedfast faith, and stand fast in that liberty wherein he hath made us free, we shall obtaine those inestimable gifts: but if we be carelesse and negligent, we shall lose them. It is not without cause that Paul biddeth us watch and stand fast: for he knew that the devill seeketh nothing more, then to spoile us of this liberty which cost Christ so great a price; and to entangle us againe by his ministers in the yoke of bondage, as followeth.

The secure and careless lose this Christian libertie.

Verse 1. And be not entangled againe with the yoke of bondage.

Paul hath spoken most effectually and profoundly as concerning grace and Christian liberty, and with high and haughty words hath exhorted the Galatians to continue in the same: for it is easily lost, therefore he biddeth them stand fast, least that through negligence or security, they fall back againe from grace and faith.

The law is
a yoke of
bondage,

to the law and works. Now; because reason judgeth that there can be no danger in preferring the righteousness of the law before the righteousness of faith: therefore with a certaine indignation he envenigheth against the law; and with great contempt he calleth it a yoke, yea, a yoke of bondage. So *Peter* calleth it also, Acts 15. *Why tempt ye God to lay a yoke on the Disciples necks, which neither our fathers nor we were able to beare?* And thus he turneth all things to the contrary. For the false Apostles did abase the promise, and magnified the law and the works thereof in this wise: If ye will be made free (say they) from sinne and death, and obtaine righteousness and life, fulfill the law, be circumcised, observe dayes, moneths, times and yeares, offer sacrifices, and doe such other like things: then shall this obedience of the law justifie and save you. But *Paul* saith the contrary. They (saith he) that teach the law after this sort, doe not set mens consciences at liberty, but snare and entangle them with a yoke, yea and that with a yoke of bondage.

They that
seeke righ-
teousnes by
the law, are
compared
to oxen tyed
to the yoke.

He speaketh therefore of the law very basely and contemptuously, and calleth it a hard bondage and a servile yoke. And this he doth not without great cause. For this pernicious opinion of the law, that it justifieth and maketh men righteous before God, is deeply rooted in mans reason, and all man-kind is so wrapped in it, that it can hardly get out. And *Paul* seemeth here to compare those that seeke righteousness by the law, unto Oxen that be tied to the yoke, to the end he might take from it the glory of justifying and of righteousness. For like as Oxen doe draw in the yoke with great toyle, receive nothing thereby but forrage and pasture, and when they be able to draw the yoke no more, are appointed to the slaughter: even so they that seeke righteousness by the law, are captives and oppressed with the yoke of bondage, that is to say, with the law: and when they have tyred themselves a long time in the works of the law with great and grievous toyle, in the end this is their reward, that they are miserable and perpetuall servants. And whereof? Even of sinne, death, Gods wrath, and of the devill. Wherefore there is no greater or harder bondage, then the bondage of the law. It is not without cause then, that *Paul* calleth it the yoke of bondage. For as we have often said before, the law doth but reveale, increase and aggravate sinne, accuse, terrifie, condemn and gender wrath, and finally it driveth poore consciences
into

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

The carnall liberty of the Papists. This may truly be said also of our Libertines and carnall Gospellers at this day.

plaine Epicures. Therefore whiles they may, they use the liberty of the flesh, singing this carelesse song: *Ede, bibere, & potare sunt voluptates*: That is, *Eat, drinke, and make good cheere*; for after this life there is no pleasure. But they are the very bondslaves of the De- vell, by whom they are holden captives at his will and pleasure: therefore they shall feele this everlasting bondage in hell. Whereto Pauls exhortation hath bene vehement and earnest, but that which followeth doth farre passe it.

Verse 2. Behold I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

Paul here wonderfully stirred up with zeale and fervency of spirit thundreth against the law & circumcision: and these thundering words proceeding of great zeale, the holy Ghost wresteth from him when he saith: Behold, I Paul, &c. I (I say) who know that I have not received the Gospell by man, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ, and have commission and authority from above, to publish and preach the same unto you, doe tell you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing at all. This is a very hard sentence: whereby Paul declareth, that to be circumcised, is as much as to make Christ utterly unprofitable: not in respect of himselfe, but of the Galatians, who being deceived by the subtilties of the false Apostles, beleevd, that, besides faith in Christ, it was needfull for the faithfull to be circum- cised, without the which they could not obtaine salvation.

The judge- ment of the godly tou- cing all doctrines, Religions, and ceremo- nies.

This place is as it were a touchstone, whereby we may most certainly and freely judge of all doctrines, workes, religions and ceremonies of all men. Whosoever teach that there is any thing necessary to salvation (whether they be Papists, Turkes, Jewes or Sectaries) besides faith in Christ, or shall devise any worke or religion, or observe any rule, tradition or ceremony whatsoever, with this opinion that by such things they shall obtaine forgiveness of sinnes, righteousnesse and everlasting life: they heare in this place the sentence of the holy Ghost pronounced against them by the A- postle, that Christ profiteth them nothing. Seeing Paul durst give this sentence against the law and circumcision, which were ordai- ned of God himselfe, what durst he not doe against the chaffe and the crosse of mens traditions?

Wherefore this place is a terrible thunderbolt against all the king-

kingdome of the Pope. For all the Priests, Monkes and Heremites that live in their cloysters (I speake of the best of them) reposed all their trust and confidence in their own works, righteousnes, vows and merits, and not in Christ, whom they most wickedly and blasphemously imagined to be an angry Judge, an accuser and condemner: and therefore here they heare their judgement, that Christ profiteth them nothing. For if they can put away sinnes and deserve forgiveness of sinnes and everlasting life through their own righteounesse and straitnesse of life: then to what purpose was Christ borne? What profit have they by his death and bloud-shedding, by his resurrection, victory over sin, death and the devill, seeing they are able to overcome these monsters by their own strength? And what tongue can expresse, or what heart can conceive how horrible a thing it is to make Christ unprofitable? Therefore the Apostle casteth out these words with great displeasure and indignation: *If ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing*: that is to say, no profit should redound unto you of all his benefits: but he hath bestowed them all upon you in vaine.

To whom Christ is unprofitable.

Hereby it appeareth sufficiently, that nothing under the Sunne is more hurtfull then the doctrine of mens traditions and works: for they utterly abolish and overthrow at once the truth of the Gospell, faith, the true worshipping of God, and Christ himself in whom the Father hath ordained all things, Coloss. 2. *In Christ are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge: In him dwelleth the fullnesse of the God-head bodily.* Wherefore all they that are either authours or maintainers of the doctrine of works, are oppressours of the Gospell, make the death and victory of Christ unprofitable, blemish and deface his Sacraments, and utterly take away the true use thereof, and briefly they are blasphemers, enemies and deniers of God, and of all his promises and benefits. Who so is not mooved with these words of *Paul* (which calleth the law a yoake of bondage, and saith that they which affirme the keeping of circumcision to be necessary to salvation, make Christ unprofitable) and cannot be driven from the law and circumcision, nor yet from the confidence which he hath in his own righteounesse and workes, nor be stirred up to teek that liberty which is in Christ, his heart is harder then stone and iron.

Nothing more pernicious then the traditions of men.

The law is a yoake of bondage.

Good works are not condemned, but confidence in good works.

This is therefore a most certaine and cleare sentence, that Christ is unprofitable, that is to say, he is borne, crucified and risen again in vain to him that is circumcised; that is, which putteth his trust in circumcision. For (as I have said before) *Paul* speaketh not here of the work of circumcision (which hurteth not him that hath no affiance or opinion of righteousness in it) but of the use of the work, that is to say, of the confidence and righteousness that is annexed to the work: For we must understand *Paul* according to the matter whereof he intreateth, or according to the argument which he hath in hand: which is, that men be not justified by the law, by works, by circumcision or such like. He saith not, that works of themselves are nothing, but the confidence and righteousness of works are nothing: for that maketh Christ unprofitable. Therefore who so receiveth circumcision, with this opinion that it is necessary to justification, to him Christ availeth nothing.

What we must answer the devill, when he accuseth and tempteth us

Let us beare this well in mind in our private tentations when the devill accuseth and terrifieth our conscience to drive it to desperation. For he is the father of lying, and the enemy of Christian liberty: therefore he tormenteth us every moment with false fears, that when our conscience hath lost this Christian liberty, it should feele the remorse of sinne and condemnation, and alwayes remaine in anguish and terrour. When that great Dragon (I say) that old serpent the devill (who deceiveth the whole world, and accuseth our brethren in the presence of God day and night, *Apoc. 12.*) commeth and layeth unto thy charge, that thou hast not only done no good, but hast also transgressed the law of God, say unto him: Thou troublest me with the remembrance of my sinnes past: Thou puttest me also in mind that I have done no good. But this is nothing to me: for if either I trusted in mine owne good deeds, or distrusted because I have done none, Christ should both wayes profit me nothing at all. Therefore whether thou lay my sins before me, or my good works, I passe not: but removing both farre out of sight, I only rest in that liberty wherein Christ hath made me free. I know him to be profitable unto me: therefore I will not make him unprofitable: which I should do, if either I should presume to purchase my false favour and everlasting life by my good deeds, or should despair of my salvation, because of my sins.

Wherefore let us learne with all diligence to separate Christ
farre

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Chap: V. Upon the E P I S T L E

saith that Christ profiteth them nothing which are circumcised : and this that followeth is nothing lesse, where he saith, that they which are circumcised, are bound to keep the whole law. He speaketh these words with such earnestnesse and vehemency of spirit, that he confirmeth them with an oath : *I testifie*, that is to say, I sweare by the living God. But these words may be expounded two wayes, negatively and affirmatively. Negatively, after this manner: I testifie unto every man which is circumcised, that he is bound to keepe the whole law, that is to say, that he performeth no peece of the law : yea that in the very work of circumcision he is not circumcised, and even in the fulfilling of the law he fulfilleth it not, but transgresseth it. And this seemeth to me to be the simple and true meaning of *Paul* in this place. Afterwards in the 6. Chapter he expoundeth himselfe, saying : *They themselves which are circumcised keep not the law.* So he saith also before in the third Chapter : *Whosoever are of the Workes of the law, are under the curse.* As if he said : Although ye be circumcised, yet are ye not righteous and free from the law: but by this deed ye are rather debtors and bond-servants of the law : and the more ye go about to satisfie the law, and to be set free from it, the more ye entangle and snare yourselves in the yoake therof, so that it hath more power to accuse and condemn you. This is to go backward like the crab, and to wash away filth with filth.

The doers of the law doe not the law.

And this which I say by occasion of *Pauls* words, I have learned both in my selfe and others. I have scene many which have painfully travelled, and upon meere conscience have done as much as was possible for them to doe, in fasting, in prayer, in wearing of haire, in punishing and tormenting their bodies with sundry exercises (whereby at length they must needs have utterly consumed them, yea although they had been made of yron) and all to this end that they might obtaine quietnesse and peace of conscience : notwithstanding, the more they travelled, the more they were stricken downe with feare, and specially when the houre of death approached they were so fearefull, that I have scene many murtherers and other malefactors condemned to death, dying more couragiously then they did, which notwithstanding had lived very holily.

The conscience is not quieted and pacified with the observation of mans traditions.

Therefore it is most true, that they which doe the law, doe it not. For the more they goe about to fulfill the law, the more they trans-

transgresse it. Even so we say and judge of mens traditions. The more a man striveth to pacifie his conscience thereby, the more he troubleth and tormenteth it. When I was a Monke, I endeavoured as much as was possible, to live after the strait rule of mine order, I was wont to shrive my selfe with great devotion, and to reckon up all my sinnes (yet being alwayes very contrite before) and I returned to confession very often, and throughly performed the penance that was enjoyned unto me: Yet for all this my conscience could never be fully certified, but was alwayes in doubt, and said: This or that thou hast not done rightly: thou wast not contrite and sorrowfull enough: this sinne thou didst omit in thy confession, &c. Therefore the more I went about to helpe my weake, wavering and afflicted conscience by mens traditions, the more weake and doubtfull, and the more afflicted I was. And thus the more I observed mens traditions, the more I transgressed them, and in seeking after righteousness by mine order, I could never attain unto it: for it is impossible (as *Paul* saith) that the conscience should be pacified by the works of the law, and much more by mens traditions, without the promise and glad tidings concerning Christ.

Wherefore they that seeke to be justified and quickned by the law, are much further off from righteousness and life, then the Publicans, sinners and harlots. For they cannot trust their owne works, seeing they be such, that they cannot hope to obtaine grace and forgiveness of sinnes thereby. For if righteousness and workes done according to the law doe not justify, how can sinnes justify which are committed contrary to the law? Therefore in this point they are in farre better case then the Iusticiaries: for they have no affiance in their owne workes: which greatly hindreth true faith in Christ, if it doe not utterly take it away. Contrariwise the Iusticiaries which abstaine outwardly from sinnes, and live holily and without blame in the sight of the world, cannot be without the opinion of their own righteousness, with which the true faith in Christ cannot stand: and for this cause they be more miserable then the Publicans and harlots, who offer not their good works to God in his displeasure, that for the same he may recompence them with everlasting life (as the Iusticiaries do) for they have none to offer: but desire that their sins may be pardoned for Christs sake, &c.

Confidence
in works ut-
terly taketh
away faith,
or at least
hindreth it
in us.

Iusticiaries
and meriti-
mongers will
be recom-
penced for
their works
with everla-
sting life.

The other exposition is affirmative: he that is circumcised, is also,

He that receiveth *Moses* in one point, must receive him in all.

also bound to keepe the whole law. For he that receiveth *Moses* in one point, must of necessity receive him in all. And it helpeth nothing to say: that circumcision is necessary, and not the rest of *Moses* laws. For by the same reason that thou art bound to keep circumcision, thou art also bound to keepe the whole law. Now, to be bound to keep the whole law is nothing else but to shew in effect, that Christ is not yet come. If this be true, then are we bound to keep all the Jewish ceremonies and laws touching meats, places and times: and Christ must be looked for as yet to come, that he may abolish the Jewish kingdome and Priest-hood, and set up a new kingdome throughout the whole world. But the whole Scripture witnesseth, and the sequell thereof plainly declareth that Christ is already come, that by his death he hath redeemed mankind, that he hath abolished the law; and that he hath fulfilled all things which all the Prophets have foretold of him. Therefore the law being cleane abolished and quite taken away, he hath given unto us grace and truth. It is not then the law, nor the works therof, but it is faith in Jesus Christ that maketh a man righteous.

Some would bind us at this day to certaine of *Moses* lawes that like them best, as the false Apostles would have done at that time. But this is in no wise to be suffered. For if we give *Moses* leave to rule over us in any thing, we are bound to obey him in all things. Wherefore we will not be burdened with any law of *Moses*. We grant that he is to be read amongst us, and to be heard as a Prophet and a witness-bearer of Christ: and moreover, that out of him, we may take good examples of good laws and holy life. But we will not suffer him in any wise to have dominion over our conscience. In this case let him be dead and buried, and let no man know where his grave is.

Christians are free from the pollicie of *Moses*, as touching their conscience. *Deut. 34.6.*

The former exposition, that is to say, the negative seemeth to me to be more apt and more spirituall: notwithstanding both are good, and both doe condemne the righteousness of the law. The first is, that we are so farre from obtaining righteousness by the law, that the more we goe about to accomplish the law, the more we transgress the law. The second is, that he which will performe any peece of the law, is bound to keepe the whole law. And to conclude, that Christ profiteth them nothing at all which will be justified by the law.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

True faith.

law should dwell together in one heart : for either the law or Christ must give place. But if thou thinke that Christ and the law can dwell together, then be thou sure that Christ dwelleth not in thy heart, but the devill in the likeness of Christ, accusing and terrifying thee, and straitly exacting of thee the law, and the works thereof. For the true Christ (as I said before) neither calleth thee to a reckoning for thy sins, nor biddeth thee to trust to thine owne good works. And the true knowledge of Christ, or faith disputeth not whether thou hast done good works to righteousness, or evil works to condemnation : but simply concludeth after this sort : If thou have done good works, thou art not therefore justified, or if thou have done evil works, thou art not therefore condemned. I neither take from good works their praise, nor commend evil works. But in the matter of justification, I say, we must looke how we may hold Christ, lest if we seeke to be justified by the law we make him unprofitable unto us. For it is Christ alone that justifieth me both against my evil deeds, and without my good deeds. If I have this perswasion of Christ, I lay hold of the true Christ. But if I think that he exacteth the law and works of me to salvation, then he becometh unprofitable unto me, and I am utterly separated from him.

We must either forgoe Christ or the law.

Deut. 27. 26.

The doctrine of the Pope leadeth us quite away from Christ, and maketh him altogether

These are dreadfull sentences and threatnings against the righteousness of the law and mans own righteousness. Moreover, they are also most certaine principles which confirme the article of justification. This is then the finall conclusion : Either thou must forgoe Christ, or the righteousness of the law. If thou retainest Christ, thou art righteous before God : but if thou sticke to the law, Christ availeth thee nothing : Thou art bound to keepe the whole law, and thou hast now sentence already pronounced against thee : *Cursed is every one that fulfilleth not all the things that are written in this law.* As we have said of the law, so we say also of mens traditions. Either the Pope with his religious rout must reject all those things wherein hitherto he hath put his trust, or else Christ shall be unprofitable to them. And hereby we may plainly see how pernicious and pestilent the Popish doctrine hath been. For it hath led men cleane away from Christ, and made him altogether unprofitable. God complaineth in the 23. of *Jeremie*, that the Prophets prophesied lyes and the dreames of their own heart, to the end that his people should forget his name. Therefore

fore like as the false Prophets leaving the right interpretation of the law, and the true doctrine concerning the feede of *Abraham*, in whom all the nations of the earth should be blessed, preached their owne dreames, to the end that the people should forget their God: even so the Papists having darkened and defaced the doctrine of Christ, so that they made it of none effect, taught and set forth nothing else but the doctrine of workes: whereby they drew the whole world away from Christ. Who so earnestly considereth this matter, cannot but feare and tremble.

ther unprofitable to us.

1. 1. 1.

Verse 4. *Yee are fallen from grace.*

That is to say: Yee are no longer in the kingdom of grace. For like as he that is in a Shippe, on which side soever he falleth into the Sea, is drowned: even so he which is fallen from grace, must needs perish. He therefore that will be justified by the law is fallen into the Sea, and hath cast himselfe into danger of eternall death: Now, if they fall from grace which will be justified by the morall law: whether shall they fall (I pray you) which will be justified by their owne traditions and vowes? Even to the bottome of hell. No forsooth: they flie up into Heaven: for so they themselves have taught us. Who so ever live (say they) according to the rule of *S. Francis, Dominick, Bernard* or such other, the peace and mercy of God is upon them. Again, All they that observe and keepe chastitie, obedience, &c. shall have everlasting life. But let these toyes go to the devil from whence they came, and hearken what *Paul* teacheth thee here: and what Christ teacheth, saying: *Hee that beleevech in the Sonne of God hath everlasting life: but hee that beleevech not in the Sonne, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth upon him.* Again, *Hee that beleevech not is judged already.*

To seeke to be justified by the law, &c.

Ioh. 3. 36.

Ioh. 3. 18.

Now like as all the doctrine of the Papists (to note this by the way) concerning mens traditions, workes, vowes and merits, was most common in the world: so was it thought to be the best and most certaine of all others: whereby the divell hath both set up, and established his kingdom most mightily: therefore when we at this day doe impugne and vanquish this doctrine by the power of Gods word, as chaff is driven away by the wind, it is no marvell that Satan ragech so cruelly against us, hairech up standards and offences every where, and setteth the whole world in bull tops.

The Popes kingdom is grounded upon mens traditions.

tops. Then, will some man say: It had beene better to have held our peace; for then had none of these evils beene raised up. But we ought more to esteeme the favour of God, whose glory we set forth, then to care for the tyranny of the world which persecuth us. For what is the Pope and the whole world in comparison of God? Indeed we are weake, and bare an heavenly treasure in brittle and earthly vessels: but although the vessels be never so brittle, yet is the treasure inestimable.

2 Cor. 4.7.

What he loseth that falleth from grace.

These words, *Ye are fallen from grace*, must not be coldly or slenderly considered: for they are weighty and of great importance. He that falleth from grace, utterly loseth the attonement, the forgiveness of finnes, the righteousness, liberty and life that Jesus Christ hath merited for us by his death and resurrection: and in stead thereof he purchaseth to himselfe the wrath and judgment of God, siene, death, the bondage of the Devil and everlasting damnation. And this place strongly confirmeth and fortifieth our doctrine concerning Faith or the article of Justification, & marvellously comforteth us against the cruell rage of the Papists, that persecute and condemn us as hereticks, because we teach this article. Indeed this place ought to feare the enemies of Faith and grace, that is to say, all that seeke righteousness by works, from persecuting and blaspheming the word of grace, life and everlasting salvation. But they be so hard hearted and obstinate, that seeing they see not, and hearing they heare not, and when they read this dreadfull sentence of the Apostle pronounced against them, they understand it not. Let us leave them therefore unto themselves: For they are blind, and leaders of the blind.

Mat. 15.14.

Verse 15. For wee in spirit waite for the hope of righteousness through Faith.

Paul here knitteth up the matter with a notable conclusion, saying: Ye will be justified by the law, by circumcision and by workes: but we seeke not to be justified by this meanes, least Christ should be made utterly unprofitable unto us, and we become debtors to performe the whole law, and so finally fall away from grace: but we waite in spirit through faith for the hope of righteousness. Every word is here diligently to be noted, for they are pithy and full of power. He doth not only say, as he is wont: We are justified by faith, or in spirit by faith, but moreover he addeth: *We waite*

waite

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



The righte-
ousnesse of
the faithfull
standeth not
in feeling.

whereupon thou holdest, standeth not upon thine own feeling, but upon thy hoping that it shall be revealed when it pleaseth the Lord. ~~Wherefore~~ thou must not judge according to the feeling of sinne which troubleth and terrifieth thee, but according to the promise and doctrine of Faith, whereby Christ is promised unto thee, who is thy perfect and everlasting righteousness. Thus the hope of the afflicted consisting in the inward affection, is stirred up by Faith in the midst of all terrours and feeling of sinne; to hope that he is righteous. Moreover, if hope be here taken for the thing which is hoped for, it is thus to be understood, that that which a man now seeth not, he hopeth in time shall be made perfect and clearly revealed.

ni Either sense may well stand: but the first touching the inward desire and affection of hoping, bringeth more plentifull consolation. For my righteousness is not yet perfect; it cannot yet be felt: yet, I doe not despaire: For Faith sheweth unto me Christ in whom I trust, and when I have laid hold of him by faith, I wraastle against the fiery darts of the Devil, and I take a good heart through hope against the feeling of sinne, assuring my selfe that I have a perfect righteousness prepared for me in Heaven: So both these sayings are true, that I am made righteous already by that righteousness which is begun in me; and also I am raised up in the same hope against sinne, and waite for the full consummation of perfect righteousness in Heaven. These things are not rightly understood, but when they be put in practise.

It is not

What difference there is betweene Faith and Hope.

Here ariseth a question, what difference there is betweene Faith and Hope. The Scholasters and Schoolemen have laboured very much in this matter, but they could never shew any certainly. Ye see us which travell in the holy Scriptures with much diligence, and also with more fulnesse and power of spirit, (be it spoken without any bragge) it is hard to finde any difference. For there is so great affinity betweene Faith and Hope, that the one cannot be separate from the other. Notwithstanding there is a difference betweene them, which is gathered of their severall offices, diversity of working; and of their ends.

Faith and Hope differ in respect of

First, they differ in respect of their subject, that is, of the ground wherein they rest: For Faith resteth in the understanding, and Hope

hope resteth in the will: but in very deede they cannot be separated, of their sub-
 the one having respect to the other, as the two Cherubins of the ^{ject.} *Exod. 25 201*
 Mercy seate, which could not be devided.

Secondly, they differ in respect of their office, that is, of their wor- ^{The diffe-}
 king. For faith telleth what is to be done, it teacheth, prescribeth, ^{rence be-}
 and directeth, and it is a knowledge. Hope is an exhortation which ^{tweene}
 stirreth up the minde that it may be strong, bold, and couragious: ^{such and}
 that it may suffer and indure aduersity, and in the middelt thereof ^{hope in}
 waite for better things. ^{their office.}

Thirdly, they differ as touching their object, that is, the speciall ^{The diffe-}
 matter whereunto they look. For faith hath for her object the truth, ^{rence as-}
 teaching us to cleave surely thereto, and looketh upon the word and ^{touching}
 promise of the thing that is promised. Hope hath for her object the ^{the object.}
 goodnes of God, and looketh upon the thing which is promised in
 the word; that is upon such matters as faith teacheth us to be hoped
 for.

Fourthly, they differ in order: For faith is the beginning of life be- ^{Difference}
 fore all tribulation, *Heb. 11.* But hope cometh afterwards, proceeding ^{in order.}
 of tribulation, *Rom. 5.*

Fifthly, they differ by the diversity of working: For faith is a tea- ^{Difference}
 cher and a judge, fighting against errors and heresies, judging spirits ^{in working.}
 and doctrines: But hope is as it were the Generall or Captaine of the
 field, fighting against tribulation, the crosse, impatiency, heavines of
 spirit, weaknes, desperation and blasphemy, and it waiteth for good
 things even in the middelt of all evils.

Therefore, when I am instructed by faith in the word of God,
 and lay hold of Christ, beleeving in him with the whole heart, then
 am I righteous by this knowledge. When I am so justified by faith
 or by this knowledge, by and by cometh the devill the father of
 lies, and laboureth to extinguish my faith by wiles and subtilties: that
 is to say, by lies, errors, and heresies. Moreover, because he is a mur-
 therer, he goeth about also to oppress: it by violence. Here hope
 wrastling, layeth hold on the thing revealed by faith, and overcom-
 meth the devill that warreth against faith: and after this victory fol-
 loweth peace and joy in the holy Ghost: So that in very deede faith
 and hope can scarcely be discerned the one from the other, and yet is
 there a certaine difference betweene them. And that it may be the
 better perceived, I will set out the matter by a similitude,

The difference between faith and hope in divinity, is the same that is between fortitude and prudence in policy.

In civill government, prudence and fortitude doe differ, and yet these two vertues are so joyned together, that they cannot easily be severed. Now, fortitude is a constancy of mind, which is not discouraged in adversity, but indureth valiantly, and waiteth for better things. But if fortitude be not guided by prudence, it is but temerity & rashnes. On the other side, if fortitude be not joyned with prudence, that prudence is but in vaine and unprofitable. Therefore like as in policy, prudence is but vaine without fortitude: even so in Divinity, faith without hope is nothing: For hope endureth adversitie, & is constant therein, and in the end overcometh all evils. And on the other side, like as fortitude without prudence is rashnes, even so hope without faith is a presumption in spirit, and a tempting of God: for it hath no knowledge of Christ and of the truth which faith teacheth, and therefore it is but a blind rashnes and arrogancy. Wherefore a godly man afore all things, must have a right understanding instructed by faith; according to the which the mind may be guided in affliction, that it may hope for those good things which faith hath revealed & taught.

To be short, faith is conceived by teaching: for thereby the mind is instructed what the truth is. Hope is conceived by exhortation: for by exhortation hope is stirred up in afflictions, which confirmeth him that is already justified by faith, that he be not overcome by adversities, but that hee may be able more strongly to resist them. Notwithstanding if the sparke of faith should not give light to the will, it could not be perswaded to lay hold upon hope. We have faith then, whereby we are taught, we understand and know the heavenly wisdom, apprehend Christ, and continue in his grace. But as soone as we lay hold upon Christ by faith, and confesse him, forthwith our enemies, the world, the flesh and the devill rise up against us, hating and persecuting us most cruelly both in body and spirit. Wherefore we thus beleeving and justified by faith in spirit, doe waite for the hope of our righteousness: And we waite through patience: for we see and feele the flat contrary. For the world with his prince the devill, assaileth us mightily both within and without. Moreover, sinne yet still remaineth in us, which driveth us into heaviness. Notwithstanding we give not over for all this, but raise up our minds strongly through faith, which lighteneth, teacheth and guideth the same. And thus we abide firme and constant, and overcome all adversities through him

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

esteemeth to
be good and
holy with-
out Christ,
is sinne.

Wherefore circumcision and the observation of the law: also the workes, religions and vowes of the Monkes and of all such as trust in their own righteousness, are altogether carnall. But we (saith Paul) are farre above all these things in the spirit and inward man: For we possesse Christ by faith, and in the midst of our afflictions through hope we waite for that righteousness which we possesse already by faith.

A sweete
contolacion
in anguish
and trouble
of consci-
ence.

The comfort is this, that in serious conflicts and terrours, where in the feeling of sinne, heaviness of spirit, desperation and such like, is very strong (for they enter deeply into the heart, and mightily afflict it) thou must not follow thine own feeling. For if thou doe, thou wilt say: I feele the horrible terrours of the law and the tyranny of sinne, not only rebelling against me, but also subduing and leading me captive, and I feele no comfort or righteousness at all. Therefore I am a sinner and not righteous. If I be a sinner, then am I guilty of everlasting death. But against this feeling thou must wrestle, and say: Although I feele my selfe utterly overwhelmed and swallowed up with sinne, and my heart telleth me that God is offended and angry with me, yet in very deed it is not true, but that mine own sense and feeling so judgeth. The word of God (which in these terrours I ought to follow, and not mine owne sense) teacheth a farre other thing: namely, *that God is neare unto them that are of a troubled heart; and saveth them that are of an humble spirit.* Also, *hee despiseth not an humble and a contrite heart.* Moreover, Paul sheweth here, that they which are justified in spirit by faith, doe not yet feele the hope of righteousness, but waite still for it.

Psal. 34. 8.
Psal 51. 17.

Wherefore, when the law accuseth and sinne terrifieth thee, and thou feelest nothing but the wrath and judgement of God, despaire not for all that, but take unto thee the armour of God, the shield of faith, the helmet of hope, and the sword of the Spirit, and try how good and how valiant a warrior thou art. Lay hold of Christ by faith, who is the Lord of the law and sinne, and of all things else which accompany them. Beleeving in him they are justified: which thing reason and the feeling of thine owne heart when thou art tempted, doe not tell thee, but the word of God. Moreover, in the midst of these conflicts and terrours which often returne and exercise thee, waite thou patiently through hope for righteousness, which thou hast now by faith, although it be yet but begun and

imperfect, untill it be revealed and made perfect in the kingdom of Heaven.

But thou wilt say : I feele not my selfe to have any righteousnesse, or at the least, I feele it but very little. Thou must not feele, but beleeve that thou hast righteousnes. And except thou beleeve that thou art righteous, thou doest great injury unto Christ, who hath cleansed thee by the washing of water through the word, who also died upon the crosse, condemned sinne and killed death, that through him thou mightest obtaine righteousnesse and everlasting life. These things thou canst not deny, (except thou wilt openly shew thy selfe to be wicked and blasphemous against God, and utterly to despise God, all his promises, Jesus Christ with all his benefits) and so consequently thou canst not deny but that thou art righteous.

Our righteousnes consisteth not in feeling, but in beleeving.
Ephes. 5. 26.
1 Cor. 13. 3.

Let us learne therefore in great and horrible terrours, when our conscience feeleth nothing but sinne, and judgeth that God is angry with us, and that Christ hath turned his face from us, not to follow the sense and feeling of our owne heart, but to stick to the word of God, which saith that God is not angry, but looketh to the afflicted and to such as are troubled in spirit, and tremble at his word : and that Christ turneth not himselfe away from such as labour and are heavy laden, but refresheth and comforteth them. This place therefore teacheth plainly, that the law and workes bring unto us no righteousnesse or comfort at all: but this doth the holy Ghost only in the faith of Christ, who raiseth up hope in terrours and tribulations, which endureth and overcommeth all adversities. Very few there be that know how weake and feeble faith and hope are under the crosse, and in the conflict. For it seemeth they are but as smoaking flax, which is ready by and by to be put out with a vehement wind. But the faithfull, who beleeve in the midst of these assaults and terrours, hoping against hope: that is to say, fighting through faith in the promise as touching Christ, against the feeling of sinne and of the wrath of God : doe afterwards find by experience, that this sparke of faith being very little (as it appeareth to naturall reason: for reason can scarcely feele it) is as a mighty fire, and swalloweth up all our sins and all our errours.

Isa. 66. 2.

Mat. 11. 28.

Isa. 42. 3.

There is nothing more deare or precious in all the world to the true children of God, then this doctrine. For they that understand this doctrine, doe know that whereof all the world is ignorant :

The treasure of the faithfull.

namely that sinne, death and all other miseries, afflictions and calamities, as well corporall as spirituall, doe turne to the benefit and profit of the elect. Moreover, they know that God is then most nere unto them, when he seemeth to be farthest off, and that he is then a most mercifull and loving Saviour, when he seemeth to be most angry; to afflict and to destroy. Also they know that they have an everlasting righteousnesse, which they waite for through hope, as a certaine and sure possession laid up for them in Heaven, even when they feele the horrible terrours of sinne and death: Moreover, that they are then lords of all things, when they are most destitute of all things, according to that saying: *Having nothing, and yet possessing all things.* This (saith the Scripture) is to conceive comfort through hope. But this cunning is not learned without great and often temptations.

2 Cor. 13. 10.

Verse 6. *For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, neither uncircumcision, but Faith which worketh by love.*

A true and a lively faith.

Paul shutteth all hypocrites out of the Church of God both on the right hand and on the left.

The whole life of a Christian according to Paul.

That is to say, faith which is not fained nor hypocriticall, but true and lively. This is that faith which exerciseth and requireth good workes through love. It is as much to say as: He that will be a true Christian indeed, or one of Christs kingdome, must be a true beleever. Now, he beleeveth not truely if workes of charity follow not his faith. So on both hands, as well on the right hand as on the left, he shutteth hypocrites out of Christs kingdome. On the left hand he shutteth out the Jewes, and all such as will worke their owne salvation, saying: *In Christ neither Circumcision,* that is to say, no workes, no service, no worshipping, no kind of life in the world, but faith without any trust in workes or merits availeth before God. On the right hand he shutteth out all sleathfull and idle persons, which say: if faith justifie without workes, then let us worke nothing, but let us onely beleve and doe what we list. Not so; ye enemies of grace: *Paul* saith otherwise. And although it be true that onely faith justifieth, yet he speaketh here of faith in another respect, that is to say, that after it hath justified, it is not idle, but occupied and exercised in working through love. *Paul* therefore in this place setteth forth the whole life of a Christian man, namely, that inwardly it consisteth in faith towards God, and outwardly in charity and good works towards our neighbour.

So

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



runneth
swifly in
Gods fight.
Mat. 5. 4.
Luk. 6. 21.

which is to us nothing else but sorrow, mourning and death, is before God, joy, mirth and true happinesse. Therefore Christ saith, *Blessed are ye that mourne and weepe, for ye shall receive comfort: ye shall laugh, &c.* All things shall turne to the best to them which beleeve in the Sonne of God, be it sorrow, or be it death it selfe. Therefore they be true runners indeed, and whatsoever they doe, it runneth well and goeth happily forward by the furtherance of Gods Spirit, which cannot skill of slow proceedings.

Verse 7. *Who did let you that you did not obey the truth?*

Gal 3. 1.

False doctrine
bewitcheth
men.

They are hindred in this course which fall away from faith and grace, to the law and workes: as it happeneth to the *Galathians* being misled and seduced by the false Apostles, whom covertly he reprehendeth with these words: *Who did let you that you did not obey the truth?* In like manner he said before in the third chapter: *Who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth?* And here Paul sheweth by the way, that men are so strongly bewitched with false doctrine, that they embrace lies and heresies in the stead of the truth and spirituall doctrine. And on the other side they say and swear that the sound doctrine which before they loved, is erroneous: and that their error is sound doctrine, maintaining and defending the same with all their power. Even so the false Apostles brought the *Galathians* (which ranne well at the beginning) into this opinion, to beleve that they erred and went very slowly forward when Paul was their teacher. But afterwards they being seduced by the false Apostles, and falling cleane away from the truth, were so strongly bewitched with their false persuasions, that they thought themselves to be in an happy state, and that they ranne very well. The same happeneth at this day to such as are seduced by the sectaries and fantastical spirits. Therefore I am wont to say, that falling in doctrine commeth not of man, but of the devill, and is most perillous: to wit, even from the high Heavens to the bottome of hell. For they that continue in error, are so farre off from acknowledging their sin, that they maintaine the same to be high righteousnesse. Wherefore it is impossible for them to obtaine pardon.

Falling in
doctrine is
devillish.

Verse 8. *It is not the persuasion of him that calleth you.*

This is a great consolation and a singular doctrine, whereby
Paul:

Paul sheweth how the false persuasions of such as are deceived by wicked teachers, may be rooted out of their hearts. The false Apostles were jolly fellowes; and in outward appearance farre passing *Paul* both in learning and godlinesse. The *Galatians* being deceived with this goodly shew, supposed that when they heard them, they heard Christ himselfe, and therefore they judged their persuasion to be of Christ. Contrariwise, *Paul* sheweth that this persuasion and doctrine was not of Christ, who had called them in grace, but of the devill: and by this meanes he wonne many of them from this false persuasion. Likewise we at this day revoke many from error that were seduced, when we shew that their opinions are fantastick, wicked, and full of blasphemies.

The author
of the
false Apo-
stles.

Againe, this consolation pertaineth to all those that are afflicted, which through tentation conceive a false opinion of Christ. For the devill is a marvellous perswader, and knoweth how to amplifie the least sin, yea a very trifle, in such sort that he which is tempted shall think it to be a most hainous and horrible crime, and worthy of eternal damnation. Here the troubled conscience must be comforted and raised up in such sort as *Paul* raised up the *Galatians*: to wit, that this cogitation or persuasion commeth not of Christ, forasmuch as it fighteth against the word of the Gospell, which painteth out Christ, not as an accuser, a cruell exactor, &c. but as a meeke, humble-hearted, and a mercifull Saviour and comforter.

A consolati-
on for them
which con-
ceive a false
opinion of
Christ.

But if Satan (who is a cunning workeman, and will leave no way unassayed) overthrow this, and lay against thee the word and example of Christ in this wise: True it is that Christ is meeke, gentle and mercifull, but to those which are holy and righteous: Contrariwise, to the sinners he threatneth wrath and destruction, *Luke 13*. Also he pronounceth that the unbelievers are damned already, *John 3*. Moreover; Christ wrought many good workes: he suffered also many evils, and commandeth us to follow his example. But thy life is neither according to Christs word, nor his example: For thou art a sinner, and there is no faith in thee: Yea, thou hast done no good at all, and therefore those sentences which set forth Christ as a severe Judge, doe belong to thee, and not those comfortable sentences which shew him to be a loving and a mercifull Saviour, &c. Here let him that is tempted, comfort himselfe after this manner:

The

Christ is set
out in the
Scripture as
an example
and as a gift.
* Coloss. 2. 3.
1 Cor. 2. 30.

The Scripture setteth out Christ unto us two manner of wayes. First as a gift, If I take hold of him in this sort, I can want nothing. * For in Christ are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge. He, with all that is in him, is made unto me of God, wisdom, righteousness, sanctification and redemption. Therefore although I have committed both many and grievous sinnes: yet notwithstanding if I beleeve in him, they shall all be swallowed up by his righteousness. Secondly, the Scripture setteth him forth as an example to be followed. Notwithstanding I will not suffer this Christ (I meane as he is an example) to be set before me, but onely in the time of joy and gladnes when I am out of tentation (where I can scarcely follow the thousandth part of his example) that I may have him as a mirrour to behold and view how much is yet wanting in me, that I become not secure and carelesse. But in the time of tribulation I will not heare nor admit Christ, but as a gift, who dying for my sinnes, hath bestowed upon me his righteousness, and hath done and accomplished that for me, which was wanting in my life: *For he is the end and fulfilling of the law unto righteousness to every one that beleeveth.*

Rom. 8. 4.

It is good to know these things, not onely to the end that every one of us may have a sure and a certaine remedy in the time of tentation whereby we may eschue that venome of desperation, wherewith Satan thinketh to poyson us: but also to the end we may be able to resist the furious Sectaries and Schismatickes of our time. For the Anabaptists count nothing more glorious in their whole doctrine, then that they severely urge the example of Christ and the Crosse: especially seeing the sentences are manifest wherein Christ commendeth the Crosse to his Disciples. We must learne therefore how we may withstand this Satan, transforming himself into the likeness of an Angell. Which we shall do if we make a difference betweene Christ set forth unto us sometimes as a gift, and sometimes as an example. The preaching of him both wayes hath his convenient time, which if it be not observed, the preaching of salvation may be turned into poyson. Christ therefore must be set forth unto those which are already cast downe and bruised through the heavy weight and burden of their sinnes, as a Saviour and a gift, and not as an example of a law-giver. But to those that are secure and obstinate, he must be set forth as an example. Also the hard sentences of the Scripture, and the horrible ex-
amples

To whom
Christ must
be set out
as a gift, and
to whom as
an example.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

be counted wise and be magnified of them. Through this false accusation they made *Paul* very odious unto many.

Some other which had not yet utterly forsaken his doctrine, thought that there was no danger in dissenting a little from him in the doctrine of Justification and Faith. Wherefore when they heard that *Paul* made so hainous a matter of that which seemed unto them to be but light and of small importance, they marvelled, and thus they thought with themselves: Be it so that we have swarved something from the doctrine of *Paul*, and that there hath been some fault in us: yet that being but a small matter, he ought to winke thereat, or at least not so vehemently to amplify it, lest by the occasion thereof the concord of the Churches should be broken. Whereunto he answereth with this sentence: *A little leaven leaveneth [or maketh] sowre] the whole lump of dough.* And this is a caveat or admonition which *Paul* standeth much upon. And we also ought greatly to esteeme the same at this day. For our adversaries in like manner object against us that we are contentious, obstinate, and intractable in defending our doctrine, and even in matters of no great importance. But these are the crafty fetches of the devill, whereby he goeth about utterly to overthrow our doctrine. To this we answer therefore with *Paul*; that a little leaven maketh sowre the whole lump.

Doctrine
and life must
be separate
far asunder

In Philosophie, a small fault in the beginning, is a great and foule fault in the end. So in Divinitie, one little error overthroweth the whole doctrine. Wherefore we must separate life and doctrine farre asunder. The doctrine is not ours, but Gods, whose Ministers onely we are called: therefore we may not change or diminish one title thereof. The life is ours: therefore as touching that, we are ready to doe, to suffer, to forgive, &c. whatsoever our adversaries shall require of us, so that faith and doctrine may remaine sound and uncorrupt: of the which we say alwayes with *Paul*: *A little leaven leaveneth, &c.*

The doctrine
of faith.

A small mote in the eye hurteth the eye. And our Saviour Christ saith: *The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, then is thy whole body light: but if thine eye be evill, then thy body is darke.* Again: *If thy body shall have no part darke, then shall all be light.* By this allegory Christ signifieth that the eye, that is to say, the doctrine ought to be most simple, cleare and sincere, having in it no darknesse, no cloud, &c. And James the

Luk. 11. 34.

Verse 35.

the

the Apostle saith: *He that faileth in one point is guilty of all.* This place therefore maketh very much for us against these cavillers which say, that we breake charity, to the great hurt and damage of the Churches. But we protest that we desire nothing more then to be at unity with all men: so that they leave unto us the doctrine of faith entire and uncorrupt: to the which all things ought to give place, be it charity, an Apostle, or an Angell from Heaven.

Let us suffer them therefore to extoll charity and concord as much as they list: but on the other side, let us magnifie the Majesty of the word and faith. Charity may be neglected in time and place without any danger: but so cannot the word and faith be. Charity suffereth all things, giveth place to all men. Contrariwise, faith suffereth nothing, giveth place to no man. Charity in giving place, in believing, in giving and forgiving, is oftentimes deceived, and yet notwithstanding being so deceived, it suffereth no losse which is to be called true losse indeed, that is to say, it loseth not Christ. Therefore it is not offended, but continueth still constant in well doing; yea even towards the unthankfull and unworthy. Contrariwise in the matter of faith and salvation, when men teach lies and errors under colour of the truth, and seduce many, here hath charity no place: For here we lose not any benefit bestowed upon the unthankfull, but we lose the word, faith, Christ and everlasting life. Let it not move us therefore that they urge so much the keeping of charity and concord: For who so loveth not God and his word, it is no matter what or how much he loveth.

Paul therefore, by this sentence admonisheth, as well teachers as hearers, to take heed that they esteeme not the doctrine of faith as a light matter, wherewith they may dally at their pleasure. It is as a bright Sunne beame coming down from heaven, which lightneth, directeth and guideth us. Now, like as the world with all his wisdom and power is not able to stoppe or turne away the beames of the Sunne coming down from heaven to the earth: even so can there nothing be added to the doctrine of faith, or taken from it: for that is an utter defacing and overthrowing of the whole.

Verse 10. I have trust in you through the Lord.

As if he would say: I have taught, admonished and reprov'd you enough, so that ye would hearken unto me. Notwithstanding

Jam. 1. 10
Charity suffereth all things, but faith suffereth nothing.

1 Cor. 13. 7.
Charity may be deceived, but faith cannot.

When we must exercise charity, and when not.

Whether
we may
trust in men.

I hope well of you in the Lord. Here riseth a question, whether *Paul* doth well when he saith, he hath a good hope or trust of the *Galathians*, seeing the holy Scripture forbiddeth any trust to be put in men. Both faith and charity have their trust and beleefe, but after divers sorts, by reason of the diversity of their objects. Faith trusteth in God, and therefore it cannot be deceived: charity beleeveth man, and therefore it is often deceived. Now, this faith that springeth of charity is so necessary to this present life, that without it life cannot continue in the world. For if one man should not beleefe and trust another, what life should we live upon earth? The true Christians do sooner beleefe and give credit through charity, then the children of this world doe. For faith towards men is a fruit of the Spirit or of Christian faith in the godly. Here upon *Paul* had a trust in the *Galathians*, yea, though they were fallen from his doctrine: but yet in the Lord. As if I should say: I have a trust in you so farre forth as the Lord is in you, and ye in him: that is to say, so farre forth as ye abide in the truth. From which if you fall away, seduced by the ministers of Satan, I will not trust unto you any more. Thus it is lawfull for the godly to trust and beleefe men.

Verse 10. That yee will be none otherwise minded.

To wit, concerning doctrine and faith, then I have taught you, and ye have learned of me: That is to say, I have good hope of you; that ye will not receive any other doctrine which shall be contrary to mine.

Verse 10. But hee that troubleth you shall beare his condemnation who-soever he be.

Wicked
teachers are
troublers of
mens con-
sciences

By this sentence, *Paul* as it were a judge sitting upon the judgement seate, condemneth the false Apostles, calling them by a very odious name, troublers of the *Galathians*: whom they esteemed to be very godly men, and farre better teachers then *Paul*. And withall he goeth about to terrifie the *Galathians* with this horrible sentence: whereby he so boldly condemneth the false Apostles, to the end that they should flie their false doctrine as a most dangerous plague. As if he should say: What means ye to give care to those pestilent fellowes, which teach you not, but only trouble you? The doctrine that they deliver unto you, is nothing else but a trouble
I unto

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Verse 11. *And brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why doe I yet suffer persecution? Then is the slander of the crosse abolished.*

Act. 13. 50.

The false
Apostles
enemies of
the crosse
of Christ.

The doctrine
of Faith.

Paul labouring by all meanes possible to call the *Galatians* backe againe, reasoneth now by his own example. I have procured to my selfe (saith he) the hatred and persecution of the Priests and Elders, and of my whole nation, because I take away righteousness from circumcision: which if I would attribute unto it; the Jewes would not only cease to persecute me, but also would love and highly commend me. But now, because I preach the Gospell of Christ, and the righteousness of faith, abolishing the law and circumcision, therefore I suffer persecution. Contrariwise the false Apostles, to avoid the crosse and this deadly hatred of the Jewish nation, doe preach circumcision: and by this meanes they obtaine and retaine the favour of the Jewes: as he saith in the sixth Chapter following: *They compell you to be circumcised, &c.* Moreover, they would gladly bring to passe, that there should be no dissention, but peace and concord between the Gentiles and the Jewes, But that is impossible to be done without the losse of the doctrine of faith, which is the doctrine of the crosse, and full of offences, Wherefore when he saith: *If I yet preach circumcision, why doe I yet suffer persecution? then is the slander of the crosse abolished:* he meaneth that it were a great absurdity and inconvenience, if the offence of the crosse should cease. After the same manner he speaketh, *1 Cor. 1. Christ sent me to preach the Gospell, not with wisdom of words, lest the crosse of Christ should be made of none effect.* As if he said, I would not that the offence and crosse of Christ should be abolished.

The Church
is in best
case and
most flourisheth
under the
crosse,

Here may some man say: The Christians then are mad men, to cast themselves into danger of their owne accord: For what doe they else by preaching and confessing the truth, but procure unto themselves the hatred and enmity of the whole world, and raise offences? This (saith Paul) doth nothing at all offend or trouble me, but maketh me more bold, and causeth me to hope well of the happy successe and increase of the Church, which flourisheth and groweth under the crosse: For it behoveth that Christ the head and spouse of the Church should reigne in the midst of all his enemies, *Psalme. 110.* On the contrary part, when the crosse is abolished,

lished, and the rage of tyrants and hereticks ceaseth on the one side, and offences on the other side, and all things are in peace, the Devill keeping the entry of the house, this is a sure token that the pure doctrine of Gods word is taken away.

Bernard considering this thing, saith that the Church is then in best state, when Sathan assaileth it on every side, as well by subtill sleights as by violence: and contrariwise that it is then in worst case when it is most at ease. And he alledgeth very well and to the purpose that sentence of *Hezechias* in his Song: *Behold, for felicity I had bitter griefe,* applying it to the Church, living in ease and quietnesse. Wherefore *Paul* taketh it for a most certaine signe that it is not the Gospell, if it be preached in peace. Contrariwise the world taketh it for a most certaine signe that the Gospell is hereticall and seditious doctrine, because it seeth great uproares, tumults, offences and sects, and such like to follow the preaching thereof. * Thus God sometimes sheweth himselfe in the similitude of the devill, and the devill likewise sheweth himselfe in the likenesse of God: And God will be known under the similitude of the devill, and will have the devill knowne under the likenesse of God.

Esa. 38. 17.

* He meaneth that God sometimes in punishing, sheweth himselfe as though it were not he, but Satan: and contrariwise Satan when he flattereth sheweth himselfe as though he were God and not Satan.

The crosse immediately followeth the doctrine of the word, according to that saying, *Psalme, 116. I beleved, and therefore have I spoken: and I was sore troubled.* Now, the crosse of the Christians is persecution, with reproach and ignominy, and without any compassion, and therefore it is very offensive. First they suffer as the vilest people in the world, and so did the Prophet *Esaie* foresee even of Christ himselfe, *Chap. 53. Hee was reputed amongst the wicked.* Moreover, murderers and theeves have their punishments qualified, and men have compassion on them. Here is no offence or slander joyned with the punishment. Contrariwise, like as the world judgeth the Christians to be of all other-men the most pestilent and pernicious, so doth it thinke that no torments are sufficient to punish them for their hainous offences. Neither is it mooved with any compassion towards them, but putteth them to the most opprobrious and shamefull kinds of death that can be. And it thinketh that it gaineth hereby a double commodity, For first, it imagineth that it doth high service unto God in killing of them: secondly that the common peace and tranquillity is restored and stablished by taking away such noysome plagues. There-

Iob 16 2, 3. What the world looketh for by the death of the godly.

fore the death and crosse of the Faithfull is full of offences. But let not this reproachfull dealing (saith Paul) and the continuance of Christs crosse and offence thereof moove you: but rather let it confirme you. For as long as the crosse endureth, it shall goe well with the Gospell.

In like manner Christ also comforteth his Disciples in the fifth of *Mathew*: *Blessed are yee (saith he) when men revile you and persecute you; and shall falsly say all manner of evill against you for my Names sake, Rejoyce and be glad, for great is your reward in Heaven: For so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you.* The Church cannot suffer this rejoycing to be wrested from her: Wherefore I would not wish to be at concord with the Pope, the Bishops, the Princes, and the Sectaries, unlesse they would consent unto our doctrine. For such concord were a certaine token that wee had lost the true doctrine. To be short, as long as the Church teacheth the Gospell, it must suffer persecution. For the Gospell setteth forth the mercy and glory of God: It discloseth the malice and sleights of the devill, painteth him out in his right colours, and plucketh from him the counterfeit vizour of Gods Majesty, whereby he deceiveth the whole world: that is to say, it sheweth that all worshippings, religious Orders invented by men, and traditions concerning single life, meats, and such other things, whereby men thinke to deserve forgiveness of sinnes, and everlasting life, are wicked things and devillish doctrines. There is nothing then that more stirreth up the devill, then the preaching of the Gospell. For that plucketh from him the dissembled vizour of God, and bewrayeth him to be as he is indeed, that is to say, the devill, and not God: Wherefore it cannot be but that as long as the Gospell flourisheth, the crosse and the offence thereof must needs follow it, or else truly the devill is not rightly touched, but slenderly tickled. But if he be rightly hit indeed, he resteth not, but beginneth horribly to rage, and to raise up troubles every where.

If Christians then will hold the word of life, let them not be afraid or offended when they see that the devill is broken loose and rageth every where, that all the world is in an uproare, that tyrants exercise their cruelty, and heresies spring up: but let them assure themselves that these are signes, not of terror, but of joy, as Christ himselfe expoundeth them, saying: *Rejoyce and bee*

glad,

Luther will be at no way with the enemies of the Gospell. The Gospell setteth forth the glory of God, & discloseth the craft & subtilty of the Devil.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

The majesty
of Gods
Word is
highly to be
advanced.

is yet one that can raise us up againe, and deliver us from the curse, death and hell.

Wherefore let us learne to advance and extoll the Majesty and authority of Gods word. For it is no small trifle (as brain-sick heads surmise at this day:) but every tittle thereof is greater than heaven and earth. Wherefore in this respect we have no regard of Christian charity or concord, but we sit as it were on the judgement seate, that is to say, we curse and condemne all men, which in the least point doe deface or corrupt the majesty of Gods word: *For a little leaven maketh soure the whole Yumpe.* But if they leave us Gods word entire and sound, we are not only ready to keep charity and peace with them: but also we offer our selves to be their servants, and to doe for them whatsoever we are able: If not, let them perish and be cast downe into hell: and not only they, but even the whole world also, so that God and his pure word do remaine. For as long as he remaineth, life, salvation, and the faithfull shall also remaine.

Paul therefore doth well in cursing those troublers of the Galathians, and in pronouncing sentence against them, to wit, that they are accursed with all that they teach and doe, and in wishing that they might be cut off, especially that they might be rooted out of the Church of GOD, that is, that God should not governe nor prosper their doctrine nor their doings. And this cursing proceedeth from the holy Ghost. As *Peter* also in the eight of the *Acts* curseth *Simon* the Sorcerer: *Thy money and thou perish together.* And the holy Scripture oftentimes useth cursing against such troublers of mens consciences, and chiefly in the Psalmes: as *Psalm. 55. Let death come upon them: let them goe quicke into the pit of corruption.* Also, *Let sinners be turned downe into hell, and all they that forget God, Psalm. 9.*

As *Corah,*
Dathan and
Abiron.

Pauls ex-
ample in
suffering.

Hitherto *Paul* hath fortified the place of justification with strong and mighty arguments. Moreover, to the end hee might omit nothing, here and there he hath intermingled chidings, prayings, exhortations, threatnings and such like. In the end he addeth also his owne example, namely that he suffereth persecution for this doctrine, thereby admonishing all the faithfull, not to be offended nor dismayed when they shall see such uproares, sects and offences raised up in the time of the Gospell, but rather to rejoyce and be glad. For the more the world rageth against the Gospell,

the

the more the Gospell prospereth and goeth happily forwards.

This consolation ought at this day to encourage us : for it is certain that the world hateth and persecuteth us for none other cause, but for that we professe the truth of the Gospell. It doth not accuse us for theft, murder, whoredome and such like : but it detesteth and abhorreth us because we teach Christ faithfully and purely, and give not over the defence of the truth. Therefore we may be out of all doubt, that this our doctrine is holy and of God, because the world hateth it so bitterly ? For otherwise there is no doctrine so wicked, so foolish and pernicious, which the world doth not gladly admit, embrace and defend : and moreover it reverently entertaineth, cherisheth and flattereth the professors thereof, and doth all that may be done for them. Only the true doctrine of the Gospell, life & salvation, and the ministers thereof, it utterly abhorreth & worketh all the spite that may be devised against them. It is an evident token therefore that the world is so cruelly bent against us for no other thing, but because it hateth the word. Wherefore when our adversaries charge us, that there riseth nothing of this doctrine but warres, seditions, offences, sects, and other such infinite enormities : let us answer : *Blessed be the day wherein we may see these things.* But the whole world is in an uproare. And well done : For if the world were not so troubled : if the devill did not rage and stir up such broyls, we should not have the pure doctrine of the Gospell, which cannot be preached, but these broyls and turmoils must needs follow. Therefore that which ye count to be a great evill, we take to be a speciall happines.

What the world condemneth in godly teachers.

An objection.

The answer.

The doctrine of good workes.

Now follow exhortations and precepts of life and good workes. For it is the custome of the Apostles, after they have taught faith and instructed mens consciences, to adde precepts of good workes, whereby they exhort the faithfull to exercise the duties of charity one towards another. And reason it selfe after a sort teacheth and understandeth this part of doctrine : but as touching the doctrine of faith, it knoweth nothing at all. To the end therefore that it might appear that Christian doctrine doth not destroy good workes, or fight against civill ordinances, the Apostle also exhorteth us to exercise our selves in good workes, and in an honest outward conversation, and to keep cha-

The Apostles after the doctrine of faith, add precepts of good life.

rity and concord one with another. The world cannot therefore justly accuse the Christians that they destroy good works, that they are troublers of the publick peace, civil honesty, &c. for they teach good works and all other vertues better then all the Philosophers and Magistrates of the world, because they adjoyn faith in their doings.

Verse 13. *For brethren ye have beene called unto liberty : onely use not your liberty as an occasion unto the flesh, but by love serve ye one another.*

As if he would say : Ye have now obtained liberty through Christ, that is to say, ye be farre above all laws as touching conscience and before God: ye be blessed and saved, Christ is your life. Therefore although the law, sin and death trouble and terrifie you, yet can they not hurt you nor drive you to despair. And this is your excellent and inestimable liberty. Now standeth it you in hand to take good heed, that ye use not that liberty as an occasion to the flesh.

Gal. 3.4.
The liberty
of the faith-
full

This evill is common and the most pernicious of all others, that Satān stirreth up in: the doctrine of faith : namely, that in very many he turneth this liberty, wherewith Christ hath made us free, into the liberty of the flesh. Of this the Apostle Jude also complaineth in his Epistle. *There are crept in certaine wicked men (saith he) which turne the grace of our God into wantonnesse.* For the flesh is utterly ignorant of the doctrine of grace, that is to say, it knoweth not that we are made righteous, not by works, but by faith only, and that the law hath no authoritie over us. Therefore when it heareth the doctrine of faith, it abuseth and turneth it into wantonnesse and by and by thus it gathereth : If we be without law, let us then live as we list, let us do no good, let us give nothing to the needy, and let us not suffer any evill, for there is no law to constraine us or bind us so to doe.

Jud. 1.4.

Carnal men
understand
not the do-
ctrine of
faith.

Wherefore there is danger on either side : albeit the one is more tolerable then the other. If grace or faith be not preached, no man can be saved : for it is faith alone that justifieth and saveth. On the other side, if faith be preached (as of necessitie it must be) the more part of men understand the doctrine of faith carnally : and draw the libertie of the spirit into the libertie of the flesh. This may wee see in all kinds of life, as well of the high as the low. All boast them-

The greatest
part of men
understand
the doctrine
of faith car-
nally.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



one another through love.

The godly
are free ac-
cording to
the spirit,
but bond-
servants ac-
cording to
the flesh.

To the end therefore that Christians should not abuse this liberty (as I have said) the Apostle layeth a yoke and bondage upon their flesh by the law of mutuall love. Wherefore let the godly remember that in conscience before God, they be free from the curse of the law, from sin and from death, for Christs sake: but as touching the body they are servants and must serve one another through charity, according to this commandement of *Paul*: Let every man therefore endeavour to do his duty diligently in his calling, and to help his neighbour to the uttermost of his power. This is it which *Paul* here requireth of us: *Serve yee one another through love*. Which words do not set the Christians at liberty, but shut them under bondage as touching the flesh.

Carnal men
abuse Chri-
stian liberty

Moreover this doctrine concerning mutuall love which we must maintain and exercise one towards another, cannot be beaten into the heads of carnall men, nor sinke into their hearts. The Christians doe gladly receive and obey this doctrine. Others as soone as liberty is preached, by and by do thus infer: If I be free, then may I doe what I list: This thing is mine own, why then should I not sell it for as much as I may get? Moreover, seeing we obtain not salvation by our good works, why should we give any thing to the poore? Thus do they most carelessly shake off the yoke of love and good works, and turne the liberty of the Spirit into wantonnesse and fleshly liberty. But we tell such carelesse contempters (although they beleeve us not, but laugh us to scorn) that if they use their bodies and their goods after their owne lust, (as indeed they doe, for they neither helpe the poore, nor lend to the needy, but beguile their brethren in bargaining, snatching and scraping unto themselves by hooke or by crooke whatsoever they can get) we tell them (I say) that they be not free, bragge they never so much of their liberty, but have lost Christ and Christian liberty, are become bond-slaves of the devill, and are seven times worse under the name of Christian liberty, then they were before under the tyrannie of the Pope. For the devil which was driven out of them, hath taken unto him seven other fiends worse then himself, and is returned into them again: therefore the end of these men is worse then the beginning.

As touching us, we have a commandement of God to preach the Gospel, which offereth to all men liberty from the law, sinne, death

death and Gods wrath, freely for Christs sake, if they beleewe. It is not in our power to conceale or revoke this liberty now published by the Gospell: For Christ hath given it unto us freely and purchased it by his death. Neither can we constrain those Swine which run headlong into all licentiousnes and dissolutenesse of the flesh, to helpe other men with their bodies or goods: therefore we do what we can, that is to say, we diligently admonish them that they ought so to do. If we nothing prevail by these admonitions, we commit the matter to God, and he will recompence those scorers with just punishment in his good time. In the mean while this is our comfort, that as touching the godly our labour is not lost, of whom many (no doubt) by our ministry are delivered out of the bondage of the devill, and translated into the liberty of the Spirit. These (which notwithstanding are but few) which acknowledge the glory of this liberty of the Spirit, and on the other side are ready through charity to serve other men, and know themselves to be debtors to their brethren touching the flesh, do more rejoyce us then the innumerable multitude of those that abuse this liberty, are able to discourage us.

Christian liberty must be taught, though men abuse it.

Paul useth here very apt and plain words, when he saith: *Brethren ye are called into liberty.* And because no man should dream that he speaketh of the liberty of the flesh, he expoundeth himself what manner of liberty he meaneth, saying: *Only use not your liberty as an occasion to the flesh, but serve ye one another through love.* Wherefore let every Christian know, that as touching the conscience, Christ hath made him Lord over the law, sin and death, so that they have no power over him. Contrariwise, let him know that this outward bondage is laid upon his body, that he should serve his neighbor through love. They that understand Christian liberty otherwise, enjoy the commodities of the Gospell to their own destruction, and are worse idolaters under the name of Christ, then they were before under the Pope. Now *Paul* goeth about to declare out of the ten Commandements, what it is to serve one another through love.

They which understand the Christian liberty, serve one another through love.

Verse 14. *For the whole law is fulfilled in one word, which is this: Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy selfe.*

Paul, after that he hath once layed the foundation of Christian doctrine, is wont to build gold, silver and precious stones upon it.

Now

Chap. V. Upon the E P I S T L E

Now, there is no other foundation, as he himselfe saith to the *Corinthians*, then Jesus Christ, or the righteousness of Christ. Upon this foundation he buildeth now good workes, yea good workes in deed : all which he comprehendeth in one precept : *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy selfe.* As if he should say : when I say that yee must serve one another through love, I meane the same thing that the law saith in another place : *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy selfe.* And this is truly to interpret the Scripture and Gods Commandments.

1 Cor. 3. 11.

Levit. 19. 8.

Now, in giving precepts of love, he covertly toucheth by the way the false teachers : against whom he setteth himselfe mightily, that he may defend and stablish his doctrine of good workes against them. As if he said, O yee *Galatians*, I have hitherto taught you the true and spirituall life, and now also I will teach you what be good workes indeed. And this will I doe to the end yee may know that the vaine and foolish workes of ceremonies which the false Apostles doe onely urge, are farre inferiour to the workes of charitie. For such is the foolishnesse and madnesse of all wicked teachers and fantasticall spirits, that not onely they leave the true foundation and pure doctrine : but also continuing alwaies in their superstitions, they never attaine to good workes. Therefore (as * *Paul* saith) they build nothing but wood, hay and stubble upon the foundation. So the false Apostles which were the most earnest defenders of workes, did not teach or require the workes of charitie, as that Christians should love one another, that they should be ready to helpe their neighbours in all necessities, not only with their goods, but also with their body, that is to say, with tongue, hand, heart, and with their whole strength : but only they required that circumcision should be kept, that daies, months, yeares and times should be observed : and other good workes they could teach none. For after they have destroyed the foundation which is Christ, and darkned the doctrine of faith, it was impossible that there should remaine any true use, exercise or opinion of good workes. Take away the tree, and the fruit must needs perish.

Merit-mongers and hypocrites understand not the doctrine of faith and of good workes.

* 1 Cor 3. 12, 13.

Gal. 4. 10.

The Apostle therefore diligently exhorteth the Christians to exercise themselves in good workes, after that they have heard and received the pure doctrine of faith. For the remnants of sinne doe yet still remaine even in those that be justified ; which, as they
are

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

like. In this case if they omit any thing, be it never so little, they sin deadly. But when they do not only neglect charity, but also hate one another to the death; they sin not, nor offend God at all.

Paul teacheth good works, and condemneth evill works.

Therefore by this commandment *Paul* not only teacheth good works, but also condemneth fantastical and superstitious works. He not only buildeth gold, silver and precious stones upon the foundation, but also throweth down the wood, and burneth up the hay and stubble. God witnessed by examples in the old Testament how much he did always esteem of charity: whereunto he would have the very law it self, and the ceremonies therof to give place. At such time, as *David* and they that were with him were hungry and had not what to eat, they did eat the holy shew-bread, which by the law the lay people might not eat, but only the Priests. Christs disciples brake the Sabbath in plucking the ears of corn: yea and Christ himself brake the Sabbath (as said the Jews) in healing the sick on the Sabbath day. All these things shew that charity or love ought to be preferred before all laws and ceremonies, and that God requireth nothing so much at our hands, as love towards our neighbour. The same thing Christ also witnesseth, when he saith: *And the second is like unto this.*

1 Sam. 21. 6.

Mat. 12. 3, 10

Mat. 22. 39.

Verse 14. For all the law is fulfilled in one word.

As if hee said: Why doe ye burden your selves with the law? Why doe yee toyle and turmoyle your selves about the ceremonies of the law, about meats, dayes places, and such other things: as how ye ought to eat, drinke, keepe your feasts, sacrifice? &c. Leave off these follies, and hearken what I say: All the law is fully comprehended in this one saying: *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.* God delighteth not in the observation of the ceremonies of the law, neither hath he any need of th'm. The only thing that he requireth at your hands is this, that ye beleve in Christ whom he hath sent: in whom ye are made perfect and have all things. But if unto faith, which is the most acceptable service of God, ye will also adde laws, then assure your selves that all laws are comprehended in this short commandment: *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.* Endeavour your selves to keepe this Commandement: which being kept, ye have fulfilled all laws.

∴ *Paul* is a very good Expounder of Gods Commandements:

For

For he draweth all *Moses* into a briefe summe, shewing that nothing else is contained in all his lawes (which are in a manner infinite) but this short sentence: *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy selfe.* Naturall reason is offended at this baseness and shortnesse of words: for it is soone said: *Beleeve in Christ.* And againe: *Love thy neighbour as thy selfe.* Therefore it despiseth both the doctrine of Faith and true good workes. Notwithstanding, this base and vile word of faith (as reason taketh it) *Beleeve in Christ,* is the power of God to the faithfull, whereby they overcome sinne, death, the devill, &c. whereby also they attaine salvation and eternall life. Thus to serve one another through love, that is to instruct him that goeth astray, to comfort him that is afflicted, to raise up him that is weake, to helpe thy neighbour by all means possible, to beare with his infirmitie, to endure troubles, labours, ingratitude and contempt in the Church; and in civill life and conversation to obey the Magistrate, to give due honour to thy parents, to be patient at home with a froward wife, and an unruly family, &c. these (I say) are works which reason judgeth to be of no value. But, indeed they are such works, that the whole world is not able to comprehend the excellency and worthinesse thereof (for it doth not measure workes or any other thing by the word of God, but by the judgement of wickèd, blinde and foolish reason:) Yea, it knoweth not the value of any one of the least good workes that can be, which are true good workes indeed.

Therefore, when men dreame that they know well enough the commandement of charity, they are utterly deceived. Indeed they have it written in their heart: for they naturally judge that a man ought to doe unto another, as he would another should doe unto him. But it followeth not therefore that they understand it: For if they did, they would also performe it indeed, and would preferre love and charity before all their workes. They would not so highly esteeme their own superstitious toys, as to goe with an heavy countenance hanging downe the head, to live unmarried, to live with bread and water, to dwell in the wilderness, to be poorly apparellèd, &c. These monstrous and superstitious workes, which they have devised and chosen unto themselves, God neither commanding nor approving the same, they esteeme to be so holy and so excellent, that they surmount and darken charity, which is as it were the Sunne of all good workes. So great and incompre-

A briefe summe
of all *Mo-*
ses lawes.

A most short
doctrine of
all true *Chri-*
stianity.
Rom. 1. 16.

To serve our
neighbour
through
charity.

A descrip-
tion of an
hypocrite

sible is the blindness: of mans reason, that it is unable, not onely to judge rightly of the doctrine of Faith, but also of externall conversation and works. Wherefore we must fight strongly, as well against the opinions of our own hearts (to the which we are naturally more inclined in the matter of salvation then to the word of God,) as also against the counterfeit vizour and holy shew of our own wil works: that so we may learne to magnifie the works which every man doth in his vocation, although they seeme outwardly never so base and contemptible, if they have the warrant of Gods word: and contrariwise, to despise those works, which reason chooseth without the commandement of God, seeme they never so excellent and holy.

Of this commandement I have largely intreated in another place, and therefore I will now but lightly over-runne it. Indeede this is briefly spoken: *Love thy neighbour as thy selfe*, but yet very aptly and to the purpose. No man can give a more certaine, a better or a neerer example then a mans owne selfe. Therefore, if thou wouldest know how thy neighbour ought to be loved, and wouldest have a plaine example thereof, consider well how thou lovest thy selfe. If thou shouldest be in necessity or danger, thou wouldest be glad to have the love and friendship of all men, to be holpen with the counsell, the goods and the strength of all men and of all creatures. Wherefore thou hast no need of any booke to instruct and to admonish thee how thou oughtest to love thy neighbour: for thou hast an excellent booke of all lawes even in thy heart. Thou needest no Schoole-master in this matter: aske counsell onely of thine own heart, and that shall teach thee sufficiently that thou oughtest to love thy neighbour as thy selfe. Moreover, love or charity is an excellent vertue, which not onely maketh a man willing and ready to serve his neighbour with tongue, with hand, with money and worldly goods: but with his body, and even with his life also. And thus to do, it is not provoked by good deserts or any thing else, neither is it hindred through evill deserts or ingratitude. The mother doth therefore nourish and cherish her child, because she loveth it.

How our
neighbour
ought to be
loved.

Charity a
singular
vertue.

Who is our
neighbour.

Now, my neighbour is every man, especially which hath neede of my helpe, as Christ expoundeth it in the tenth Chapter of *Luke*. Who although he hath done me some wrong, or hurt me by any manner of way: yet notwithstanding he hath not put off the nature
of

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



there should be any concord either in doctrine or life, but daily new errors must needs spring up without measure and without end.

The way
how to keep
concord.

Paul therefore teacheth that such occasions of discord are to be avoided, and he sheweth how they may be avoided. This (saith he) is the way to unity and concord: Let every man doe his duty in that kind of life which God hath called him unto. Let him not lift up himselfe above others, nor find fault at other mens works, and commend his own, but let every one serve another through love. This is a true and a simple doctrine touching good workes. This doe not they teach which have made shipwrack of faith, and have conceived fantasticall opinions concerning faith and good workes: but disagreeing among themselves as touching the doctrine of faith and workes, they bite and devoure, that is to say, they accuse and condemne one another, as *Paul* here saith of the Galathians. *If yee bite and devoure one another, take heed lest yee bee consumed one of another.* As if he would say: doe not accuse and condemne one another for circumcision, for observing of holy dayes or other ceremonies, but rather give your selves to serve and helpe one another through charity: or else if ye continue in biting and devouring one another, take heed that ye be not consumed, that is to say, that ye perish not utterly, yea and that bodily, which commonly hapneth, especially to the authours of sects, as it did to *Arrius* and others, and to certaine also in our time. For he that hath layed his foundation on the sand, and buildeth hay, stubble, and such like, must needs fall and be consumed: for all those things are ordained for the fire. I will not say that after such bitings and devourings, the ruine and destruction, not of cities, but of whole countreys and kingdoms are wont to follow. Now the Apostle sheweth what it is to serve one another through love.

The end of
the authors
of wicked
opinions.

How the
doctrine of
faith and of
workes is to
be taught.

It is a hard and a dangerous matter to teach that we are made righteous by faith without works, and yet to require works withall. Here, except the Ministers of Christ be faithfull and wise disposers of the Mysteries of God, rightly dividing the word of truth: faith and workes are by and by confounded. Both these doctrines, as well of faith as of workes, must be diligently taught and urged: and yet so, that both may remaine within their bounds. Otherwise if they teach workes onely (as they doe in the Popes kingdome) then is faith lost. If faith onely be taught, then carnall men by and

by

by dreame that workes bee not needfull.

The Apostle began a little before to exhort men to good workes, and to teach that the whole law was fulfilled in one word, namely: *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy selfe*, Here will some man say: *Paul* throughout his whole Epistle taketh away righteousness from the law: For saith he, *By the workes of the law shall no flesh be justified*: Also, *As many as are under the workes of the law, are under the curse*. But now when he saith that the whole law is fulfilled in one word, he seemeth to have forgotten the matter wherof he hath intreated in all this Epistle, and to be of a quite contrary opinion: to wit, that they which doe the works of charity, fulfill the law and be righteous. To this objection he answereth after this manner.

An objection.

Gal. 2. 16.

Gal. 3. 10.

Verse 16. *But I say, walke in the spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lusts of the flesh.*

As if he should have said: I have not forgotten my former discourse concerning faith, neither doe I now revoke the same in that I exhort you to mutuall love, saying: *that the whole law is fulfilled through love*, but I am still of the same mind and opinion that I was before. To the end therefore that ye may rightly understand me, I adde this moreover: *Walke in the spirit and ye shall not fulfill the lusts of the flesh.*

A confutation of the argument of the Schoolemen: Love is the fulfilling of the law: therefore the law justifieth.

Although *Paul* speaketh here expressly and plainly enough, yet hath he little prevailed: for the Schoolemen not understanding this place of *Paul*, *Love is the fulfilling of the law*, have gathered out of it after this manner: If love be the fulfilling of the law, it followeth then that love is righteousness: therefore if we love, we be righteous. These profound clarkes do argue from the word to the work, from doctrine or precepts, to life, after this sort: The law hath commanded love, therefore the work of love followeth out of hand: But this is a foolish consequence, to draw an argument from precepts, and to ground the conclusion upon workes.

Arguments from precept to workes.

True it is that wee ought to fulfill the law, and to be justified through the fulfilling thereof: but sinne hindreth us. Indeed the law prescribeth and commandeth that we should love God with

Chap.V. . Upon the EPISTLE .

An evill consequence of the Sophisters: It is written, therefore it is done,

The love of our selfe is corrupt.

Charitvean not pacific God.

Apoc. 21. 3.

Isa. 53. 9.
1 Pet. 2. 22.

* He alludeth to the place of Exodus, chap. 13. 21.

Faith adorned with charity, is the Papists righteousnesse.

all our heart, &c. and that we should love our neighbour as our selves: but it followeth not: This is written, therefore it is done: the law commandeth love, therefore we love. There is not one man to be found upon the whole earth, which so loveth God and his neighbour, as the law requireth. But in the life to come, where we shall be thoroughly cleansed from all vices and sinnes, and shall be made as pure and as cleare as the Sunne, we shall love perfectly and shall be righteous through perfect love. But in this life, that purity is hindered by the flesh: for as long as we live, sinne remaineth in our flesh by reason whereof, the corrupt love of our selves is so mighty, that it farre surmounteth the love of God and of our neighbour. In the meane time notwithstanding, that we may be righteous in this life also, we have Christ the mercy-seate and throne of grace, and because we beleve in him, sinne is not imputed unto us. Faith therefore is our righteousness in this life. But in the life to come when we shall be thoroughly cleansed and delivered from all sinnes and concupiscence, we shall have no more need of faith and hope, but we shall then love perfectly.

It is a great error therefore to attribute justification, or righteousness to love, which is nothing: or if it be any thing, yet is it not so great that it can pacific God: for love even in the faithfull (as I have said) is imperfect and impure. But no uncleane thing shall enter into the kingdome of God. Notwithstanding in the meane while this trust and confidence sustaineth us, that Christ, who alonely committed no sinne, and in whose mouth was never found any guile, doth overshadow us with his righteousness. We being covered with this cloud, and shrowded under this shadow, this heaven or remission of sins and throne of grace: doe begin to love and to fulfill the law. Yet for this fulfilling we are not justified nor accepted of God whilest we live here. But when Christ hath delivered up the kingdome to God his Father, and abolished all principality, and God shall be all in all: then shall faith and hope cease, and love shall be perfect and everlasting, 1 Cor. 13. This thing the popish Schoolemen understand not, and therefore when they heare that love is the summe of the whole law, by and by they inferre: Ergo, the law justifieth. Or contrariwise, when they reade in Paul that faith maketh a man righteous: yea, say they, faith formed and furnished with charity. But that is not the meaning of Paul, as I have largely declared before.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

To walke in
the Spirit.

endeavour your selves diligently to walke in the spirit, that is, wraſtle
in spirit against the flesh, and follow spirituall motions, &c.

It appeareth then that he had not forgotten the matter of justifi-
cation. For when he biddeth them to walke in the spirit, he plainly
denieth that works do justifie. As if he would say: When I speake
of the fulfilling of the law. I meane not that ye are justified by the
law: but this I meane, that there be two contrary captaines in you,
the spirit and the flesh. God hath stirred up in your bodies a strife
and a battell: for the spirit wraſtleth against the flesh, and the flesh
against the spirit. Here I require nothing else of you, but that ye fol-
low the spirit as your captaine and guide, and that ye resist that cap-
taine the flesh: for that is all that ye be able to doe. Obey the spirit,
and fight against the flesh. Therefore when I teach you to observe
the law, and exhort you to love one another, think not that I goe a-
bout to revoke that which I have taught concerning the doctrine of
faith, and that now I attribute justification to the law or to charity:
but my meaning is, that ye should walke in the spirit, and that ye
should not fulfill the lusts of the flesh.

Paul useth very fit words and to the purpose. As if he would say:
we come not yet to the fulfilling of the law: therefore we must walke
in the spirit and be exercised therein, that we may think, say, and doe
those things which are of the spirit, and resist those things which are
of the flesh: therefore he addeth:

Verse 16. *And ye shall not fulfill the lusts of the flesh.*

As if he would say: The desires or lusts of the flesh be not yet
dead in us, but spring up againe and fight against the spirit. The
flesh of no faithfull man is so good, which being offended would not
bite and devoure, or at the least omit somewhat of that commande-
ment of love. Yea even at the first brunt he cannot refraine him-
self, but is angry with his neighbour, desireth to be revenged, and
hateth him as an enemy, or at the least loveth him not so much as he
should do, and as this commandement requireth. And this happeneth
even to the faithfull.

Therefore the Apostle hath given this rule for the faithfull,
that they should serve one another through love, that they should
beare the burdens and infirmities one of another, and that they
should forgive one another. And without this bea-
ring and forbearing

Desires and
lusts of the
flesh even in
the godly.

ring

bearing through love, it is impossible that peace and concord should continue amongst Christians. For it cannot be but that thou must needs often offend, and be offended. Thou seest many things in me which offend thee, and I againe see many things in thee which mislike me. Here if one beare not with another through love, there shall be no end of dissention, discord, envy, hatred and malice.

Wherefore *Paul* would have us to walke in the Spirit, lest we fulfill the lusts of the flesh. As if he should say: Although ye be moved with wrath and displeasure against your brother, offending you or doing any thing hainously against you, yet notwithstanding resist and repress these violent motions through the Spirit. Beare with his weaknesse and love him according to that commandement: *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy selfe.* For thy brother doth not therefore cease to be thy neighbour, because he sippeth, or offendeth thee: but then hath he most need that thou shouldest exercise and shew thy charity towards him. And this commandement: *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy selfe,* requireth the selfe-same thing: to wit, that thou shouldest not obey the flesh: which when it is offended, hateth, biteth and devoureth. But wrastle against it in Spirit, and continue through the same in the love of thy neighbour, although thou find nothing in him worthy of love.

To walke in the Spirit,

The Schoolemen take the concupiscence of the flesh for carnall lust. Indeed it is true that even the godly, especially the younger sort, are tempted with fleshly lust. Yea, they also that be married (so corrupt and pestilent is flesh) are not without such carnall lust. Here let every one (I speake now to the godly being married, both man and wife) diligently examine himselfe, and no doubt, many shall find this in themselves, that the beauty and conditions of an other mans wife pleaseth him better then of his owne: and so contrariwise, his own lawfull wife he loatheth or misliketh, and loveth her which is unlawfull. And this commonly is wont to happen, not in marriage onely, but in all other matters. Men set light by that which they have, and are in love with that which they have not: as the Poet saith:

What the concupiscence or lust of the flesh is after *Paul*,

Nimirum in vetitum semper cupimusque negata: That is,

Of things most forbidden we alwayes are faine:

And things most denied we seeke to obtaine.

I doe not deny therefore but that the concupiscence of the flesh

comprehendeth carnall lust, but not that onely. For concupiscence comprehendeth all other corrupt affections, wherewith the very faithfull are infected, some more, some lesse: as pride, hatred, covetousnesse, impatience and such like. Yea, *Paul* rehearseth afterwards among the works of the flesh, not only these grosse vices, but also idolatry, heresies and such other. It is plaine therefore that he speaketh of the whole concupiscence of the flesh, and of the whole dominion of sin, which striveth even in the godly, who have received the first fruits of the Spirit, against the dominion of the Spirit: He speaketh therefore not only of carnall lust, pride, covetousnes, &c. but also of incredulity, distrust, despaire, hatred and conrempt of God, idolatry, heresies and such other, when he saith: *And ye shall not fulfill the lusts of the flesh.* As if he should say: I write unto you, that you should love one another. This ye do not, neither can ye do it because of the flesh, which is infected and corrupted with concupiscence, and doth not only stirre up sin in you, but also is sin it self. For if ye had perfect charity, no heaviness, no adversitie could be so great, which should be able to hurt or hinder that charitie: for it would be spread throughout the whole body. There should be no wife were she never so hard-favoured, whom her husband would not love entirely, loathing all other women, though they were never so fair and beautiful. But this is not done, therefore it is impossible for us to be made righteous through love.

Wherefore thinke me not to revoke and unsay that which I have taught concerning faith: For faith and hope must continue, that by the one we may be justified, and by the other we may be raised up in adversities, and endure to the end. Moreover, we serve one another through charity, because faith is not idle: but charity is weak and little. Therefore when I bid you walk in the Spirit, I do sufficiently declare that ye are not justified through charity.

And when I exhort you to walke in the Spirit, that ye fulfill not the concupiscence of the flesh: I doe not require of you that ye should utterly put off the flesh or kill it, but that ye should bridle and subdue it. For God will have man-kind to endure even to the last day. And this cannot be done without parents, which doe beget and bring up children. These meanes continuing, it must needs be that flesh also must continue, and consequently sinne, for flesh is not without sinne. Therefore in respect of the flesh we are sinners:

but

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

The flesh is
to be subdu-
ed and kil-
led.

Paul (as I have said) doth not require of the godly, that they should utterly put off or destroy the flesh: but that they should so bridle it, that it might be subject to the Spirit. In *Ephes. 5.* he biddeth us cherish the flesh. For as we may not be cruell to other mens bodies, nor vex them with unreasonable labour: even so we may not be cruell to our owne bodies. Wherefore according to *Pauls* precept, we must cherish our flesh, that it may be able to endure the labours both of the mind and of the body: but yet only for necessities sake, and not to nourish the lusts thereof. Therefore if the flesh begin to wax wanton, repress it and bridle it by the Spirit. If it will not be, marry a wife, for it is better to marry then to burne. Thus doing thou walkest in the Spirit: that is, thou followest Gods word and doest his will.

Verse 17. *For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh.*

Ephes. 4. 29.
The godly
feele the
concupif-
cence or
lust of the
flesh.

Psal 4. 4.

When *Paul* saith that the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh, he admonisheth us that we must feele the concupiscence of the flesh, that is to say, not only carnall lust, but also pride, wrath, heaviness, impatience, incredulity, and such like. Notwithstanding he would have us so to feele them, that we consent not unto them, nor accomplish them: that is, that we neither think, speake, nor doe those things which the flesh provoketh us unto. As, if it move us to anger, yet we should be angry in such wise (as we are taught in the fourth *Psalme*) that we sinne not. As if *Paul* would thus say: I know that the flesh will provoke you unto wrath, envy, doubting, incredulity and such like: but resist it by the Spirit, that ye sinne not. But if ye forsake the guiding of the Spirit, and follow the flesh, ye shall fulfill the lusts of the flesh and ye shall die, as *Paul* saith in *Rom. 8.* So this saying of the Apostle is to be understood, not of fleshly lust only, but of the whole kingdome of sinne.

Verse 17. *And these are contrary one to the other, so that ye cannot doe the same things that ye would.*

The two captaines or leaders (saith he) the flesh and the Spirit, are one against another in your body, so that ye cannot doe what ye would. And this place-witnesseth plainly, that *Paul* writeth these things to the faithfull, that is, to the Church beleeving in
Christ

Christ, baptized, justified, renewed, and having full forgiveness of finnes. Yet notwithstanding he saith that he hath flesh rebelling against the Spirit. After the same manner he speaketh of himselfe in *Rom. 7.* *I (saith he) am carnall and set under sinne.* And againe: *I see another law in my members, rebelling against the law of my mind, and leading me captive unto the law of sinne which is in my members.* Also: *O wretched man that I am, who shall deliuer me from the body of this death, &c.*

The faithfull have flesh which resisteth the Spirit.

Here not only the Schoolemen, but also some of the old Fathers are much troubled, seeking how they may excuse *Paul.* For it seemeth unto them absurd and unseemely to say, that the elect vessell of Christ should have sinne. But we credit *Paul's* own words, wherein he plainly confesseth that he is sold under sinne, that he is led captive of sinne, that he hath a law in his members rebelling against him, and that in the flesh he serueth the law of sinne. Here againe they answer, that the Apostle speaketh in the person of the wicked. But the wicked doe not complaine of the rebellion of their flesh, of any battell or conflict, or of the captivity and bondage of sinne: for sinne mightily reigneth in them. This is therefore the very complaint of *Paul* and of all the faithfull. Wherefore they have done very wickedly which have excused *Paul* and all the faithfull to have no sinne. For by this perswasion (which proceedeth of ignorance of the doctrine of faith) they have robbed the Church of a singular consolation: they have abolished the forgiveness of finnes, and made Christ of none effect.

The godly feele the terrours and captivity of sinne.

Wherefore when *Paul* saith: *I see another law in my members, &c.* he denieth not that he hath flesh, and the vices of the flesh in him. It is likely therefore that he felt sometimes the motions of carnall lust. But yet (no doubt) these motions were well suppressed in him by the great and grievous afflictions and temptations both of minde and body, wherewith he was in a manner continually exercised and vexed, as his Epistles doe declare: Or if he at any time being merry and strong, felt the lust of the flesh, wrath, impatience or such like: yet he resisted them by the Spirit, and suffered not those motions to beare rule in him. Therefore let us in no wise suffer such comfortable places (whereby *Paul* describeth the battell of the flesh against the Spirit in his own body) to be corrupted with such foolish glosses. The Schoolemen, the Monkes, and such other, never felt any spirituall tentations, and therefore they fought only

The tentations of Monkes.

only for the resisting and overcoming of fleshly lusts and lechery, and being proud of that victory, which they never yet obtained, they thought themselves far better and more holy then married men. I will not say, that under this holy pretence they nourished and maintained all kinds of horrible finnes, as dissention, pride, hatred, disdain and despising of their neighbours, trust in their owne righteousness, presumption, contempt of all godlinesse and of the word of God, infidelity, blasphemy and such like. Against these finnes they never fought, nay rather they took them to bee no finnes at all: They put righteousness in the keeping of their foolish and wicked vowes, and unrighteousness in the neglecting and contemning of the same.

Christ our
righteous-
nesse. 0119)
Rom. 9. 33.

But this must bee our ground and anker-hold, that Christ is our only and perfect righteousness. If we have nothing whereunto we may trust, yet these three things (as Paul saith), Faith, hope and love doe remaine. Therefore we must alwayes believe, and alwayes hope: wee must alwayes take hold of Christ as the head and fountaine of our righteousness. He that believeth in him shall not be ashamed. Moreover, wee must labour to be outwardly righteous also: that is to say, not to consent to the flesh, which alwayes entiseth us to some evil: but to resist it by the Spirit. We must not be overcome with impatience for the unthankfulness and contempt of the people, which abuseth the Christian libertie: but through the Spirit we must overcome this and all other temptations. Looke then how much we strive against the flesh by the Spirit, so much are wee outwardly righteous. Albeit this righteousness doth not commend us before God.

The out-
ward righte-
ousnesse of
the faithfull.

The godly
feeling the
corruptions
of the flesh,
must not de-
spaire.

Let no man therefore despaire if hee feele the flesh oftentimes to stirre up new battels against the Spirit, or if hee cannot by and by subdue the flesh, and make it obedient unto the Spirit. I also doe wish my selfe, to have a more yaliant and constant heart, which might be able, not onely boldly to contemne the threatnings of tyrants, the heresies, offences and tumults which Sathan and his souldiers the enemies of the Gospell stirre up; but also might by and by shake off the vexation and anguish of spirit, and briefly, might not feare the sharpnesse of death, but receive and imbrace it as a most friendly guest. But I finde another law in my members, rebelling against the law of my minde, &c. Some other doe wrastle with inferior temptations, as poverty, reproach, impatience, and such like.

Let

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Let all troubled consciences comfort themselves by this example of *Martin Luther*, and say as he said.

* *Staupitius* a godly learned man, of whom hee made mention before.

A holy desperation.

Psal 143. 2.

Psal 130. 3.

What the godly must doe, when they feele sinne.

The conflict and battell of the flesh and the spirit in the children of God.

Rom 8. 28.

sinne, for thou hast flesh: thou shalt therefore feele the battell thereof: according to that saying of *Paul*: *The flesh resisteth the Spirit.* Despaire not therefore, but resist it strongly, and fulfill not the lust thereof. Thus doing thou art not under the law.

I remember that * *Staupitius* was wont to say: I have vowed unto God above a thousand times, that I would become a better man: but I never performed that which I vowed. Hereafter I will make no such vow: for I have now learned by experience, that I am not able to performe it. Unless therefore God be favourable and mercifull unto me for Christs sake, and grant unto me a blessed and a happy heure when I shall depart out of this miserable life, I shall not be able with all my vowes and all my good deeds, to stand before him. This was not only a true, but also a godly and an holy desperation: and this must they confesse both with mouth and heart which will be saved. For the godly trust not to their own righteousness, but say with *David*, *Enter not into judgement with thy servant, for in thy sight shall none that liveth be justified.* Againe: *If thou O Lord shouldest straightly marke iniquities, O Lord who shall stand?* They looke unto Christ their reconciler, who gave his life for their finnes. Moreover, they know that the remnant of sinne which is in their flesh, is not laid to their charge, but freely pardoned. Notwithstanding in the meane while they fight in Spirit against the flesh, lest they should fulfill the lusts thereof. And although they feele the flesh to rage and rebell against the Spirit, and themselves also to fall sometimes into sinne through infirmity, yet are they not discouraged, nor thinke therefore that their state and kind of life, and the works which are done according to their calling, displease God: but they raise up themselves by faith.

The faithfull therefore receive great consolation by this doctrine of *Paul*, in that they know themselves to have part of the flesh, and part of the Spirit, but yet so notwithstanding that the Spirit ruleth, and the flesh is subdued and kept under awe, that righteousness reigneth, and sinne serveth. He that knoweth not this doctrine, and thinketh that the faithfull ought to be without all fault, and yet seeth the contrary in himselfe, must needs at the length be swallowed up by the spirit of heaviness, and fall into desperation. But who so knoweth this doctrine well and useth it rightly, to him the things that are evill, turne unto good. For when the flesh

flesh provoketh him to sinne, by occasion thereof he is stirred up and enforced to seeke forgiveness of sinnes by Christ and to embrace the righteousnesse of faith, which else he would not so greatly esteeme, nor seeke for the same with so great desire. Therefore it profiteth us very much to feele sometimes the wickednesse of our nature and corruption of our flesh, that yet by this meanes we may be waked and stirred up to faith, and to call upon Christ. And by this occasion a Christian becommeth a mighty workeman, and a wonderfull Creator, which of heaviness can make joy, of terrour comfort, of sinne righteousnesse, and of death life, when he by this meanes repressing and bridling the flesh, maketh it subject to the spirit.

A Christian
a marvellous
workeman.

Wherefore let not them which feele the lust of the flesh, despaire of their salvation. Let them feele it and all the force thereof, so that they consent not to it. Let the passions of lust, wrath and such other vices shake them, so that they do not overthrow them. Let sin assaile them, so that they do not accomplish it. Yea the more godly a man is, the more doth he feele that battell. And hereof come those lamentable complaints of the faithfull in the *Psalmes* and in the whole Scripture. Of this battell the Hermites, the Monks, and the Schoolemen, and all that seeke righteousnesse and salvation by works, know nothing at all.

But here may some man say: that it is a dangerous matter to teach that a man is not condemned, if by and by he overcome not the motions and passions of the flesh which he feeleth. For when this doctrine is taught among the common people, it maketh them careless, negligent and sloathfull. This is it which I said a little before, that if we teach faith, then carnall men neglect and reject works: If works be required, then is faith and consolation of conscience lost. Here no man can be compelled, neither can there be any certaine rule prescribed. But let every man diligently try himselfe to what passion of the flesh he is most subject, and when he findeth that, let him not be careless, nor flatter himselfe: but let him watch and wastle in spirit against it, that if he cannot altogether bridle it, yet at least he doe not fulfill the lust thereof.

This battell of the flesh against the spirit, all the children of God have had and felt: And the selfe-same doe we also feele and prove. He that searcheth his own conscience, if he be not an hypocrite, shall well perceive that to be true in himselfe which *Paul* here saith: that the flesh lusteth against the spirit. All the faithfull therefore

The children of God doe feele the rebellion of the flesh against the spirit.

therefore doe feele and confesse that their flesh resisteth against the spirit, and that these two are so contrary the one to the other in themselves, that doe what they can, they are not able to performe that which they would doe. Therefore the flesh hindreth us that we cannot keepe the commandements of God, that we cannot love our neighbours as our selves, much lesse can we love God with all our heart: Therefore it is impossible for us to become righteous by the workes of the law. Indeed there is a good will in us, and so must there be (for it is the spirit it selfe which resisteth the flesh) which would gladly doe good, fulfill the law, love God and his neighbour, and such like, but the flesh obeyeth not this good will, but resisteth it: and yet God imputeth not unto us this sin: For he is mercifull to those that beleeve, for Christs sake.

To whom God doth not impute sinne.

But it followeth not therefore that thou shouldest make a light matter of sinne, because God doth not impute it. True it is that he doth not impute it: But to whom, and for what cause? To such as repent and lay hold by faith upon Christ the mercy-seat, for whose sake, as all their sinnes are forgiven them: even so the remnants of sinne which are in them, be not imputed unto them. They make not their sinne lesse: then it is, but amplifie it and set it out as it is indeed: for they know that it cannot be put away by satisfaction, workes, or righteousnesse, but only by the death of Christ. And yet notwithstanding the greatnesse and enormity of their sin doth not cause them to despaire, but they assure themselves that the same shall not be imputed unto them, or laid unto their charge.

Rom. 14. 23.
The error of the Sophisters or Schoolemen

This I say, lest any man should thinke that after faith is received, there is little account to be made of sinne. Sinne is truly sinne whether a man commit it before he hath received the knowledge of Christ, or after. And God alwayes hateth sinne: yea all sinne is damnable as touching the fact it selfe. But in that it is not damnable to him that beleeveth, it cometh of Christ, who by his death hath taken away sinne. But to him that beleeveth not in Christ, not onely all his sinnes are damnable: but even his good workes also are sinne, according to that saying: *Whatsoever is not of faith is sinne.* Therefore the error of the Schoolemen is most pernicious, which doe distinguish sinnes according to the fact, and not according to the person. He that beleeveth hath as great sinne as the unbeliever. But to him that beleeveth, it is forgiven and not imputed,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

The true
Saints of
God,

stockes and stones (as the Monkes and Schoolemen dreame) so that they are never moved with any thing, never feele any lusts or desires of the flesh: but as *Paul* saith, their flesh lusteth against the spirit, and therefore they have sinne, and both can and doe sinne. And the two and thirtieth *Psalme* witnesseth that the faithfull doe confesse their unrighteousnesse, and pray that the wickednesse of their sinne may be forgiven, where he saith: *I will confesse against my selfe my wickednesse unto the Lord and thou forgavest the punishment of my sin. Therefore shall every one that is godly, make his prayer unto thee, &c.* Moreover the whole Church, which indeed is holy, prayeth that her finnes may be forgiven her, and it beleeveth the forgiveness of finnes. And in *Psalme 143*. *David* prayeth: *O Lord enter not into judgement with thy servant, for in thy sight shall none that liveth be justified.* And in *Psalme 130*. *If thou O Lord shouldest straitly marke iniquities, Lord who shall stand in thy presence? But with thee is mercy, &c.* Thus doe the chiefest Saints and children of God speake and pray: as *David*, *Paul*, &c. All the faithfull therefore do speake and pray the same thing, and with the same spirit. The popish Sophisters reade not the Scriptures, or if they reade them, they have a vaile before their eyes: and therefore as they cannot judge rightly of any thing, so can they not judge rightly either of sinne, or of holinesse.

Verse 18. *If ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law.*

Paul cannot forget his doctrine of faith, but still repeateth it and beateth it into their heads: yea even when he treateth of good works. Here some man may object: How can it be that we should not be under the law? and yet thou notwithstanding, O *Paul*, teacheth us that we have flesh which lusteth against the spirit, and fighteth against us, tormenteth and bringeth us into bondage. And indeed we feele sinne, and cannot be delivered from the feeling thereof, though we would never so faine. And what is this else, but to be under the law; But saith he: Let this nothing trouble you: only doe your endeavour that ye may be led by the Spirit, that is to say: shew your selves willing to follow and obey that will which resisteth the flesh, and doth not accomplish the lusts thereof, (for this is to be led and to be drawne by the Spirit:) then are ye not under the law. So *Paul* speaketh of himselfe, *Rom. 7. In*

To be led by
the Spirit.

my

my minde I serve the law of God, that is to say : In spirit I am not subject to any sinne : but yet in my flesh I serve the law of sinne. The faithfull then are not under the law, that is to say, in spirit: for the law cannot accuse them, nor pronounce sentence of death against them, although they feele sinne, and confesse themselves to be sinners: for the power and strength of the law is taken from it by Christ: *Who was made under the law, that he might redeeme them which were under the law.* Therefore the law cannot accuse that for sin in the faithfull, which is sin indeed and committed against the law.

Gal 4.4

So great then is the power and dominion of the spirit, that the law cannot accuse the godly, though they commit that which is sinne indeed. For Christ is our righteousness, whom we apprehend by faith: he is without all sin, and therefore the law cannot accuse him. As long as we cleave fast unto him, we are led by the Spirit, and are free from the law. And so the Apostle, even when he teacheth good works, forgetteth not his doctrine concerning justification: but alwayes sheweth that it is impossible for us to be justified by works. For the remnants of sin cleave fast in our flesh, and therefore so long as our flesh liveth, it ceaseth not to lust contrary to the spirit. Notwithstanding there cometh no danger unto us thereby, because we be free from the law, so that we walk in the spirit.

What it is to be led by the spirit.

And with these words: *If yee be led by the Spirit, yee are not under the law,* thou mayest greatly comfort thy selfe and others that be grievously tempted. For it often-times cometh to passe, that a man is so vehemently assailed with wrath, hatred, impatiency, carnall desire, terroir and anguish of spirit, or some other lust of the flesh, that he cannot shake them off, though he would never so faine. What should he doe in this case? Should he despaire? No, God forbid: but let him say thus with himselfe: Thy flesh fighteth and rageth against the Spirit. Let it rage as long as it listeth: onely see thou that in any case thou consent not to it, to fulfill the lusts thereof, but walke wisely and follow the leading of the Spirit. In so doing thou art free from the law. It accuseth and terrifieth thee (I grant) but altogether in vaine. In this conflict therefore of the flesh against the spirit, there is nothing better; then to have the word of God before thine eyes, and therein to seek the comfort of the Spirit.

How a troubled mind is to be comforted.

And let not him which suffereth this temptation, be dismayed, in that the devill can so aggravate sinne, that during the conflict he thinketh himselfe to be utterly overthrowne, and feeleth nothing else but the wrath of God and desperation. Here in any wise let him not follow his owne feeling and the judgement of reason, but let him take sure hold of this saying of *Paul*: *If yee be led by the Spirit, that is to wit; if ye raise up and comfort your selves through faith in Christ, yee be not under the law.* So shall he have a strong buckler wherewith he may beat backe all the fiery darts which the wicked fiend assaileth him withall. How much soever then the flesh doth boyle and rage, yet cannot her motions and rages hurt and condemne him, for as much as he, following the guiding of the Spirit, doth not consent unto the flesh, nor fulfill the lusts thereof. Therefore when the motions of the flesh doe rage, the only remedy is to take to us the sword of the Spirit: That is to say, the word of salvation, (which is, *That God would not the death of a sinner, but that he convert and live*) and to fight against them: Which if we do, let us not doubt but we shall obtain the victory, although so long as the battell endureth, we feele the pain contrary. But set the word out of sight, and there is no counsell nor helpe remaining. Of this that I say, I my selfe have good experience, I have suffered many great passions, and the same also very vehement and great. But so soon as I laid hold of any place of Scripture, and stayed my selfe upon it as upon my chiefe anker-hold, straightwayes my tentations did vanish away: which without the word it had been impossible for me to endure any little space, and much lesse to overcome them.

The summe or effect therefore of all that which *Paul* hath taught in this disputation or discourse concerning the conflict or battell between the flesh and the spirit, is this: That the Saints and the elect of God cannot performe that which the Spirit desireth. For the spirit would gladly be altogether pure, but the flesh being joyned unto the spirit will not suffer that. Notwithstanding they be saved by the remission of sins, which is in Christ Jesus. Moreover, because they walk in the Spirit, and are led by the Spirit, they be not under the law: that is to say, the law cannot accuse or terrifie them: yea, although it go about never so much so to do, yet shall it never be able to drive them to desperation.

How the
lusts of the
flesh must
be over-
come.

The great
and vhe-
ment tenta-
tions of Lu-
ther.

Not to be
under the
law.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

fulfill the workes thereof and to continue therein, and yet notwithstanding to counterfeit holiness and to bragge of the Spirit? The first he comforteth when he saith, that they be led by the Spirit and be not under the law. The other he threatneth with everlasting destruction.

Notwithstanding sometimes it happeneth, that the Saints also doe fall and performe the lusts of the flesh: As *David* fell horribly into adultery. Also he was the cause of the slaughter of many men when he caused *Uryah* to be slaine in the fore-front of the battell: and thereby also he gave occasion to the enemies to glory and triumph over the people of God, to worship their Idols, and to blaspheme the God of *Israel*. *Peter* also fell most grievously and horribly, when he denied *Christ*. But although these sinnes were great and hainous, yet were they not committed upon any contempt of God, or of a wilfull and obstinate mind, but through infirmity and weaknesse. Againe, when they were admonished, they did not obstinately continue in their sinnes, but repented. Such he willeth afterwards in the sixth Chapter to be received, instructed and restored, saying: *If a man be fallen by occasion into any sinne, yee which are spirituall restore such an one with the spirit of meeknesse, considering thy selfe least thou also be tempted.* To those therefore which sin and fall through infirmity, pardon is not denied, so that they rise again and continue not in their sin: for of all things continuance in sin is the worst. But if they repent not, but still obstinately continue in their wickednesse, and performe the desires of the flesh, it is a certaine token that there is * deceit in their spirit.

* That is a secret contempt of God, as of *David* *1pea. 1. 4* Some are exercised with greater temptations and some with lesse.

No man therefore shall be without lusts and desires so long as he liveth in the flesh, and therefore no man shall be free from temptations. Notwithstanding some are tempted one way and some another, according to the difference of the persons. One man is assailed with more vehement and grievous motions, as with bitterness and anguish of spirit, blasphemy, distrust and desperation: Another with more grosse temptations, as with fleshly lusts, wrath, envy, covetousnesse and such like. But in this case *Paul* requireth of us that we walke in the spirit and resist the flesh. But who so obeyeth the flesh, and continueth without the feare of God or remorse of conscience in accomplishing the desires and lusts thereof: let him know that he pertaineth not unto *Christ*: And although he brag

of the name of a Christian never so much, yet doth he but deceive himselfe. For they which are of Christ, doe crucifie their flesh with the affections and lusts thereof.

Who be rightly called Saints, and be so indeed.

This place, (as I have also forewarned you by the way) containeth in it a singular consolation : for it teacheth us, that the Saints and most holy men in this world live not without concupiscence and temptations of the flesh, nor yet without sins. It warneth us therefore to take heed that we doe not as some did, of whom *Gerson* writeth, which laboured to attaine to such perfection, that they might be without all feeling of temptations or sinnes : that is to say, very stocks and stones.

The like Imagination the Monkes and Schoolemen had of their Saints, as though they had been very senselesse blockes and without all affections. The virgin *Mary* felt great griefe and sorrow of spirit when she missed her sonne, *Luke 2.* *David* in the *Psalmes* complaineth that he is almost swallowed up with excessive sorrow for the greatnesse of his temptations and sinnes. *Paul* also complaineth that he hath battels without, and terrours within : and that in his flesh he serveth the law of sinne. He saith that he is carefull for all the Churches : and that God shewed great mercies towards him, in that he delivered *Epaphroditus* being at the point of death, to life againe, lest he should have had sorrow upon sorrow. Therefore the Saints of the *Papills* are like to the *Stoicks*, who imagined such wise men, as in all the world were never yet to be found. And by this foolish and devillish perswasion which proceedeth of the ignorance of this doctrine of *Paul*, the Schoolemen brought both themselves and others without number, into horrible desperation.

2 Cor. 7. 5.

2 Cor. 11. 32.

Whom the
Stoicks -
counted
wise men.

When I was a Monke I did oftentimes most heartily wish, that I might once be so happy, as to see the conversation and life of some Saint or holy man. But in the meane time I imagined such a Saint as lived in the wilderness, abstaining from meate and drinke, and living only with rootes of herbes and cold water : and this opinion of those monstrous Saints, I had learned not onely out of the bookes of the Sophisters and Schoolemen, but also out of the bookes of the Fathers. For thus writeth *Hierome* in a certaine place : As touching meates and dringes I say nothing, for

Who they
be which
Christ and
his Apostles
call Saints

Who be
true Saints.

as much as it is excessive, that even such as are weake and feeble should use cold water, or eat any sodden thing, &c. But now in the light of the Gospell we plainly see who they are whom Christ and his Apostles call Saints: Not they which live a sole and a single life, or straitly observe days, meates, apparell, and such other things, or in outward appearance, do other great & monstrous works, (as we reade of many in the lives of the Fathers:) but they which being called by the sound of the Gospell and baptized, do beleve that they be justified and cleansed by the death of Christ. So *Paul* every where writing to the Christians, calleth them holy, the children and heires of God, &c. Whosoever then do beleve in Christ, whether they be men or women, bond or free, are all Saints: not by their owne works, but by the works of God, which they receive by faith: as his Word, the Sacraments, the passion of Christ, his death, resurrection, victory, the sending of the holy Ghost. To conclude, they are Saints through such a holinesse as they freely receive, not through such a holinesse as they themselves have gotten by their own industry, good works and merits.

So the Ministers of the word, the Magistrates of common weales, parents, children, masters, servants, &c. are true Saints, if first and before all things they assure themselves that Christ is their wisdom, righteousness, sanctification and redemption: Secondly, if every one do his duty in his vocation according to the rule of Gods word, and obey not the flesh, but repress the lusts and desires thereof by the spirit. Now, whereas all be not of like strength, to resist temptations, but many infirmities and offences are seene in the most part of men: this nothing hindreth their holinesse, so that their sins proceed not of an obstinate wilfulnesse, but only of frailty and infirmity. For (as I have said before) the godly do feeble the desires and lusts of the flesh, but they resist them, to the end that they accomplish them not. Also if they at any time unadvisedly fall into sin, yet notwithstanding they obtaine forgiveness thereof, if by faith in Christ they be raised up againe: who would not that we should drive away, but seek out and bring home the straying and lost sheepe, &c. Therefore God forbid that I should straightway judge those which are weake in faith and manners, to be prophane or unholy, if I see that they love and reverence the word of God, come to the Supper of the Lord &c. For these God hath received, and counteth them righteous through the remission of sins: to him they stand or fall, &c.

The weak-
ness of faith.

Where-

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



authours and first inventours of many superstitions, errours, abhominable ceremonies and wicked worshippings. Therefore except at the houre of death they laid hold of Christ, and reposed their whole trust in his death and victory, their strait and painfull life availed them nothing at all.

A holy life

These things do sufficiently declare who be the true Saints indeed, and which is to be called a holy life: Not the life of those which lurke in caves and dens, which make their bodie leane with fasting, which weare haire, and do other like things with this perswasion and trust, that they shall have some singular reward in Heaven above all other Christians: but of those which be baptized and beleve in Christ, which put off the old man with his works, but not at once: For concupiscence and lust remaineth in them so long as they live: the feeling whereof doth hurt them nothing at all, if they suffer it not to reigne in them, but subdue it to the spirit.

This doctrine bringeth great consolation to godly minds, that when they feele these darts of the flesh, wherewith Satan assaileth the spirit, they should not despaire: as it hapneth to many in the Papacy, which thought that they ought to feele no concupiscence of the flesh, whereas notwithstanding *Hierome, Gregory, Benedict, Bernard,* and others (whom the Monks set before them, as a perfect example of chastity and of all Christian vertues) could never come so farre as to feele no concupiscence or lust of the flesh. Yea they felt it and that very strongly. Which thing they acknowledge and plainly confesse in divers places of their books.

I beleve
that there
is a holy
Church

Therefore we rightly confesse in the articles of our beleefe, that we beleve there is an holy Church. For it is invisible, dwelling in spirit in a place that none can attaine unto, and therefore her holinesse can not be seene: For God doth so hide her and cover her with infirmities, with sinnes, with errours, with divers formes of the crosse and offences, that according to the judgement of reason it is no where to be seene. They that are ignorant of this, when they see the infirmities and sinnes of those which are baptized, which have the word and beleve it: are by and by offended, and judge them not to pertaine to the Church. And in the meane while they dreame that the Heremites, the Monks and such other shavelings are the Church: which honour God with their lips, and worship him in vaine, because they follow not the word of God, but the doctrines and commandements of men,
and

and teach others to do the same. And because they do certaine superstitious and monstrous works, which carnall reason magnifieth and highly esteemeth: therefore they judge them only to be Saints and to be the Church: And in so doing they change and turne this article of the Faith cleane contrary: *I beleeve that there is a holy Church, &c.* I do not see and in the stead of this word [*I beleeve*] they put in [*I see.*] These kinds of righteousnesse and holinesse of mans own devising, are nothing else but spirituall forceries wherewith the eyes and minds of men are blinded, and led from the knowledge of true holinesse. I do not see but I beleeve. Hypocritical holinesse.

But thus teach we, that the Church hath no spot nor wrinkle, but is holy, and yet through faith only in Christ Jesus: againe, that she is holy in life and conversation by abstaining from the lusts of the flesh, and exercise of spirituall works: but yet not in such sort that she is delivered from all evill desires, or purged from all wicked opinions and errors. For the Church always confesseth her sins, and prayeth that her faults may be pardoned. Also she beleeveth the forgiveness of sins. The Saints therefore doe sin, fall, and also erre: but yet through ignorance. For they would not willingly deny Christ, forsake the Gospell, &c. therefore they have remission of sins. And if through ignorance they erre also in doctrine, yet is this pardoned: for in the end they acknowledge their error, and rest only upon the truth; and the grace of God offered in Christ, as *Hierome, Gregory, Bernard* and others did. Let Christians then endeavour to avoid the works of the flesh: but the desires or lusts of the flesh they cannot avoid. The Church is holy.

It is very profitable therefore for them to feele the uncleane lusts of the flesh, lest they should be puffed up with some vaine and wicked opinion of the righteousnesse of their owne workes, as though they were accepted before God for the same. The Monkes being puffed up with this opinion of their owne righteousnesse, thought themselves to be so holy, that they sold their righteousnesse and holinesse to others, although they were convinced by the testimonies of their owne hearts, that they were uncleane. So pernicious and pestilent a poyson it is for a man to trust in his owne righteousnesse, and to thinke himselfe to be cleane. But the godly, because they feele the uncleannesse of their own hearts, therefore they cannot trust to their own righteousnesse. This feeling so maketh them to steepe, and so humblith them, that they cannot trust to their own good workes, but are constrained to flie unto Christ

The Church prayeth that her sinnes may be forgiven.

To feele the uncleannes of the flesh is profitable.

their

Ioh. 6. 51.

their Mercy-seate and only succour: who hath not a corrupt and sinfull, but a most pure and holy flesh, which he hath given for the life of the world: in him they find a sound and perfect righteousness. Thus they continue in humility: not counterfeit and monkish, but true and unfained, because of the uncleanness which yet remaineth in their flesh: for the which if God would straitly judge them, they should be found guilty of eternall death. But because they lift not up themselves proudly against God, but with a broken and a contrite heart humbly acknowledging their sinnes, and resting wholly upon the benefit of the Mediatour Christ, they come forth into the presence of God, and pray that for his sake their sinnes may be forgiven them: God spreadeth over them an infinite heaven of grace, and doth not impute unto them their sins for Christs sake.

This I say to the end that we may take heede of the pernicious errors of the Papists touching the holiness of life, wherein our minds were so wrapped, that without great difficulty we could not winde our selves out of them. Wherefore doe you endeavour with diligence, that ye may discern and rightly judge betweene true righteousness and holiness, and that which is hypocriticall: then shall ye behold the kingdome of Christ with other eyes then carnall reason doth, that is with spirituall eyes, and certainly judge those to be true Saints indeede which are baptized and beleeve in Christ, and afterwards in the same faith whereby they are justified and their sinnes both past and present are forgiven, doe abstaine from the desires of the flesh. But from these desires they are not thoroughly cleansed: for the flesh lusteth against the spirit. Notwithstanding these unclean and rebellious lusts doe still remaine in them, to this end that they may be humbled, and being so humbled, they may feele the sweetness of the grace, and benefit of Christ. So these remnants of unclean lusts and sinnes doe nothing at all hinder, but greatly further the godly: for the more they feele their infirmities and sinnes, so much the more they flie unto Christ the throne of grace, and more heartily crave his ayde and succour: to wit, that he will cover them with his righteousness, that he will increase their faith, that he will endue them with his holy Spirit, by whose gracious leading and guiding they may overcome the lusts of the flesh, that they rule and reigne not over them, but may be subject unto them. Thus true Christians doe continually

To the godly
by those
things
which are
evill turne
unto good.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Idolatrie or
idoll service.

There was no thinking of women or of any other creature, but onely of God the creator, and of his wonderfull workes: and yet this most spirituall worke (as reason esteemeth it) is according to *Paul*, a worke of the flesh and plaine idolatrie. Wherefore all such religion whereby God is worshipped without his word and commandement is idolatrie. And the more holy and spirituall it seemeth to be in outward shew, so much the more dangerous and pernicious it is. For it turneth men away from faith in Christ, and causeth them to trust to their own strength, works and righteousnesse. And such is the religion of the Anabaptists at this day: albeit they daily more and more bewray themselves to be possessed with the devill, and to be seditious and bloody men.

Carthusians
or Charterhouse
Monks.

Therefore the fasting, the wearing of haire, holy workes, strait Rule, and whole life of the Carthusians, or Charter-house-Monks, whose order notwithstanding is of all other the straitest and sharpest, be very workes of the flesh, yea plaine idolatrie. For they imagine themselves to be Saints, and to be saved, not by Christ (whom they feare as a severe and cruell judge) but by observing of their Rules and orders. Indeed they think of God, of Christ and of heavenly things; but after their own reason, and not after the word of God: to wit, that their apparell, their manner of living, and their whole conversation is holy and pleaseth Christ: whom not only they hope to pacifie by this straitnesse of life, but also to be rewarded of him for their good deeds and righteousnes. Therefore their most spirituall thoughts (as they dreame of them) are not onely most fleshly, but also most wicked: for they would wipe away their sins, and obtaine grace and life everlasting, by the trust and affiance they have in their own righteousnesse, rejecting and despising the word, faith and Christ. All the worshippings and services of God therefore, and all religions without Christ are idolatrie and idoll-service. In Christ alone the Father is well pleased: who so heareth him and doth that which he hath commanded, the same is beloved because of the Beloved. He commandeth us to beleve his word and to be baptized, &c. and not to devise any new worshipping or service of God.

The false
and true
worshipping
of
God.

Idolatrie is
unknowne to
the world.

I have said before that the workes of the flesh be manifest: as adultery, fornication, and such like, be manifestly knowne to all men. But idolatrie hath such a goodly shew and is so spirituall, that it is knowne but to very few, that is to the faithfull, to be a worke
of

of the flesh: For the Monke when he liveth chastly, fasteth, prayeth or saith Masse, is so far from thinking himself to be an Idolater, or that he fulfilleth any work of the flesh, that he is assuredly perswaded that he is led and governed by the Spirit, that he walketh according to the Spirit, that he thinketh, speaketh and doth nothing else but meer spiritual things, and that he doth such service unto God as is most acceptable unto him. No man can at this day perswade the Papists that their Masse is a great blasphemy against God and idolatry, yea and that so horrible as never was any in the Church since the Apostles time. For they are blind and obstinate, and therefore they judge so perversly of God and of Gods matters, thinking idolatry to be the true service of God, and contrariwise faith to be idolatry. But we which believe in Christ and know his mind, are able to judge and to discern all things, and cannot truly and before God be judged of any man.

The Masse horrible idolatry and blasphemy against Christ.

Hereby it is plaine; that *Paul* calleth flesh: whatsoever is in man, comprehending all the three powers of the soul, that is, the will that lusteth, the will that is inclined to anger, and the understanding. The workes of the will that lusteth, are adultery, fornication, uncleanness and such like. The workes of the will inclined to wrath, are quarrellings, contentions, murder, and such other. The workes of understanding or reason, are errors, false religions, superstitions, idolatry, heresies: That is to say, sects and such like. It is very necessary for us to know these things: for this word [*Flesh*] is so darkned in the whole kingdome of the Pope, that they have taken the worke of the flesh, to be nothing else but the accomplishing of the fleshly lust or the act of leachery: Therefore it was not possible for them to understand *Paul*. But here we may plainly see that *Paul* reckoneth idolatry and heresie amongst the works of the flesh, which two (as before we have said) reason esteemeth to be most high and excellent vertues, wisdom, religion, holiness and righteousness. *Paul*, *Coloss.* 2. calleth it the religion of Angels. But although it seeme to be never so holy and spirituall, yet it is nothing else but a worke of the flesh, an abomination and idolatry against the Gospel, against faith, and against the true service of God. This doe the faithfull see, for they have spiritual eyes: but the Justiciaries judge the contrary: For a Monke cannot be perswaded that his vowes be workes of the flesh. So the Turke beleeve nothing lesse then that his *Alcoran*, his wa-

Flesh

The workes of the flesh, as the Papists define them.

Reason esteemeth idolatry and heresie for most excellent vertues

things

things and other ceremonies which he observeth, be workes of the flesh.

Witchcraft.

Of witchcraft I have spoken before in the 3. Chapter. This vice was very common in these our dayes before the light and truth of the Gospel was revealed. When I was a child there were many witches and forcerers which bewitched both cattel & men, but specially children, and did great harm also otherwise. But now in the light of the Gospel these things be not so commonly heard of, for the Gospel thrusteth the devill out of his seat with all his illusions. But now he bewitcheth men much more horribly, namely with spirituall forcery and witchcraft.

Witchcraft.

Idolatry.

*Iusticiaries
or iustificiers
of them-
selves.*

Paul reckoneth witchcraft among the works of the flesh, which notwithstanding, as all men know, is not a worke of fleshly lust or lechery, but a kind of idolatry. For witchcraft covenanteth with the devill: superstition or idolatry covenanteth with God, albeit not with the true God, but with a counterfeit god. Wherefore idolatry is indeed a spirituall witchcraft. For as witches do inchant cattell and men: so idolaters, that is to say, all Iusticiaries or iustificiers of themselves, go about to bewitch God, and to make him such an one as they doe imagine. Now, they imagine him to be such an one as will iustifie them, not of his meere grace and mercy, and through faith in Christ, but in respect of their wil-worshipping and workes of their own choosing; and in recompence thereof will give them righteousness and life everlasting. But whiles they goe about to bewitch God, they bewitch themselves. For if they continue in this wicked opinion which they conceive of God, they shall die in their idolatry and be damned. The workes of the flesh are well known for the most part, therefore they shall not need any further declaration.

10

Sects.

By the name of Sects *Paul* meaneth here, not those divisions or contentions which rise sometimes in the government of households or of common-weales for worldly and earthly matters; but those which rise in the Church about doctrine, faith and works. Heresies, that is to say, Sects, have alwayes been in the Church, as we have said before in divers places. Notwithstanding the Pope is an

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

The most
sober and
temperate
are many
times most
assailed with
temptations.

How the
burning
heate of
lusts may be
quenched.

ous wantonnes and lust of the flesh which followeth drunkennes and
surfeiting, or any manner of excess, but also the flesh when it is most
sober and in his best temperance, must be subdued and repressed, least it
fulfill his lusts and desires. For it oftentimes cometh to passe, that even
they which are most sober, are tempted most of all: As *Hierome* writ-
teth of himself: My face, saith he, was pale with fasting, and my mind
was inflamed with fleshly desires in my cold body, and although my
flesh was half dead already, yet the flames of unclean lust boyled with-
in me. Hereof I my self also had experience when I was a Monke. The
heat therefore of unclean lusts is not quenched by fasting only, but we
must be aided also by the Spirit, that is, by the meditation of Gods
word, faith and prayer: Indeed fasting represseth the grosse assaults of
fleshly lusts: but the desires of the flesh are overcome by no abstinence
from meats and drinks, but only by the meditation of the word of God
and invocation of Christ.

Verse 21. *And such like.*

For it is impossible to reckon up all the workes of the flesh.

Verse 21. *Whereof I tell you, as I have also told you before, that
they which doe such things, shall not inherit the kingdome of
God.*

An horrible
sentence
pronounced
by Paul,

This is a very hard and terrible saying, but yet very necessary against
false Christians and carelesse hypocrites, which bragge of the Gospel,
of faith and of the Spirit, and yet in all security they perform the works
of the flesh. But chiefly the hereticks being puffed up with opinions
of spirituall matters (as they dreame) are possessed of the devill, and
altogether carnall: therefore they performe and fulfill the desires of the
flesh, even with all the powers of the soul: Therefore most necessary it
was that so horrible and terrible a sentence should be pronounced by
the Apostle against such carelesse contemners and obstinate hypocrites
(namely that all they which do such works of the flesh as *Paul* hath
recited, shall not inherit the kingdome of God) that yet some of them
being terrified by this severe sentence, may begin to fight against
the workes of the flesh by the Spirit, that they accomplish not the
same.

Verse 22.

erse 22. But the fruites of the Spirit are love, joy peace, long-suffering, sweetnes, goodnes, faithfulness, gentlenes, or meeknes, temperance.

The Apostle saith not, the works of the Spirit, as he said the works of the flesh, but he adorneth these Christian vertues with a more honourable name, calling them the fruits of the Spirit. For they bring with them most excellent fruits and commodities: for they that have them give glory to God, and with the same do allure and provoke others to embrace the doctrine and Faith of Christ.

The fruits of the Spirit.

Love.

It had beene enough to have said [*Love*] and no more: for love extendeth it selfe unto all the fruits of the Spirit. And in the 1 Cor. 13. Paul attributeth to love all the fruits which are done in the Spirit, when he saith: *Love is patient, courteous, &c.* Notwithstanding hee would set it hereby it selfe amongst the rest of the fruits of the Spirit, and in the first place, thereby to admonish the Christians, that before all things they should love one another, giving honour one to another, every man esteeming better of another then of himselfe, and serving one another, because they have Christ and the holy Ghost dwelling in them, and because of the word, baptisine, and other gifts of God which Christians have.

ROM. 10.12.

Joy.

This is the voyce of the Bridegroom and of the Bride, that is to say, sweet cogitations of Christ, wholesome exhortations, pleasant songs or Psalmes, praises and thanksgiving, whereby the godly doe instruct, stirre up and refresh themselves. Therefore God loveth not heavines and doubtfulness of spirit: he hateth uncomfortable doctrine, heavy and sorrowfull cogitations, and loveth cheerefull hearts. For therefore hath he sent his Sonne, not to oppresse us with heavines and sorrow, but to cheare up our soules in him. For this cause the Prophets, the Apostles, and Christ himselfe doe exhort us, yea they command us to rejoyce and be glad, *Zach. 9. Rejoyce thou daughter of Sion, be joyfull thou daughter of Ierusalem, for behold thy King cometh to thee.* And in the Psalmes it is often said: *Be joyfull in the Lord.* Paul saith: *Rejoyce in the Lord alwayes, &c.* And Christ saith: *Rejoyce because your names are writ-*

The Scripture exhorteth us to rejoyce in God.

The joy of the Spirit.

ten in heauen. Where this joy of the Spirit is, there the heart inwardly rejoyceth through faith in Christ, with full assurance that he is our Saviour and our Bishop, and outwardly it expresseth this joy with words and gestures. Also the faithfull rejoyce when they see that the Gospell spreadeth abroad, that many be wone to the faith, and that the kingdom of Christ is enlarged.

Peace.

Both towards God and men, that Christians may be peaceable and quiet: not contentious, nor hating one another, but one bearing another's burden through long-suffering or perseverance: without the which peace cannot continue, and therefore *Paul* putteth it next after peace.

Long-suffering or perseverance.

Long suffering or perseverance.

Whereby a man doth not only bear adversities, injuries, reproaches, and such like, but also with patience waiteth for the amendment of those which have done him any wrong. When the devill cannot by force overcome those which are tempted, then seeketh he to overcome them by long continuance. For he knoweth that we be earthen vessels which cannot long endure and hold out many knocks and violent stroaks: therefore with long continuance of temptations he overcometh many. To vanquish these his continuall assaults we must use long-suffering, which patiently looketh, not only for the amendment of those which do us wrong, but also for the end of those temptations which the devill raiseth up against us.

Gentlenesse.

Which is when a man is gentle and tractable in his conversation and in his whole life. For such as will be true followers of the Gospell, must not be sharpe and bitter, but gentle, milde, courteous and fair spoken: which should encourage others to delight in their company: which can winke at other mens faults, or at least expound them to the best: which will be well contented to yeeld and give place to other, contented to bear with those which are froward and intractable, as the very Heathen said: Thou must know the manners of thy friend, but thou must not hate them. Such an one was our Saviour Christ, as eve-

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

Chastity.

verse *Paul* setteth against the works of the flesh. He would therefore that Christians should live soberly and chastly, that they should be no adulterers, no fornicators, no wantons: and if they cannot live chastly, he would have them to marry: also that they should not be contentious or quarrellers, that they should not be given to drunkennes or surfeiting, but that they should abstain from all these things. Chastity or continency containeth all these. *Jerome* expoundeth it of virginity only, as though they that be married could not be chaste: or as though the Apostle did write these things only to virgins. In the first and second Chapter to *Titus*, he warneth all Bishops, young women, and married folks, both man and wife, to be chaste and pure.

Verse 23. *Against such there is no law.*

The law is abolished to the believers in Christ.

Indeed there is a law, but not against such: As he saith also in another place: *The law is not given to the righteous man.* For the righteous liveth in such wise, that he hath no need of any law to admonish or to constrain him: but without constraint of the law, he willingly doth those things which the law requireth. Therefore the law cannot accuse or condemne those that beleeve in Christ. Indeed the law troubleth and terrifieth our consciences. But Christ apprehended by faith, vanquisheth it with all his terrors and threatenings. To them therefore the law is utterly abolished, and hath no power to accuse them: For they do that of their own accord, which the law requireth. They have received the holy Ghost by faith, who will not suffer them to be idle. Although the flesh resist, yet do they walk after the Spirit. So a Christian accomplisheth the law inwardly by faith (for Christ is the perfection of the law unto righteousness, to all that do beleeve) outwardly by works and by remission of sins. But those which performe the works or desires of the flesh, the law doth accuse and condemne both civilly and spiritually.

Verse 24. *For they that are Christs, have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts thereof.*

This whole place concerning workes, sheweth that the true believers are no hypocrites. Therefore let no man deceive himselfe. For whosoever (saith he) pertaine unto Christ, have crucified the flesh with all the vices and lusts thereof. For the Saints, in as much

much as they have not yet utterly put off the corrupt and sinfull flesh, are enclined to sin, and do neither feare nor love God so perfectly as they ought to do. Also they be provoked to anger, to envy, to impaciency, to uncleane lusts, and such like motions, which notwithstanding they accomplish not: for (as *Paul* here saith) they crucifie the flesh with all the affections and lusts thereof. Which thing they do, not only when they repress the wantonnesse of the flesh, with fasting and other exercises, but also (as *Paul* said before) when they walke according to the Spirit: that is, when they being admonished by the threatenings of God, wherby he sheweth that he will severely punish sin, are afraid to commit sin: Also when they being armed with the word of God, with faith, and with prayer, do not obey the lusts of the flesh.

What it is to crucifie the flesh.

When they resist the flesh after this manner, they naile it to the crosse with the lusts and desires thereof, so that although the flesh be yet alive, yet can it not performe that which it would do, for as much as it is bound both hand and foot, and fast nailed to the crosse. The faithfull then so long as they live here, do crucifie the flesh, that is to say, they feele the lusts thereof, but they obey them not. For they being furnished with the armour of God, that is, with Faith, Hope, and the sword of the Spirit, do resist the flesh, and with these spirituall nailes they fasten the same unto the crosse, so that it is constrained to be subject to the Spirit. Afterwards when they die, they put it off wholly: and when they shall rise againe from death to life, they shall have a pure and uncorrupt flesh without all affections and lusts.

The armour of God.



The Sixt Chapter.

* If we live in the Spirit, let us also walke in the Spirit.



HE Apostle reckoned before amongst the workes of the flesh heresies and envy, and pronounced sentence against those which are envious, and which are authours of Sects, that they should not inherit the kingdome of God. And now, as if he had forgotten that which he said a little before, he againe reproveth those which provoke and envy one another. Why doth he so? was it not sufficient

* After the common division, this is the five and twenty verse of the former chapter.

Vaine-glory
a detestable
vice and
most pernicious
to the
Church of
God.
Tit. 1 7.

cient to have done it once? Indeed he doth it of purpose: for he taketh occasion here to inveigh against that execrable vice of vaine-glory, which was the cause of the troubles that were in all the Churches of *Galatia*, and hath been always most pernicious and hurtfull to the whole Church of Christ. Therefore in his Epistle to *Timus* he would not that a proud man should be ordained a Bishop: For pride (as *Augustine* truly saith) is the mother of all heresies, or rather the headspring of all sinne and confusion: which thing all histories as well holy as prophane doe witnesse.

How great
a mischief
vaine-glory
is.

Now, vaine-glory or arrogancy hath alwayes beene a common poyson in the world, which the very Heathen Poets and Historiographers have alwayes vehemently reprov'd. There is no village wherein there is not some one or other to be found, that would be counted wiser, and be more esteemed then all the rest. But they are chiefly infected with this disease which stand upon their reputation for learning and wisdom. In this case no man will yeeld to another, according to this saying: *Yee shall not lightly find a man that will yeeld unto others the praise of wit and skill: For it is a goodly thing to see men point at one, and say: This is he.* But it is not so hurtfull in private persons, no nor in any kinde of Magistratè; as it is in them that have any charge in the Church. Albeit in civill government (specially if it be in great personages) it is not only a cause of troubles and ruines of common-weales, but also of the troubles and alterations of Kingdomes and Empires: Which thing the histories both of the Scripture and prophane writers doe witnesse.

Ovid.
Horat.

But when this poyson creepeth into the Church or spirituall kingdome, it cannot be expressed how hurtfull it is. For there is no contention as touching learning, wit, beauty, riches, kingdomes, Empires and such like: but as touching salvation or damnation, eternall life, or eternall death. Therefore *Paul* earnestly exhorteth the ministers of the word to flie this vice, saying: *If wee live in the Spirit, &c.* As if he should say: If it be true that we live in the Spirit, let us also proccede and walke in the Spirit. For where the Spirit is, it renueth men, and worketh in them new motions: that is to say, whereas they were before vaine-glorious, wrathfull and envious, it maketh them now humble, gentle and patient. Such men seeke not their owne glory, but the glory of God: they doe
not.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



doctrine, and boasted their own to be true and sincere. Thus they troubled the *Galatians* and raised Sects among them, so that they provoked and envied one another: which was a sure token, that neither the teachers nor hearers lived and walked after the Spirit, but followed the flesh and fulfilled the works thereof: and so consequently lost the true doctrine, faith, Christ, and all the gifts of the holy Ghost, and were now become worse then the Heathen.

Notwithstanding he doth not only inveigh against the false Apostles which in his time troubled the Churches of *Galatia*; but also he foresaw in spirit, that there should be an infinite number of such, even to the worlds end, which being infected with this pernicious vice, would thrust themselves into the Church, boasting of the Spirit and heavenly doctrine, and under this pretence should quite overthrow the true doctrine and faith. Many such have we also seen in these our dayes; who have thrust themselves into the kingdome of the spirit, that is to say into the ministry of the word, and by this hypocrisie they have purchased unto themselves fame and estimation that they were great Doctors and pillars of the Gospell, and such as lived in the Spirit, and walked according to the same. But because their glory consisted in mens mouths and not in God, therefore it could not be firme and stable, but according to *Pauls* prophesie, it turned to their own confusion, and their end was destruction. *For the wicked shall not stand in judgement, but shall be taken away like chaffe, and scattered abroad with the winde.*

The same judgement remaineth for all such as in preaching the Gospell seeke their owne profit and not the glory of Jesus Christ. For the Gospell is not delivered unto us that we should thereby seeke our own praise and glory, or that the people should honour and magnifie us which are the Ministers thereof: but to the end that the benefit and glory of Christ might be preached and published, and that the Father might be glorified in his mercy offered unto us in Christ his sonne, whom he delivered for us all, and with him, hath given us all things. Wherefore the Gospell is a doctrine wherein we ought to seeke nothing lesse then our owne glory. It setteth forth unto us heavenly and eternall things: which are not our own, which we have neither done nor deserved: but it offereth the same unto us, to us (I say) which are unworthy, and that through the meere goodnesse and grace of God. Why should we then
seeke

The end of
vaine glo-
rious tea-
chers.

Phil. 3. 19.
Psal. 14.

What we
ought to
seeke in the
Gospell.

seeke praise and glory thereby? he therefore that seeketh his owne glory in the Gospell, speaketh of himselfe: And he that speaketh of himselfe is a liar, and there is unrighteousnesse in him. Contrariwise he that seeketh the glory of him that sent him is true, and there is no unrighteousnesse in him, *Joh. 7.*

Paul therefore giveth earnest charge to all the Ministers of the word, saying: *If we live in the Spirit, let us walke in the Spirit,* that is to say: Let us abide in the doctrine of the truth which hath been taught unto us in brotherly love, and spirituall concord: let us preach Christ, and the glory of God, in simplicity of heart, and let us confesse that we have received all things of him: let us not think more of our selves then of others: let us raise up no sects. For this is not to walke rightly, but rather to range out of the way, and to set up a new and a perverse way of walking.

Hereby we may understand that God of his speciall grace maketh the teachers of the Gospell subject to the crosse and to all kinds of afflictions for the salvation of themselves and of the people: for otherwise they could by no meanes repress and beate downe this beast which is called vaine-glory. For if no persecution, no crosse or reproach followed the doctrine of the Gospell, but only praise, reputation and glory amongst men: then would all the professors thereof be infected and perish through the poison of vaine glory. *Hierome* saith that he had seene many which could suffer great inconveniences in their body and goods, but none that could despise their own praises. For it is almost impossible for a man not to be puffed up when he heareth any thing spoken in the praise of his owne vertues. *Paul* notwithstanding that he had the Spirit of Christ, saith that there was given unto him the messenger of Satan to buffet him, because he should not be exalted out of measure through the greatnesse of his revelations. Therefore *Augustine* saith very well: If a Minister of the word be praised, he is in danger. If a brother despise or dispraise him, he is also in danger. He that heareth a Preacher of the word, ought to reverence him for the words sake: but if he be proud thereof, he is in danger: Contrariwise if he be despised, he is out of danger: but so is not he which despiseth him.

Wherefore we must honour our great benefit, that is, of the preaching of the word, and receiving of the Sacraments. We must also reverence one another, according to that saying: *In giving honour*

What it is to walke in the Spirit.

Why God layeth the crosse upon the preachers of the Gospell.

20

Rom. 14. 15.

Rom. 12. 10.

When men
be praised,
the flesh
waxeth
proud.

1 Cor. 6. 8.

Who walk
in order and
who do not.

honour one to another, &c. But wheresoever this is done, by and by the flesh is tickled with vaine-glory and waxeth proud. For there is none (no not among the godly) which would not rather be praised then dispraised, except perhaps some be so well stablished in this behalfe, that he will be moved neither with praises nor reproaches: As that woman said of David, 2 Sam. 14. *My Lord the King is like an Angell of God, which will neither be moved with blessing nor cursing.* Likewise Paul saith: *By honour and dishonour, by euill report and good report, &c.* Such men as be neither puffed up with praise, nor throwne downe with dispraise, but endeavour simply to set forth the benefit and glory of Christ, and to seek the salvation of soules doe walke orderly. Contrariwise they which wax proud in hearing of their own praises, not seeking the glory of Christ but their own: also they which being moved with reproaches and slanders doe forsake the ministry of the word, walke not orderly.

1 Co. 4. 7.

Wherefore let every one see that he walke orderly, and specially: such as boast of the Spirit. If thou be praised, know that it is not thou that is praised, but Christ, to whom all praise and honour is due. For in that thou teachest the word purely, and livest godly, these are not thine owne gifts, but the gifts of God: therefore thou art not praised, but God in thee. When thou doest acknowledge this, thou wilt walke orderly, and not be puffed up with vaine-glory (for what hast thou that thou hast not received?) but wilt confesse that thou hast received the same of God, and wilt not be moved with injuries, reproaches, or persecution to forsake thy calling.

Private and
open ene-
mies of the
Gospell

God therefore of his speciall grace at this day covereth our glory with infamy, reproach, mortall hatred, cruell persecution, railing and cursing of the whole world: also with the contempt and ingratitude even of those among whom we live, as well the common sort as also the Citizens, Gentle-men and Noble-men (whose enmity, hatred and persecution against the Gospell, like as it is privy and inward, so is it more dangerous then the cruelty and outragious dealings of our open enemies) that wee should not wax proud of the gifts of God in us. This millstone must be hanged about our neck, that we be not infected with that pestilent poison of vaine-glory. Some there be of our side which love and reverence us for the the ministry of the word: but, where there is one that reverenceth us, there be on the other side an hundred that hate and

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

from me, that ye should altogether love them: that is to say, they would discredit me that they themselves might be famous. They seeke not Christs glory and your salvation, but their owne glory, my reproach, and your bondage.

Verse 26. *Let us not be desirous of vaine-glory.*

Which is to glory, not in God (as I have said) but in lyes, in the opinion, liking and estimation of the people. Here is no right foundation of true glory, but a false foundation, and therefore impossible long to stand. He that praiseth a man as he is a man, is a lyer: for there is nothing praise-worthy in him, but all things are worthy of condemnation. Therefore as touching our person, this is our glory, that all men have sinned, and are guilty of everlasting death before God. But the case is otherwise when our ministry is praised. Wherefore we must not only wish, but also to the uttermost of our power endeavour that men may magnifie it, and have it in due reverence: for this shall turne to their salvation. *Paul* warneth the *Romanes* that they offend no man: to the end, saith he, that our commodity be not evill spoken of: And in another place: that our ministry be not reprehended. Therefore when our ministry is praised, we be not praised for our own persons sake, but (as the *Psalme* saith) we are praised in God and in his holy name.

Verse 26. *Provoking one another, and envying one another.*

The effect
and fruit of
vain glory.

Here he describeth the effect and fruite of vaine-glory. He that teacheth any errour, or is an authour of any new doctrine, cannot but provoke others: and when they doe not approve and receive his doctrine, by and by he beginneth to hate them most bitterly. We see at this day with what deadly hatred the Sectaries are inflamed against us, because we will not give place to them and approve their errours. We did not first provoke them, nor spread abroad any wicked opinion in the world: but rebuking certaine abuses in the Church, and faithfully teaching the article of Justification, have walked in good order. But they forsaking this article, have taught many things contrary to the word of God. Here, because we would not loose the truth of the Gospell, we have set our selves against them, and have condemned their errours: which thing, because they could not abide, they did not only provoke us
first

The praise
of the per-
son and of
the mini-
stry.

Rom. 14. 16.

2 Cor. 6. 3.

first without cause, but also doe still most spitefully hate us, and that upon no other occasion but onely upon vain-glory : for they would gladly deface us that they alone might rule and reigne : For they imagine that it is a great glory to professe the Gospell, whereas indeed there is no greater ignominy in the sight of the world.

CHAP. VI. VER. I.

Brethren if a man be overtaken by any fault, ye which are spirituall restore such an one with the spirit of meeknesse.

HE that diligently weigheth the words of the Apostle, may plainly perceiue that he speaketh not of errours and offences against doctrine, but of far lesser sins, into the which a man falleth not wilfully and of set purpose, but of infirmity. And hereof it cometh that he useth so gentle and fatherly words, not calling it error or sinne, but a fault. Againe to the intent to diminish, and as it were to excuse the sinne, and to remove the whole fault from man, he addeth : *If any man be overtaken*, that is to say, be beguiled of the devill or of the flesh. Yea, and this terme or name of *Man* helpeth something also to diminish and qualifie the matter. As if he should say : What is so proper unto man as to fall, to be deceived and to erre ? So saith *Moses* in *Leuiticus*. *They are wont to sinne like men*. Wherefore this is a sentence full of heavenly comfort : Which once in a terrible conflict delivered me from death. For as much then as the Saints in this life doe not only live in the flesh, but now and then also through the enticement of the devill, fulfill the lusts of the flesh, that is to say, fall into impatience, envy, wrath, error, doubting, distrust and such like : for Satan alwayes assaileth both, that is, as well the purity of doctrine, which he laboureth to take away by sects and dissensions, as also the soundnes of life, which he corrupteth with daily offences. Therefore *Paul* teacheth how such men that are fallen should be dealt withall, namely that they which are strong, should raise up and restore them again with the spirit of meeknes.

What offences are to be forgiven.

Leuit. 6. 31

Satan lieth in wait both against purity of doctrine and life.

These things it behooveth them specially to know which are in the ministry of the word, least whilst they goe about to touch all things to the quicke, they forget the fatherly and motherly affection which *Paul* here requireth of those that have charge of soules. And of this precept he hath set forth an example, 2 *Cor.* 2.

How Pastors ought to deale with them that are fallen.

Where.

where he saith that it was sufficient that he which was excommunicate was rebuked of many, and that they ought now to forgive him and comfort him, lest he should be swallowed up with over much sorrow. Wherefore I beseech you (saith he) use charity towards him. Therefore the Pastors and Ministers must indeed sharply rebuke those which are fallen, but when they see that they are sorrowfull for their offences, then let them begin to raise them up again, to comfort them, and to diminish and qualifie their faults as much as they can, but yet through mercy only, which they must set against sin, lest they that be fallen be swallowed up with over much heavines. As the holy Ghost is precise in maintaining and defending the doctrine of faith, so is he milde and pitiful in forbearing and qualifying mens sins, if they which have committed them be sorrowfull for the same.

The Pope & his Bishops are tormentors of mens consciences

Sayings of Pope Gregory.

2 Theff. 3. 3. By what meanes the Pope establisheth his tyranny and power.

But as for the Popes Synagogue, like as in all other matters it hath both taught and done cleane contrary to the commandement and example of *Paul*, even so hath it done in this thing also. The Pope with all his Bishops have been very tyrants and butchers of mens consciences. For they have burdened them from time to time with new traditions, and for every light matter have vexed them with their excommunications: and that they might the more easily obey their vaine terrours, they annexed thereunto these sentences of Pope *Gregory*: It is the part and property of good minds to be afraid of a fault where no fault is. And again: our censures must be feared, yea though they be unjust and wrongfull. By these sayings (which were brought into the Church by the devill) they stablished their excommunication and this majesty of the Papacy which is so terrible to the whole world. There is no need of such humility and goodnesse of minds, to be afraid of a fault where none is. O thou *Romish* Satan, who gave thee this power to terrifie and condemn mens consciences that were terrified enough before with thy unjust and wrongfull sentences? Thou oughtest rather to have raised them up, to have delivered them from false feares, and to have brought them from lyes and errours to the truth. This thou omittest, and according to thy title and name, to wit, the man of sin and child of perdition, thou imaginest a fault where no fault is. This is indeed the craft and deceit of Antichrist, wherby he hath most mightily established his excommunication and tyranny. - For whosoever despised his unjust sentences, was counted very obstinate and wicked: As some Princes did, howbeit against their consciences: for

in

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



Ex libro de
vni parum.

again them which are fallen. There is no sin (saith *Augustine*) which any man hath done, but another man may do the same. We stand on a slippery ground : therefore if we waxe proud and leave off our dutie, there is nothing so easie unto us as to fall. It was well said therefore of one in the book called, *The lives of the Fathers*, when it was told him that one of his brethren was fallen into whoredom : he fell yesterday (saith he) and I may fall to day. *Paul* therefore addeth this earnest admonition that the Pastors should not be rigorous and unmercifull towards the offenders, or measure their own holines by other mens sins : but that they should bear a motherly affection towards them, and think thus with themselves : This man is fallen : it may be that I also shall fall more dangerously and more shamefully then he did. And if they which be so ready to judge and condemn other, would well consider their own sins, they shall find the sins of others which are fallen to be but motes, and their own sins to be great beams.

Mat. 7. 3.

1 Cor. 10. 12.

Let him therefore that standeth take heed lest he fall. If *David* which was so holy a man, full of faith and the Spirit of God, which had such notable promises of God, which also did so many and great things for the Lord, did fall so grievously, and being now stricken in yeares was overthrown with youthfull lust after so many and divers temptations wherewith God had exercised him : why should we presume of our own constancy ? And God by such examples doth shew unto us, first our own weaknes, that we should not waxe proud, but stand in feare : Then he sheweth unto us his judgment, that he can beare nothing lesse then pride, either against himself or against our brethren. *Paul* therefore saith not without cause : *Considering thy selfe, least thou also be tempted.* They that be exercised with temptations doe know how necessary this commandement is. On the other side, they which be not tryed therewith, do not understand *Paul*, and therefore are not touched with any pity towards them that are fallen : as was to be seene in Popery, where nothing else reigned but tyranny and cruelty.

Verse 2. *Beare yee one anothers burden, and so fullfill the law of Christ.*

This is a gentle commandement : to the which hee joyneth a great commendation. The law of Christ is the law of love. Christ after he had redeemed us, renewed us, and made us his Church, gave

As no other law, but the law of mutuall love, *Joh. 13.* A new commandment give I unto you, that ye love together, &c. And to love, is not (as the Popish Sophisters dreame) to wish well one to another: but one to beare anothers burden, that is, to beare those things which be grievous unto thee, and which thou wouldest not willingly beare. Therefore Christians must have strong shoulders and mighty bones, that they may beare flesh, that is, the weaknesse of their brethren: for *Paul* saith that they have burdens and troubles. Love therefore is mild, courteous, patient, not in receiving but in giving. For it is constrained to winke at many things and to beare them. Faithfull teachers doe see in the Church many errors and offences which they are compelled to beare. In the common-weale, Subjects are never so obedient to the laws of the Magistrates as they should be: Therefore unless the Magistrate can winke and dissemble in time and place, he shall never be meet to rule the common-wealth. In household affaires there be many things done, which displease the master of the house. But if we can beare and winke at our owne vices and offences which wee daily commit: let us also beare other mens faults, according to this saying: *Bear ye one anothers burden, &c.* Again: *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy selfe.* *Love, 1 Cor. 13.*

Seeing then there be vices in every state of life and in all men, therefore *Paul* setteth forth the law of Christ unto the faithfull, whereby he exhorteth them to beare one anothers burden. They which doe not so, do plainly witness that they understand not one jot of the law of Christ, which is the law of love: (which as *Paul* saith, *1 Cor. 13.*) beleeveth all things, hopeth all things, and beareth all the burdens of the brethren: yet alwayes holding notwithstanding the first commandment, wherein they that offend, doe not transgresse the law of Christ, that is to say, the law of charity, they doe not hurt nor offend their neighbour, but Christ and his kingdome which he hath purchased with his owne blood. This kingdome is not maintained by the law of charity, but by the word of God, by faith and by the holy Ghost. This commandment then of bearing one anothers burden, belongeth not to them which deny Christ, and not onely doe not acknowledge their sinne, but also defend it: neither doth it belong unto those which continue still in their sinnes (who also doe partly deny Christ) but such must be forsaken least we become partakers of their evil workes. *Rom. 13. 9.*

Whose burdens are to be borne.

1 Tim. 5. 22.

the contrary, they which willingly hear the word of God and believe, and yet notwithstanding against their will do fall into sin, and after they be admonished, do not only receive such admonition gladly; but also they detest their sin, and indeavour to amend: I say are they which be overtaken with sin, and have the burdens that *Paul* commandeth us to bear. In this case let us not be rigorous and mercilesse: but after the example of Christ, who beareth and forbeareth such, let us bear and forbear them also: for if he punish not such (which thing notwithstanding he might justly do) much lesse ought we so to do.

Verse 3. *For if any man thinke himself to be somewhat; when indeed he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.*

The authors of sects painted out in their right colours.

Here againe he reprehendeth the authours of sects, and painteth them out in their right colours: to wit, that they be hard-hearted, mercilesse and without compassion; such as despise the weak, and will not vouchsafe to beare their burdens, but require all things straitly and precisely (like wayward husbands and severe Schoole-masters) whom nothing can please, but what they themselves doe: who also will be alwayes thy bitter enemies, unlesse thou commend whatsoever they say or doe, and in all things frame thy selfe according to their appetite. Of all men therefore they are the proudest, and dare take upon them all things. And this is that *Paul* saith here: they thinke themselves to be somewhat, that is to say, that they have the holy Ghost, that they understand all the mysteries of the Scriptures, that they cannot erre, &c.

Mat. 18. 24.
28.

Wherefore *Paul* addeth very well, that they are nothing: but that they deceive themselves with the foolish persuasions of their owne wisdom and holinesse. They understand nothing therefore either of Christ or of the law of Christ: For if they did, they would say: Brother, thou art infected with such a vice, and I am infected with another; God hath forgiven me ten thousand talents, and I will forgive thee an hundred pence. But when they will require all things so exactly and with such perfection, and will in no wise beare the burdens of the weake, they offend many with this their sharpnesse and severity, who begin to despise, hate and shun them, and seek not comfort or counsell at their hands, nor regard what or how they teach: Whereas contrariwise Pastors ought so to behave themselves towards those over whom they have taken charge, that they might love and reverence them, not
for

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

ricus linked
together.

are marvellous witty, and wily in finding fault with other mens doings and sayings, thereby to purchase the love, the well liking and praise of the people. And thirdly when they have once gotten a name (though it be by other mens travell) they become so stout and full of stomacke that they dare venture upon all things. Therefore they are pernicious and pestilent fellowes, whom I hate even with my very heart: for they seeke their own, and not that which is of Jesus Christ, &c.

Phi. 2.21.

The people
delighted
with novel-
ties.

Against such *Paul* speaketh here. As if he should say: Such vaine-glorious spirits do their worke, that is to say, they teach the Gospell to this end that they may win praise and estimation among men, that is, that they may be counted excellent Doctors, with whom *Paul* and others might not be compared. And when they have gotten this estimation, then begin they to reprehend the sayings and doings of other men, and highly commend their owne: and by this subtilty they bewitch the minds of the people, who because they have itching eares are not only delighted with new opinions, but also rejoyce to see those teachers which they had afore, to be abased and defaced by these new upstarts and glorious heads, and all because they are come to a fulnesse and loathing of the word.

He shall lack
no praise
that prea-
cheth the
Gospell
purely.
The end of
the Ministe-
ry of the
word.

Thus it ought not to be (saith he) but let every man be faithfull in his office: let him not seeke his owne glory, nor depend upon the praise and commendation of the people, but let his only care be to doe his worke truly, that is, let him teach the Gospell purely. And if his worke be sincere and sound, let him assure himselfe that he shall lacke no praise either before God or among the godly. In the meane space, if he be not commended of the unthankfull world, let this nothing move him: For he knoweth that the end of his ministry is, not that he, but that Christ should be glorified therby. Wherefore being furnished with the armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left, let him say: I began not to teach the Gospell to the end that the world should magnifie me, and therefore I will not shrinke from that which I have begun, if the world hate, slander or persecute me. He that is such an one, teacheth the word and attendeth upon his office faithfully, without any worldly respect, that is, without regard of glory or gain, without the strength, wisdom or authority of any man. He leaeneth not to the praise of other men, for he hath it in himselfe.

Where

Wherefore he that truly and faithfully executeth his office, careth not what the world speaks of him: he careth not whether the world praise or dispraise him, but he hath praise in himselfe, which is the testimony of his conscience, and praise or glory in God. He may therefore say with *Paul*: This is our rejoycing, this is our praise and glory, even the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and sincerity before God, and not in fleshly wisdom, but in the grace of God we have had our conversation in the world. This glory is uncorrupt and stedfast: for it dependeth not on other mens judgements, but of our own conscience, which beareth us witness that we have taught the word purely, ministred the Sacraments rightly, and have done all things well, and therefore it cannot be defaced or taken from us.

To have
praise in
himselfe.

The other glory which these proud spirits doe seeke, is uncertaine and most perillous, for that they have it not in themselves; but it consisteth in the mouth and opinion of the people: Therefore can they not have the testimony of their owne conscience, that they have done all things with simplicity and sincerity for the advancing of the glory of God onely, and the salvation of soules. For this is it which they seek, that they may be counted famous through the work and labour of their preaching, and be praised of men. They have therefore a glory, a trust and a testimony, but before men, not in themselves nor before God. The godly doe not desire glory after this manner, If *Paul* had had this praise before men, and not in himselfe, he should have been compelled to despaire, when he saw many cities, countries, and all *Asia* fall from him: when he saw so many offences or slanders, and so many heresies to follow his preaching. Christ when he was alone, that is, when he was not only sought for by the Jews to be put to death, but also was forsaken of his disciples, was not yet alone, but the Father was with him, for he had glory and rejoycing in himselfe.

What is the
glory of he:
recks.

The glory of
the godly

Ioh. 16. 32.

So at this day if our trust, our glory and rejoycing did depend upon the judgement and favour of men, we should die with very anguish and sorrow of heart. For so farre off is it that the Papists, Sectaries and the whole world doe judge us worthy of any reverence or praise, that they hate and persecute us most bitterly: yea, they would gladly overthrow our ministry, and roote out our doctrine for ever. We have therefore nothing before men but re-
preach: but we rejoyce and we glory in the Lord, and therefore we

Phil. 4 4.
The world
dishonour-
eth the
godly Mi-
nisters of the
Word.

attend upon our office cheerefully and faithfully, which we know is acceptable to him. Thus doing we care not whether our work doe please or displease the devill: whether the world love us or hate us. For we knowing our work to be well done, and having a good conscience before God, goe forward by honour and dishonour, by evill report and good report, &c. This saith *Paul*, is to have rejoycing or glory in thy selfe.

2 Cor. 5. 8.

The Gospell
is the word
of the crosse
and offence,
1 Cor. 1. 18.

The disci-
ples of the
Gospell,

What it is
for a man to
prove his
own work.

And this admonition is very necessary against that execrable vice of vaine-glory. The Gospell is a doctrine which both of it selfe, and also by the malice of the devill bringeth with it the crosse and persecution. Therefore *Paul* is wont to call it the word of the crosse and of offence. It hath not alwayes stedfast and constant disciples. Many there be that to day make profession thereof and embrace it, which to morrow being offended with the crosse, will fall from it and deny it. They therefore that teach the Gospell to the end that they may obtaine the favour and praise of men, must needs perish, and their glory be turned unto shame, when the people cease to reverence and magnifie them. Wherefore let all Pastors and Ministers of the word learne to have glory and rejoycing in themselves, and not in the mouth of other men. If there be any that praise them, as the godly are wont to doe, (*By evill report and good report, saith Paul*) yet let them receive this glory but as a shadow of true glory: and let them thinke the substance of glory to be indeed the testimony of their own conscience. He that doth so, proveth his own work, that is, he regardeth not his own glory, but his only care is to doe his office faithfully, that is to say, to teach the Gospell purely, and to shew the true use of the Sacraments. When he thus proveth his own work, he hath glory and rejoycing in himselfe, which no man can take from him: for he hath it surely planted and grounded in his own heart, and not in other mens mouthes: whom Satan can very easily turne away and can make that mouth and tongue now full of cursing, which a little before was full of blessing.

Therefore (*saith Paul*) if ye be desirous of glory, seek it where it should be sought, not in the mouth of other men, but in your own heart: which ye then doe when ye execute your office truely and faithfully. So shall it come to passe that besides the glory which ye have in your selves, ye shall have praise and commendation also before men. But if ye glory in other men, and not in your selves, that

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies



will utter their false accusations and slanders, so will he reveale the righteousnesse of the godly like the noone-day, as it is said, *Psal. 37.*

This clause: *in himselfe,* (to touch this also by the way) must so be understood that God be not excluded: that is, that every man may know, in what godly state of life soever he be, that his worke is a divine worke: for it is the worke of his vocation having the commandment of God.

Verse 5. *For every man shall beare his owne burden.*

In death and
in the day of
judgement
other mens
praises pro-
fit not.

Rom. 2. 15.

This is as it were the reason or confirmation of the former sentence, lest any man should leane to other mens judgement in praising and commending of him. As if he said: It is extreme madnesse for thee to seeke glory in another and not in thy selfe: for in the agony of death and the last judgement it shall not profit thee that other men have praised thee: for other men shall not beare thy burden, but thou shalt stand before the judgement seate of Christ, and shalt beare thy burden alone. There thy praisers shall nothing helpe thee. For when we die these praises shall cease. And in that day when the Lord shall judge the secrets of all hearts, the witness of thine own conscience shall stand either with thee or against thee: Against thee if thou glory in other men: with thee if thou have it in thy selfe, that is to say; if thy conscience beare thee witness that thou hast done thy duty in the ministry of the word or otherwise according to thy calling sincerely and faithfully, having respect to the glory of God only and the salvation of soules. And these words, *Every man shall beare his owne judgement,* are very vehement, and ought so to terrifie us that we should not be desirous of vaine-glory.

A compari-
son between
good works
and hypo-
critical
works.

And this moreover is to be noted, that we are not here in the matter of justification, where nothing availeth but meere grace and forgivenesse of sinnes, which is received by faith alone: where all our workes also, yea even our best workes, and such as are done according to Gods calling, have need of forgivenesse of sinnes. But this is another case. He treateth not here of the remission of sinnes, but compareth true workes and hypocriticall workes together. These things therefore ought thus to be taken, that although the work or ministry of a godly Pastor is not so perfect but that he hath neede of forgivenesse of sinnes, yet in it selfe it is good and perfect,

in comparison of the ministry of the vaine-glorious man. So our ministry is good and sound, because we seeke thereby the glory of God and the salvation of soules. But the ministry of the fantastick heads is not so, for they seeke their own praise. Albeit therefore that no works can quiet the conscience before God: yet is it necessary that we should perswade our selves that we have done our work uprightly, truly, and according to Gods calling, that is, that we have not corrupted the word of God, but have taught it purely and faithfully. This testimony of conscience we have need of: that we have done our duty uprightly in our function and calling, and led our life accordingly. So f^r ought we then to glory as touching our works, as we know them to be commanded of God, and that they please him. For every one in the last judgement shall beare his own burden, and therefore other mens praises shall there nothing help or profit him.

Hitherto he hath spoken against that most pestilent vice of vaine-glory, for the suppressing whereof no man is so strong, but that he hath need of continuall prayer. For what man almost even among the godly is not delighted with his own praises? Only the holy Ghost can preserve us that we be not infected with this vice.

Vain glory.

Verse 6. Let him that is taught in the Word, make him that teacheth him partaker of all his goods.

Here he preacheth to the disciples or hearers of the word, commanding them to bestow all good things upon those which have taught and instructed them in the word. I have sometimes marvelled why the Apostles commanded the Churches so diligently to nourish their teachers. For in Popery I saw that all men gave abundantly to the building and maintaining of goodly temples, to the increasing of the revenues and livings of those which were appointed to their idolatrous service. Hereof it came that the estimation and riches of the Bishops and the rest of the Clergy did so increase, that every where they had in possession the best and most fruitfull grounds. Therefore thought I that *Paul* had commanded this in vaine, seeing that all manner of good things were not only abundantly given to the Clergy, but also they overflowed in wealth and riches. Wherefore I thought that men ought rather to be exhorted to withhold their hands from giving, then encouraged to give any more: for I saw that

A commandment for the nourishing of the Ministers of the word of God.

that by this excessive liberality of men, the covetousness of the clergy did increase. But now I know the cause why they had such abundance of all good things heretofore, and now the Pastours and Ministers of the word doe want.

The mini-
sters of Satan
have plenty,
but the Mi-
nisters of
Christ doe
want.

Before time, when nothing else was taught but errors and wicked doctrine, they had such plenty of all things, that of *Peters* patrimony (which denied that he had either silver or gold,) and of spirituall goods (as they called them) the Pope was become an Emperour, the Cardinals and Bishops were made Kings and Princes of the world. But now since the Gospell hath been preached and published, the professors thereof be as rich as sometime Christ and his Apostles were. We find then by experience, how well this commandement of nourishing and maintaining the Pastours and Ministers of Gods word is observed, which *Paul* here and in other places so diligently repeateth and beateth into the heads of his hearers. There is now no city which is known to us, that nourisheth and maintaineth her Pastours and Preachers: but they are all entertained with those goods which were given, not unto Christ, to whom no man giveth any thing, (for when he was borne he was laid in a manger instead of a bed, because there was no room for him in the Inne: afterwards being conversant among men, he had not whereon to lay his head: and briefly being spoiled of his garments and hanging naked upon the crosse between two theeves, he died most miserably :) but to the Pope for the maintenance of his abominations, and because he oppressing the Gospell, taught the doctrines and traditions of men, and set up Idolatry.

Luk. 2.7.

Mat. 8.10.
Mat. 27.38.

2 Cor. 8. & 9.

And as oft as I reade the exhortation of *Paul*, whereby he perswadeth the Churches that they should either nourish their Pastours, or give somewhat to the reliefe of the poore Saints in Jewry, I doe greatly marvell and am ashamed that so great an Apostle should be constrained to use so many words for the obtaining of this benefit of the Congregations. Writing to the *Corinthians* he treateth of this matter in two whole Chapters. I would be loath to defame *Wittenburge*, which indeed is nothing to *Corinth*, as he defamed the *Corinthians* in begging so carefully for the relief and succour of the poore. But this is the lot of the Gospell when it is preached, that not only no man is willing to give any thing for the finding of Ministers and maintaining of Schollers,

but

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

2 Cor. 9. 12.

The world lodeth the ministers of Satan with all worldly good things.

It is not without cause therefore that *Paul* warneth the hearers of the Gospell to make their pastours and teachers partakers with them in all good things. *If we* (saith he to the *Corinthians*) *have sowne to you spirituall things, is it a great matter if wee reape your worldly things?* The hearers therefore ought to minister carnall things to them of whom they have received spirituall things. But both husbandmen, citizens and gentlemen doe at this day abuse our doctrine, that under the colour thereof they may enrich themselves. Heretofore when the Pope reigned there was no man which paid not somewhat yeerly to the Priests for Masses, dirges, trentals and such trash. The begging Friers had also their part. The merchandises of *Rome* likewise and daily offerings carried away somewhat. From these and from an infinite number of such exactions our countrey men are now delivered by the Gospell. But so farre off is it that they are thankful unto God for this liberty, that of prodigall givers they are now become starke thieves and robbers, and will not bestow one farthing on the Gospell or the Ministers thereof, nor give any thing for the reliefe and succour of the poore Saints: which is a certaine token that they have lost both the word and faith, and that they have no spirituall goodnesse in them. For it is impossible that such as are godly indeed, should suffer their Pastours to live in necessity and penury. But forasmuch as they laugh and rejoyce when their Pastours suffer any adversity, and withhold their living, or give it not with such faithfulness as they ought: it is a plaine token that they are worse then the Heathen.

The punishment of unthankfulness.

But they shall feele ere it be long what calamities will follow this unthankfulness. For they shall lose both temporall and spirituall things. For this sinne must needs be grievously punished. And certainly I think that the Churches in *Galatia*, *Corinth*, and other places were so troubled by the false Apostles for no other cause, but for that they little regarded their true Pastours and preachers. For it is good reason that he which refuseth to give a penny to God who offereth unto him all good things and life everlasting, should give a peece of gold to the devill, the authour of all evils and death everlasting. Who so will not serve God in a little, and that to his own inestimable benefit, let him serve the devill in much to his extreme and utter confusion. Now therefore since the light of the Gospell beginneth to shine, we see what the devill is, and what the world is.

In that he saith: *In all his goods*, it is not so to be taken that all men are bound to give all that they have to their Ministers; but that they should maintain them liberally, and give them that whereby they may be well able to live. In all good things.

Verse 7. *Be not deceived, for God is not mocked.*

The Apostle prosecuteth this place of the nourishing and maintaining of Ministers so earnestly, that to his former reprehension and exhortation he addeth now also a threatning, saying: *God is not mocked.* And here he toucheth to the quicke the perverseness of our Country-men, which proudly despise our Ministry. For they think it to be but a sport and a game: and therefore they goe about (especially the Gentlemen) to make their Pastors subject unto them like servants and slaves. And if we had not so godly a Prince, and one that loveth the truth, they had ere this time driven us out of the country. When the Pastors aske their duty or complaine that they suffer penury, they cry out: the Priests be covetous, they would have plenty, no man is able to satisfie their unsatiabie covetousnesse; if they were true Gospellers they should have nothing of their owne, but as poor men ought to follow poor Christ, and so suffer all adversities, &c.

Gentlemen, citizens and husband-men despisers of Gods Ministers.

Paul horribly threatneth here such tyrants and such mockers of God, who so carelessly and proudly do scorne the miserable Preachers, and yet will seeme to be Gospellers, and not to be mockers of God, but to worship him very devoutly. *Be not deceived* (saith he) *God is not mocked*, that is to say, he doth not suffer himselfe to be mocked in his Ministers. For he saith: *He that despiseth you, despiseth me.* Also he saith unto *Samuel*, *They have not cast thee away, but me.* Therefore, O ye mockers, although God deferre his punishment for a season, yet when he seeth time he will find you out, and wil punish this contempt of his word and bitter hatred which yee beare against his Ministers. Therefore ye deceive not God but your selves, and ye shall not laugh at God, but he will laugh at you, *Psal. 2.* But our proud Gentlemen, Citizens and common-people are nothing at all moved with these dreadfull threatnings. Nevertheless they shall feel when death approacheth, whether they have mocked themselves or us; nay rather not us, but God himselfe, as *Paul* saith here. In the meane time be-
cause

Luke 10.16.

1 Sam 8.7.

Because they proudly despise our admonitions with an intollerable pride, we speake these things to our comfort, to the end we may know that it is better to suffer wrong then to doe wrong : for patience is ever innocent and harmelesse. Moreover, God will not suffer his ministers to starve for hunger, but even when the rich men suffer scarcity and hunger, he will feed them, and in the day of famine they shall have enough.

*Psal. 34. 10.
Psal. 37. 19.*

Verse 7. *For whatsoever a man soweth that shall he reape.*

Reverence
and necessary
living due
to the mini-
sters of the
word.

*1 Cor. 9. 13.
14.*

All these things tend to this purpose, that Ministers should be nourished and maintained. For my part I do not gladly interpret such sentences : for they seem to commend us, and so they do indeed. Moreover, if a man stand much in repeating such things to his hearers, it hath some shew of covetousnes. Notwithstanding men must be admonished hereof, that they may know that they ought to yeeld unto their Pastors, both reverence and a necessary living. Our Saviour Christ teacheth the same thing in the 10. of *Luke* : *Eating and drinking such things as they have : for the labourer is worthy of his reward.* And Paul saith in another place : *Do ye not know that they which sacrifice in the Temple, live of the sacrifices ? and that they which serve at the altar, are partakers of the altar ? Even so hath the Lord ordained that they which preach the Gospell, should live of the Gospell.*

Exod. 13. 22.

It is good that we also which are in the ministry, should know these things, lest for our labour we might with evill conscience receive the stipend which is given unto us of the Popes goods. And although such goods were heaped together by meere fraud and deceit, yet notwithstanding God spoyling the *Egyptians*, that is to say, the Papists of their goods, turneth them here amongst us, to a good and holy use : not when noble men and gentle men spoyl them and abuse them, but when they which set forth Gods glory, and bring up youth virtuously, are maintained therewith. Let us know then that we may with good conscience (since God hath ordained and commanded that they which preach the Gospell should live of the Gospell) use those things that are given us of the Church goods, for the necessary sustentation of our life, to the end we may attend upon our office the better. Let no man therefore make any scruple hereof, as though it were not lawfull for him to use such goods.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

godly Ministers, and on the other side it neglecteth and despiseth them, and suffereth them to live in great penury. Let us arme our selves against these and such like errors, and let us learn to know the true meaning of the Scriptures. For *Paul* speaketh not here of matrimony, but of nourishing the Ministers of the Church, which every man that is endued but with the common judgement of reason may perceive. And although this nourishment is but a corporall thing, yet notwithstanding he calleth it a sowing in the spirit. Contrariwise, when men greedily scrape together what they can, and seek only their own gain, he calleth it a sowing in the flesh. He pronounceth those which sow in the spirit to be blessed, both in this life and in the life to come: and the other which sow in the flesh to be accursed, both in this life and in the life to come.

Verse 9. And let us not be weary of doing good, for in due time we shall reape without wearinesse.

We must do good without wearinesse.

The Apostle intending to close up his Epistle, passeth from the particular to the generall, and exhorteth generally to all good works. As if he should say: let us be liberall and bountifull, not only towards the Ministers of the word, but also towards all other men, and that without wearines. For it is an easie matter for a man to do good once or twice: but to continue, and not to be discouraged through the ingratitude and perversnesse of those to whom he hath done good, that is very hard. Therefore he doth not only exhort us to do good, but also not to be weary in doing good. And to perswade us the more easily therunto, he addeth, *For in due time we shall reape without wearines.* As if he said: wait and look for the perpetuall harvest that is to come, and then shall no ingratitude or perverse dealing of men be able to pluck you away from well-doing: For in the harvest-time yee shall receive most plentifull increase and fruit of the seed: Thus with most sweet words he exhorteth the faithfull to be doing of good works.

Verse 10. Therefore while we have time, let us do good unto all men, but specially to those that be of the household of faith.

This is the knitting up of his exhortation for the liberall maintaining and nourishing of the Ministers of the word, and giving
of

of almes to all such as have need. As if he had said, let us do good while it is day, for when night cometh we can no longer work. Indeed men worke many things when the light of the truth is taken away, but all in vain: for they walk in darknes and wot not whither they goe, and therefore all their life, works, sufferings and death are in vain. And by these words he toucheth the *Galathians*. As if he should say, Except ye continue in the sound doctrine which yee have received of me, your working of much good, your suffering of many troubles, and such other things profit you nothing: as he said before in the third Chapter: *Have ye suffered so many things in vain?* And by a new kind of speech he termeth those the household of faith which are joynd with us in the fellowship of faith, among whom the Ministers of the word are the chiefest, and then all the rest of the faithfull.

Job 9. 40

Job. 12. 35.

The household of faith.

Verse 11. *Behold what a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand.*

He closeth up his Epistle with an exhortation to the faithfull, and with a sharp rebuke or invective against the false Apostles. *Behold* (saith he) *what a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand.* This he saith to move them, and to shew his motherly affection towards them. As if he should say: I never wrote so long an Epistle with mine own hand to any other Church as I have done unto you. For as for his other Epistles, as he spake other wrote them, and afterwards he subscribed his salutation and name with his own hand, as it is to be seen in the end of his Epistles. And in these words (as I suppose) he hath respect to the length of the Epistle. Other some take it otherwise.

The motherly affection of Paul.

Verse 12. *As many as desire to please in the flesh, compell you to be circumcised, only because they would not suffer the persecution of the crosse of Christ.*

Before he cursed the false Apostles. Now as it were repeating the same thing again, but with other words, he accuseth them very sharply, to the end he may fear and turn away the *Galathians* from their doctrine, notwithstanding the great authority which they seemed to have. The teachers which ye have (saith he) are such as first regard not the glory of Christ and the salvation of your souls, but only seek their own glory:

Enormities in the false Apostles.

glorie: secondly, they flie the crosse: thirdly; they understand not those things which they teach.

These false teachers being accused of the Apostles for three such execrable enormities, were worthy to be avoided of all men. But yet all the *Galathians* obeyed not this warning of *Paul*. And *Paul* doth the false Apostles no wrong, when he so vehemently inveigheth against them: but he justly condemneth them by his apostolike authoritie. In like manner when we call the Pope Antichrist, his Bishops and his shavelings a cursed generation, we slander them not, but by Gods authoritie we judge them to be accursed, according to that which is said in the first chapter: *If we or an Angell from heaven preach otherwise then we have preached unto you, accursed be he: For they hate, persecute and overthrow the doctrine of Christ.*

Your teachers (saith he) are vain heads, and not regarding the glory of Christ and your salvation, they seek only their own glory. Againe, because they are afraid of the crosse, they preach circumcision and the righteousness of the flesh, lest they should provoke the Iews to hate and persecute them. Wherefore, although ye heare them never so gladly and never so long: yet shall yee heare but such as make their belly their God, seeke their owne glory, and shunne the crosse. And here is to be noted a certaine vehemency in this word *compell*. For circumcision is nothing of it selfe: but to be compelled to circumcision, and when a man hath received it, to put righteousness and holines therein, and if it be not received to make it a sin, that is an injury unto Christ. Of this matter I have spoken largely enough heretofore.

Verse 13. For they themselves that are circumcised doe not keepe the law: but they would have you circumcised, that they might glory in your flesh.

Is not *Paul* here worthy to be called an hereticke? For he saith, that not onely the false Apostles, but all the nation of the Iewes which were circumcised, keepe not the law, but rather that they which were circumcised, in fulfilling the law fulfill it not. This is against *Moses*, who saith, that to be circumcised is to keepe the law, and not to be circumcised, is to make the covenant voyde, *Gen. 17.* And the Iewes were circumcised for none other cause but to keepe the law, which commanded that every male child should

be

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY
BIBLE**

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

They are (saith he) deceitfull, shamelesse and vain spirits, which serve their own belly, and hate the crosse. Again (which is worst of all) they compell you to be circumcised according to the law, that they may thereby abuse your flesh to their own glory, and in the meane season they bring your souls into danger of everlasting destruction. For what gain ye else before God but damnation? and what else before men, but that the false Apostles may glory that they are your teachers, and yee their disciples? and yet they teach you that which they themselves do not. Thus doth he sharply reprove the false Apostles.

These words, *That they may glory in your flesh*, are very effectual. As if he should say: they have not the word of the Spirit: therefore it is impossible for you to receive the Spirit by their preaching. They doe but onely * exercise your flesh, making you fleshly justiciaries or justifiers of your selves. Outwardly they observe dayes, times, sacrifices and such other things according to the law, which are altogether carnall, whereby yee reape nothing else but unprofitable labour and damnation. And on the other side, this they gaine thereby, that they boast that they are your teachers, and have called you back from the doctrine of *Paul* the heretick, unto their mother the Synagogue. So at this day the Papists brag, that they call baek those to the bosome of their mother the holy Church, whom they deceive and seduce. Contrariwise we glory not in your flesh, but we glory as touching your spirit, because ye have received the Spirit by our preaching, *Gal. 3. 2.*

* That is, they do, but keepe your flesh in a servile and slavish exercise.

Verse 14. *But God forbid that I should glory but in the crosse of our Lord Jesus Christ.*

The Apostle closeth up the matter with an indignation, and with great vehemency of spirit, he casteth out these words: *But God forbid, &c.* As if he should say: This carnall glory and ambition of the false Apostles is so dangerous a poyson, that I wish it were buried in hell, for it is the cause of the destruction of many. But let them glory in the flesh that list, and let them perish with their cursed glory. As for me, I desire no other glory, but that whereby I glory and rejoyce in the crosse of Christ. After the same manner speaketh he also, *Rom. 5. We glorie in our afflictions.* Also in the *2 Corinth. 12. I will glory in mine afflictions.* Here *Paul* sheweth

The glory of the Christians.

sheweth what is the glory and rejoycing of the Christians, namely to glory and to be proud in tribulations, reproaches, infirmities, &c.

The world judgeth of the Christians, not only that they are wretched and miserable men, but also most cruelly, and yet (as it thinketh) with a true zeale hateth, persecuteth, condemneth and killeth them as most pernicious plagues of the spirituall and worldly kingdom, that is to say, like hereticks and rebels. But because they doe not suffer these things for murder, theft, and such other wickednes, but for the love of Christ whose benefit and glory they set forth, therefore they glory in tribulations and in the crosse of Christ, and are glad with the Apostles that they are counted worthy to suffer rebuke for the name of Christ. So must we glory at this day when the Pope and the whole world most cruelly persecute us, condemne us and kill us, because we suffer these things, not for our evill deeds, as theeves, murderers, &c. but for Christs sake, our Lord and Saviour, whose Gospell we truly preach.

Act. 5. 41.

Now, our glory is increased and confirmed principally by these two things: First, because we are certaine that our doctrine is sound and perfect: Secondly, because our crosse and suffering is the suffering of Christ. Therefore when the world persecuteth and killeth us, we have no cause to complaine or lament, but we ought rather to rejoyce and be glad. Indeed the world judgeth us to be unhappy and accursed: but on the other side, Christ, who is greater then the world, and for whom we suffer, pronounceth us to be blessed, and willeth us to rejoyce. *Blessed are ye (saith he) when men revile you and persecute you, and falsely say all manner of evill against you for my sake. Rejoyce and be glad.* Our glory then is another manner of glory then the glory of the world is, which rejoyceth not in tribulation, reproach, persecution and death, &c. but glorieth altogether in power, in riches, peace, honour, wisdom and his own righteousness. But mourning and confusion is the end of this glory.

The faithfull suffer for Christ.

Mat. 5. 11, 12.

The glory of the world.

Moreover, the crosse of Christ doth not signifie that peece of wood which Christ did beare upon his shoulders, and to the which he was afterward nailed, but generally it signifieth all the afflictions of the faithfull, whose sufferings are Christs sufferings, 2 Cor. 1. *The sufferings of Christ abound in us.* Againe: *Now rejoyce I in my sufferings for you, and fulfill the rest of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church, &c.* The crosse of Christ therefore generally signifieth all the afflictions of the Church which

The crosse of Christ.

Coloss. 1. 24. The afflictions of the godly are the afflictions of Christ.

it suffereth for Christ: which he himselfe witnesseth when he saith; *Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?* Saul did no violence to Christ, but to his Church. But he that toucheth it, toucheth the apple of his eye. There is a more lively feeling in the head then in the other members of the body. And this we know by experience: for the little toe or the least part of mans body being hurt, the head forthwith sheweth it selfe by the countenance to feele the grieffe thereof. So Christ our head maketh all our afflictions his own, and suffereth also when we suffer which are his body.

It is profitable for us to know these things, lest we should be swallowed up with sorrow, or fall to despaire when we see that our adversaries doe cruelly persecute, excommunicate and kill us. But let us thinke with our selves, after the example of *Paul*, that we must glory in the crosse which we beare, not for our own finnes, but for Christs sake. If we consider only in our selves the sufferings which we endure, they are not only grievous but intollerable: but when we may say: *Thy sufferings O Christ abound in us:* or as is said in *Ps. 44. For thy sake we are killed all the day*, then these sufferings are not only easie, but also sweet, according to that saying: *My burden is easie, and my yoke is sweet.*

Now, it is well knowne that we at this day doe suffer the hatred and persecution of our adversaries for none other cause, but for that we preach Christ faithfully and purely. If we would deny him, and approve their pernicious errors and wicked religion, they would not onely cease to hate and persecute us, but would also offer unto us honour, riches, and many goodly things. Because therefore we suffer these things, for Christs sake; we may truly rejoyce and glory with *Paul* in the crosse of our Lord *Jesus Christ*: that is to say, not in riches, in power, in the favour of men, &c. but in afflictions; weaknesse, sorrow, fightings in the body, terrours in the spirit, persecutions, and all other evils. Wherefore we trust it will shortly come to passe, that Christ will say the same to us that *David* said to *Abiathar* the Priest: *I am the cause of all your deaths.* Againe: *Hee that toucheth you, toucheth the apple of mine eye.* As if he had said: He that hurteth you hurteth me. For if ye did not preach my word and confesse me, ye should not suffer these things. So saith he also in *John*: *If yee were of the world, the world would love his owne: but because I have chosen*

Acts 9.4.
Zach. 2.8.

The feeling
of the head,
is most sen-
sible,

The crosse
of the godly
is sweet.
2 Cor. 1.5.

Mat. 11.30.

To glory in
the crosse of
Christ.
2 Cor. 7.5.

1 Sam. 22.22.
Zach. 1.8.

John 15.9.

chosen.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

1 Iob. 3. 8.

Iob. 8. 41.

The world
condemneth
the life and
doctrine of
the godly.

devill, (for the Sonne of God appeared, as *Iohn* saith, to destroy the workes of the devill :) and contrariwise the devill condemneth and overthroweth the word and the workes of God, for he is a murderer and a father of lyes: so the world condemneth the doctrine and life of the godly, calling them most pernicious hereticks and troublers of the publike peace. And againe the faithfull call the world the sonne of the devill, which rightly followeth his fathers steps, that is to say; which is as great a murtherer and lier as his father is. This is *Pauls* meaning when he saith: *Whereby the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.* Now, the world doth not only signifie in the Scriptures ungodly and wicked men, but the very best, the wisest and holiest men that are of the world.

And here by the way. he covertly toucheth the false apostles. As if he should say: I utterly hate and detest all glory which is without the crosse of Christ, as a cursed thing: for the world with all the glory thereof is crucified to me and I to the world. Wherefore accursed be all they which glory in their flesh and not in the crosse of Christ. *Paul* therefore witnesseth by these words that he hateth the world with a perfect hatred of the holy Ghost: and againe, the world hateth him with a perfect hatred of a wicked spirit. As if he should say? It is impossible that there should be any agreement between me and the world. What shall I then doe? Shall I give place and teach those things which please the world? No: but with a stout courage I will set my selfe against it, and will as well despise and crucifie it, as it despiseth and crucifieth me.

To conclude, *Paul* here teacheth how we should fight against Satan, (which not only tormenteth our bodies with sundry afflictions, but also woundeth our hearts continually with his fiery darts, that by this continuance, when he can no otherwise prevaile, he may overthrow our faith, and bring us from the truth and from Christ,) namely, that like as we see *Paul* himselfe to have stoutly despised the world, so we also should despise the devill the prince thereof, with all his force, deceits and hellish furies, and so trusting to the ayde and helpe of Christ, should triumph against him after this manner: O Satan, the more thou hurtest and goest about to hurt me, the more proud and stout I am against thee, and laugh thee to scorne. The more thou terrifiest me, and seekest to bring me to desperation, so much the more confidence and boldnesse I take,
and

and glory in the midst of thy furies and malice: not by mine owne power; but by the power of my Lord and Saviour Christ, whose strength is made perfect in my weaknesse. Therefore when I am weake then am I strong. On the contrary, when he seeth his threatenings and terrours to be feared, he rejoyceth, and then he terrifieth more and more such as are terrified already. 2 Cor. 12.9.

Verse 15. *For in Christ Jesu, neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.*

This is a wonderfull kind of speech which *Paul* here useth when he saith: *Neither circumcision nor uncircumcision availeth any thing.* It may seeme that he should rather have said: either circumcision or uncircumcision availeth somewhat, seeing these are two contrary things. But now he denieth that either the one or the other doe any thing availe. As if he should have said: Ye must mount up higher: for circumcision and uncircumcision are things of no such importance, that they are able to obtaine righteousnes before God. True it is that they are contrary the one to the other: but this is nothing as touching christian righteousnes, which is not earthly but heavenly, and therefore it consisteth not in corporall things. Therefore, whether thou be circumcised or uncircumcised, it is all one thing: for in Christ *Jesu* neither the one nor the other availeth any thing at all. Christian
righteous-
nesse.

The Jewes were greatly offended when they heard that circumcision availed nothing. They easily granted that uncircumcision availed nothing: but they could not abide to heare that so much should be said of circumcision, for they fought even unto blood for the defence of the law and circumcision. The Papists also at this day doe vehemently contend for the maintenance of their traditions as touching the eating of flesh, single life, holy dayes and such other: and they excommunicate and curse us which teach that in Christ *Jesu* these things doe nothing availe. But *Paul* saith that we must have another thing which is much more excellent and precious, whereby we may obtaine righteousnesse before God. In Christ *Jesu* (saith he) neither circumcision nor uncircumcision, neither single life nor marriage, neither meate nor fasting do any whit availe. Meate maketh us not acceptable before God. We are neither the better by abstaining, nor the worse by eating. All these things, yea the whole world with all the lawes and righteousnesse thereof availe nothing to Justification. Reason

1 Cor. 2. 14.

Without
Christ there
is no salva-
tion.

Reason and the wisdom of the flesh doth not understand this: For it perceiveth not those things which are of the Spirit of God. Therefore it will needs have righteousness to stand in outward things. But we are taught out of the word of God, that there is nothing under the Sunne which availeth unto righteousness before God, but Christ onely, (or as *Paul* saith here) a new creature. Politick lawes, mens traditions, ceremonies of the Church, yea and the law of *Moses*, are such things as are without Christ: therefore they availe not unto righteousness before God. We may use them as things both good and necessary, but in their place and time. But if we talke of the matter of justification, they availe nothing, but hurt very much.

Uncircum-
cision signi-
feth all the
Gentiles,
Circumcisi-
on, all the
Iewes.

And by these two things: Circumcision and uncircumcision, *Paul* rejecteth all other things whatsoever, and denieth that they availe anything in Christ Jesus, that is, in the cause of faith and salvation. For he taketh here a part for the whole, that is, by uncircumcision he understandeth all the Gentiles, by circumcision all the Jews, with all their force and all their glory. As if he said: whatsoever the Gentiles can doe with all their wisdom, righteousness, laws, power, kingdoms, empires, it availeth nothing in Christ Jesus. Also whatsoever the Jews are able to doe, with their *Moses*, their law, their circumcision, their worshippings, their temple, their kingdom and priesthood, it nothing availeth. Wherefore in Christ Jesus or in the matter of Justification we must not dispute of the laws either of the Gentiles or of the Jews, but we must simply pronounce that neither circumcision nor uncircumcision availeth any thing.

Lawes be
good.
The use of
ceremonies
and lawes.

1 Cor. 14.

Are the laws then of no effect? Not so. They be good and profitable: albeit in their place and time, that is, in corporall and civill things, which without lawes cannot be guided. Moreover we use also in the Churches certaine ceremonies and lawes: not that the keeping of them availeth unto righteousness, but for good order, example, quietnesse and concord, according to that saying: *Let all things be done comely and orderly.* But if lawes be so set forth and urged as though the keeping of them did justify a man, or the breaking thereof did condemne him, they ought to be taken away and to be abolished: for then Christ loseth his office and his glory, who onely justifieth us, and giveth unto us the holy Ghost. The Apostle therefore by these words plainly affirmeth, that neither cir-
cumcision

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

HOLY BIBLE

Continue

*Fair use policy applies

The Papists
imagined
God to be a
merchant,
and to sell
his grace
for workes
and merits.

doe not only see, heare and speake otherwise then they did before, but the mind also approveth, loveth and followeth another thing then it did before. For before being blinded with Popish errors and darknesse, it imagined God to be a Merchant, who would sell unto us his grace for our workes and merits. But now in the light of the Gospell it assureth us, that we are accounted righteous by faith only in Christ. Therefore it now rejecteth all wil-workes, and accomplisheth the workes of charity and of our vocation commanded by God. It praiseth and magnifieth God: it rejoyceth and glorieth in the only trust and confidence of Gods mercy through Jesus Christ. If it must suffer any trouble or affliction, it endureth the same cheerefully and gladly, although the flesh repine and grudge thereat. This *Paul* calleth a new creature.

Verle 16. *And to as many as walke according to this rule, peace be unto them and mercy.*

A right rule.

Ephes 4 24.

The righteousnesse of Monkes.

This he addeth as a conclusion. This is the only and true rule wherein we ought to walke, namely the new creature, which is neither circumcision nor uncircumcision, but the new man created unto the image of God, in righteousness and true holinesse, which inwardly is righteous in the spirit, and outwardly is holy and cleane in the flesh. The Monkes have a righteousness and holinesse, but it is hypocriticall and wicked, because they hope not to be justified by only faith in Christ, but by the keeping of their rule. Moreover, although outwardly they counterfeit a holinesse, and refraine their eyes, hands, tongue and other members from evill: yet they have an unclean heart, full of filthy lust, envy, wrath, litchery, idolatry, contempt and hatred of God, blasphemy against Christ, &c. for they are most spitefull and cruell enemies of the truth. Wherefore the rule and religion of the Monkes is most wicked, and accursed of God.

Peace.
Mercy.

But this rule whereof *Paul* speaketh in this place, is blessed, by the which wee live in the faith of Christ, and are made new creatures, that is to say righteous and holy indeed by the holy Ghost, without any colouring or counterfeiting. To them which walke after this rule belongeth peace, that is, the favour of God, forgiveness of sinne, quietnesse of conscience, and mercy: that is to say, helpe in afflictions, and pardon of the remnants of sinne which remaine in our flesh. Yea although they which walke after this

this rule be overtaken with any sin, yet for that they are the children of grace and peace, mercy upholdeth them, so that their sin and fall shall not be laid to their charge.

Verse 16. *And upon the Israel of God.*

Here he toucheth the false Apostles and Jews, which gloried of their fathers, bragged that they were the people of God, that they had the law, &c. As if he said: They are the *Israel* of God, which with faithfull *Abraham* believe the promises of God offered already in Christ, whether they be *Jews* or *Gentiles*, and not they which are begotten of *Abraham*, *Isaac* and *Jacob*, after the flesh. This matter is largely handled before in the third chapter.

Verse 17. *From henceforth let no man put me to businesse.*

He concludeth his Epistle with a certain indignation. As if he said: I have faithfully taught the Gospel as I have received it by the revelation of Jesus Christ: who so will not follow it, let him follow what he wil, so that hereafter he trouble me no more. At a word, this is my censur, that Christ which I have preached is the only high Priest and Saviour of the world. Therefore either let the world walk according to this rule, of which I have spoken here and throughout all this Epistle, or els let it perish for ever.

Verse 17. *For I beare in my body the markes of the Lord Jesus.*

This is the true meaning of this place: The markes that be in my body doe shew well enough whose servant I am. If I sought to please men, requiring circumcision and the keeping of the law as necessary to salvation, and rejoycing in your flesh as the false Apostles doe, I needed not to beare these markes in my body. But because I am the servant of Jesus Christ, and walk after a true rule, that is, I openly teach and confesse that no man can obtain the favour of God, righteousness and salvation but by Christ alone, therefore it becometh me to beare the badges of Christ my Lord: which be not markes of mine owne procuring, but are laid upon me against my will by the world and the devill, for none other cause but for that I preach Jesus to be Christ.

The stripes and sufferings therefore which he did beare in his body, he calleth markes: as also the anguish and terrour of spirit, he

he calleth the fiery darts of the devill. Of these sufferings he maketh mention every where in his Epistles: As *Luke* also doth in the *Acts*.

1 Cor. 4. 9.

I thinke (saith he) that God hath set forth us the last Apostles as men appointed to death: For we are made a gazing stocke unto the world, and to

1 Cor. 4. 11.
12, 13.

the Angels, and to men. Again, Unto this houre we both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling place, and labour working with our own hands: We are reviled, we are persecuted, we are evill spoken of, we are made as the filth of the world, the of-scouring of

1 Cor. 6. 4, 5, 6

all things. Also in another place: In much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, in stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, by

2 Cor. 11. 23,
24, 25, 26.

Watchings, by fastings, &c. And again: In labours more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prison more plenteously, in death oft. Of the Jews five times received I forty stripes save one, I was thrise beaten with rods, I was once stoned, I suffered thrise shipwracke, night and day have I been in the deepe sea. In journeyings I was often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of mine owne nation, in perils among the Gentiles, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren, &c.

The markes
which we
beare at
this day.

These be the true markes and imprinted signes, of which the Apostle speaketh in this place: the which we also at this day by the grace of God beare in our bodies for Christs cause. For the world persecuteth and killeth us, false brethren deadly hate us, Satan inwardly in our heart with his fiery darts terrifieth us, and for none other cause, but for that we teach Christ to be our righteousness and life. These markes we choose not of any devotion, neither do we gladly suffer them: but because the world and the devill doe lay them upon us for Christs cause, we are compelled to suffer them, and we rejoyce in spirit with *Paul* (which is alwayes willing; glorieth and rejoyceth) that we beare them in our body: for they are a scale and most sure testimonie of true doctrine and faith. These things *Paul* spake (as I shewed afore) with a certaine displeasure and indignation.

Verse 18. *Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.*

This is his last farewell. He endeth the Epistle with the same words wherewith he began. As if he said: I have taught you
Christ

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'
Full Membership gives
access to 797,885 ancient
and modern, fiction and
non-fiction books.

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

